



PEERLESS MARTIAL GOD

BOOK 07

Jing Wu Hen

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Peerless Martial God

(绝世武神)

by

Jing Wu Hen

(净无痕)

Synopsis

Lin Feng tried to be the diligent and hard-working good guy. He studied hard, did his best to make his family proud and not get into trouble, but when he saw a girl being taken advantage of, he had to intervene. He had been tricked, sentenced to 10 years in jail and framed for a crime he never committed, all was lost. If his life was over he would take those who ruined his life with him...

Suddenly he opens his eyes again. He is not dead, but alive in the body of the Lin Feng of a different world. This Lin Feng had been killed as trash of cultivation. This world where the strong had no regard for human life and would kill freely if they had the strength. Called 'trash' and thrown away, with vengeance in his heart he will rise to new heights opposing the will of heaven and earth.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alice, Not Sane, Pan Pan @ [Totally Insane Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 601: Happily Fighting Together!

Those from Tian Feng who were about to leave a moment before stopped, they were gloating over Lin Feng and his friends' misfortune. They wanted to see them get crushed.

“You perfectly knew that they were here and you lied to us! Prepare to suffer from our flames of fury!” shouted one of them to Tang You You furiously. The Da Shu Clan was one of the four spheres of influence of Mi Cheng, they were obviously extremely aggressive.

Lin Feng glanced at Tang You You in a strange way, a moment before, she had protected him and now she was in trouble with him...

Tang You You nodded at him, Lin Feng immediately understood what she meant. He then glanced at Yun Fei Yang.

Those people were only vanguards, they had just been looking for Lin Feng so they could encircle him. Then they would signal for their stronger cultivators. If Lin Feng waited for those strong cultivators to arrive, he would be in trouble.

“Strength... Always strength...” thought Lin Feng. He was hoping that the effect of the potions he had drunk would quickly fade! He wanted to have his pure Qi back. The situation would be a lot better if he had all of his pure Qi at that moment.

Lin Feng's sleeve shook and his gourd appeared. He then raised

his head and downed a gourd of Hot Unit.

“Gloogloogloo.....” Hot Unit kept flowing into his stomach. Lin Feng had downed it one gulp! His face instantly turned red.

The crowd was surprised, that guy was drinking Hot Unit as if he had been drinking tonic.

He then threw the gourd away in his storage and started burping, that alcohol was delicious. Immediately after, he raised his head and looked at those who were circling above him, “I killed that girl because she wanted to kill me, now you want to kill me so I won’t be merciful.” In a flash, he opened his mouth widely and abruptly started spitting out some fireballs which dashed to the skies.

“Boom boom boom!” Terrifying fireballs started invading the atmosphere. Those people in the sky were caught off guard. The ferocious wild beasts’ silhouettes kept fluttering but those fireballs were extremely fast and not easy to dodge. Some beasts were bound to be hit.

“Roaaarrrrr!” a fireball reached one of the beasts which roared violently. In a flash, its entire body was surrounded by flames.

The strong cultivator on the beast then jumped in the air and stood there. The beast was roaring furiously as it was burnt to death.

“What a terrifying fire.” thought that person while staring at his

beast turning into ashes... He was shaking. If he had been too slow, he would have died as well!

That fire was extraordinary.

“Die.” shouted Lin Feng furiously. He then jumped off the ground and made the strength of the Herukas rotate five hundred times in his fist. He then immediately threw himself at another person with his fist leading.

That person groaned loudly and jumped off the beast he was riding. He was about to welcome Lin Feng with his spear.

“Kacha!!!” The spear broke into pieces, without resistance, when it collided with the strength of the Herukas. Lin Feng’s fist didn’t stop moving forwards, a loud crashing sound spread in the air. When Lin Feng’s fist crashed onto that person’s body he immediately died.

While Lin Feng and Yun Fei Yang were fighting. He was condensing some pure Qi and flying through the air. He was going very slowly but it seemed like he was borrowing the strength of the earth and the sky for each step he made. His steps definitely contained a monstrous force.

Apart from them, Tang You You was also fighting. She was moving swiftly through the air, just like a butterfly. Her fist was dancing in the sky, she looked neither slow nor fast, just agile. One of the victim’s she punched had their blood vessels visibly destroyed. He immediately died.

The members of the Da Shu Clan hadn't thought that Lin Feng would attack first. Besides, Lin Feng and his two friends were all extremely strong, especially that beautiful woman. She was moving like a butterfly in the sky, but now at full speed. She had a monumental physical strength in her fist that was probably some insane skill. In any case, each time she punched someone, they died.

It was apocalyptic in the sky at that moment. It was a massacre.

People on the ground were all astonished. The Great Competition of Xue Yu hadn't started yet and they were already fighting against monstrously strong cultivators.

Jun Mo Xi wasn't happy at all but he was happy to see those evil people get crushed. It would have been horrible for them to lose Lin Feng and the two others.

"Tang You You, you are the strongest between us. We must kill all these people, otherwise, when the strong cultivators arrive to support them we will be in serious trouble." explained Yun Fei Yang to Tang You You.

Tang You You obviously knew that, she then shouted furiously, "One Thousand Dream Clones!"

In a flash, Tang You You's clones appeared in the atmosphere and blotted out the sky. She was everywhere, just like in a dream. One thousand clones... Just like in a dream.

“Boom boom boom!” Her clones kept punching everybody and horrible shrieks kept spreading everywhere in the air. The crowd on the ground could see cadavers unceasingly falling from the sky, it was a rain of corpses. They were astonished that Tang You You’s thousand dream clones skill was so incredible. It was one of the best skills of the Tang Clan. The clones all looked perfectly real, and the bodies were in fact real. They weren’t shadows or anything of that sort, they were real clones!

“How strong....” thought Lin Feng. Tang You You was the third strongest cultivator of Dragon Mountain. When she was furious, a field could become littered with millions of corpses. Let alone the people she was killing now were extremely strong.

“Be careful.” said Yun Fei Yang to Lin Feng. Several whistling sounds were approaching Lin Feng, but he didn’t panic. He only turned around and bombarded the atmosphere with his fist.

He wasn’t scared of fighting against those ferocious wild beasts with his strength of the Herukas.

“Boom boom boom!”

A terrifying physical strength then attacked Lin Feng and crashed onto his body. Surprisingly, that attack made his pure Qi flow even faster through his meridians. Lin Feng didn’t find the attack painful, on the contrary, that pain was extremely pleasant!

“Do it again!” said Lin Feng with a proud smile on his face. He

then moved forwards with the wind, his fist bombarded the atmosphere once again. A ferocious, wild beast then roared violently. It was severely injured by Lin Feng's punch.

“Die.” The person on the beast then used his spear to attack Lin Feng which moved at full speed towards him. It contained some monstrously strong energies. Lin Feng didn't dare resist this one with his bare fist.

He inclined himself aside to dodge it, but his top got lacerated and his chest was suddenly exposed.

However, Lin Feng caught the spear while it was flying through the sky and firmly held onto it. He then looked at the one who had sent it and spat out another fireball. A terrifying and scorching hot fireball then immediately ignited the enemy's body.

“Ahhhh.....”! That fire was terrifying. His entire body was burning. He was releasing pure Qi to make the fire shrug off but it didn't work, the pure Qi was getting burnt too. Quickly, his horrible shrieks became less and less as he burnt to death, turning into ashes.

“I wouldn't have thought that Lin Feng had such mysterious skills. He can drink Hot Unit and then spit out monstrous fireballs?” thought some people on the ground while watching the fight. With those fireballs, Lin Feng was a danger to them as well... Most of them wouldn't be able to stop those fireballs...

In the distance, whistling sounds were spreading. Lin Feng

narrowed his eyes in which cold lights were twinkling.

Lin Feng took out another gourd filled with Hot Unit and downed it in a flash. He initially had a hundred Hot Unit bottles, but a gourd could contain more than a bottle. Having one gourd left meant that he only had maybe a dozen bottles left...”

“What a greedy boy! I still have some, drink as much as you want.” said Tang You You while looking at Lin Feng drinking all that Hot Unit. It seemed like Lin Feng loved drinking that liquor. Tang You You threw her ring at Lin Feng, he caught it and looked inside. There were as expected, many bottles of alcohol, it was filled with alcohol actually. Tang You You seemingly didn’t leave her residence without alcohol. She had too much on her.

“I only drink Hot Unit.” explained Lin Feng while laughing. He grabbed all the bottles of Hot Unit and put them in his own ring. He then returned the ring back to Tang You You.

“We should leave now.” said Lin Feng while throwing away the gourd he had just downed. He then moved back down to where the ground fell, grabbed Xiao Ya, and flew away. Tang You You and Yun Fei Yang nodded in agreement and followed him!

Chapter 602: Terrifying Fire

The members of the Da Shu Clan were not resigned to let Lin Feng and his friends escape. Their ferocious, wild beasts were in hot pursuit.

“You killed my people and think you will be able to escape?!” shouted someone furiously. That person’s voice rolled in the atmosphere, hurting their eardrums.

Lin Feng and the three others landed on the ground knowing that their pursuers had caught up with them. A cloud of dust arose around them as they landed. Lin Feng shouted, “Tang You You, kill that cultivator of the seventh Xuan Qi layer first and then we will kill the others together!”

“Alright!” said Tang You You nodding. The four of them were ready.

Lin Feng took a gourd of Hot Unit and downed it to the last drop. His pure Qi seemed like it was boiling, it was flowing in his veins at full speed. While drinking and fighting, Lin Feng’s pure Qi was gradually coming back to normal. The Hot Unit was progressively making the effects of the potions vanish.

“Die!” shouted Tang You You when she saw someone riding a beast attack her by surprise. She transformed into an illusion and attacked that person with her fist. It seemed like a multitude of fists had appeared in the atmosphere.

That cultivator of the seventh Xuan Qi layer was astonished, his pure Qi started whistling in the air but would it suffice against Tang You You's fist? Of course not, his pure Qi was immediately destroyed and then vanished. Tang You You's fist crashed onto that person's chest, making him shake from head to foot. His blood vessels exploded, he groaned as he died with his eyes wide open.

One attack... The beautiful Tang You You only needed one punch to kill a man of the seventh Xuan Qi layer, even though she was several years younger than him. She was fast as lightning, her punches deadly. With her incredible abilities she only needed one punch...

Lin Feng admired Tang You You and felt safe with her. He made another step and moved like the wind, he raised his fist around which appeared a terrifying fire. This time, he wasn't using his strength of the Herukas, he was using his scorching hot pure Qi sun fire.

"Die!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. His pure Qi sun fire also contained some killer energy.

"Third Xuan Qi layer and you think you can fight against me with pure Qi..." said the opponent when he sensed Lin Feng's pure Qi sun fire. That person also raised his fist towards Lin Feng. Their fists were about to collide.

Very subtly, Lin Feng's fist changed course from his fist towards the man's chest.

“Huh?” that person was surprised. Lin Feng didn’t mind receiving his punch just so he could punch him too?

The man with the sixth Xuan Qi layer was convinced that he wouldn’t get hurt if Lin Feng punched him. He was willing to take Lin Feng’s challenge. There was no suspense about to it.

“Boom!”

“Boom boom!” Two muffled sounds spreads in the air consecutively. The enemy’s fist landed on Lin Feng’s body, but Lin Feng hadn’t died. He was, however, shaking violently. But immediately, a monstrous flame ignited on Lin Feng’s body. It didn’t seem like the opponent’s fist was attacking Lin Feng, it seemed like his fist was drowning in fire.

“BOOM!” A terrifying fire followed Lin Feng’s arm and suddenly crashed onto that person’s body, he sensed a monstrous pain spread all over. He lowered his head and saw a hole in his chest where a fire had just started. Very quickly, his entire body was covered with flames.

“Ahhhhh.....” A blood curdling shriek spread in the air and that person died.

Lin Feng was standing there surrounded by flames. He was becoming stronger and stronger. His entire body was diffusing some fire-red lights, he looked like a fire deity.

“His pure Qi is back to normal.” thought Yun Fei Yang who was behind Lin Feng. A moment before, Lin Feng had gambled actually. He had bet that his pure Qi would get back the strength of the fourth Xuan Qi layer during the attack and it had worked. And yet, it seemed like it was still increasing....

Lin Feng moved and in a flash many bottles of Hot Unit appeared, they were those that Tang You You had just given to him.

“Kacha kacha!” In a flash, all of them broke and a waterfall of Hot Unit liquor appeared in the air. Lin Feng opened his mouth and started inhaling with his mouth in an insane way. He was sucking in all the alcohol present in the air, he wasn’t wasting a single drop of it. His mouth looked like an endless black hole.

“Boom boom boom!” When the alcohol landed in his stomach, his blood and pure Qi felt like they were burning. Everything was boiling in his body.

“Stop him, kill him!” shouted one of the people of the Da Shu Clan when he saw that Lin Feng’s terrifying fire continued growing stronger and stronger.

“Come!” said Lin Feng while taking a deep breath. Flames kept flickering all over his body.

“Kill him, kill him, kill him!” All of those people were shouting while throwing themselves at Lin Feng. But at that moment, a monstrous energy spread in the air.

All those flames turned into a monstrous fire dragon which started moving towards all those people riding their ferocious, wild beasts. Whether it be human beings or ferocious, wild beasts, they would all burn under that fire if it reached them. They couldn't extinguish that fire, they were immediately turned into ashes.

“How pleasant!” Lin Feng's eyes were filled with sharp lights. His entire body was surrounded by a terrifying fire. The sun was shining upon his body and the sunlight was in fusion with him.

Lin Feng's Qi was becoming stronger and it felt extremely pleasant.

He had the feeling that his cultivation had been sealed for a while, as if he had been handicapped. At that moment he had entirely recovered, he felt alive again.

The sun was shining upon his body, warm and comforting. The light he was diffusing were dazzling.

“Kacha!” A sound spread in the atmosphere as if something had broken. Lin Feng was smiling resplendently. Initially, he couldn't break through to the next Xuan Qi layer because his pure Qi had been constricted by the effects of the potions he had drunk. Now, his pure Qi had been stimulated a lot, breaking through to the next cultivation layer was absolutely normal.

Lin Feng could feel that this time he had broken through to the

next cultivation differently than previous times. He had almost died recently and his pure Qi had been restrained in the mountains. He had then meditated and understood a lot of things. And now he had understood that his fire had changed too. In the past, he couldn't use his fire to defeat cultivators of the fifth Xuan Qi layer, or at least, it wasn't easy. But now he could kill them with ease using his fire. His cosmos-burning sun skill had changed.... His pure Qi sun fire had changed too...

Lin Feng was overjoyed because his pure Qi had finally entirely recovered. It was such a wonderful thing.

Behind him, there was Tang You You, she looked astonished. "It's him!!!!!!!" she said. Tang You You had finally understood that this Lin Feng was the Lin Feng she had met originally!

Chapter 603: One Sword killer Attack!

When Tang You You saw Lin Feng's incredible fire, she knew that it was Lin Feng's skill because it could attract sunlight. That skill was probably a Tian level skill...

"It seems like I'm not the only one who underestimated him, his country did the same while he was rising." thought Tang You You. All the members of the Da Shu Clan were fixedly staring at Lin Feng. How come he was becoming stronger and stronger?

"Let's go." said Lin Feng loudly. Even though fire was still burning around his body, he didn't want to keep fighting. He moved back to Xiao Ya and grabbed her.

Tang You You and Yun Fei Yang were a bit surprised but understood why Lin Feng wanted to leave things that way. Even though they were strong, staying there would still be too dangerous.

The opponents were only of the sixth and seventh Xuan Qi layer but there were stronger ones to come. Besides, Tang You You had heard a lot about the Da Shu Clan of Mi Cheng. She knew that they had some cultivators of the Tian Qi layer. The cultivators they had just defeated were only the tip of the iceberg... Those people were just vanguards sent to find them, the really strong ones were sure to follow.

Lin Feng used his pure Qi to rise up in the air, he was surrounded by the light of his pure Qi. Lin Feng was moving very fast even

though he was carrying Xiao Ya. Those ferocious, wild beasts couldn't catch up to him that easily.

Tang You You was just as fast, actually faster than Lin Feng and Yun Fei Yang but she didn't want to leave without waiting for them so she kept their pace. Even while escaping they weren't too worried, they appeared to be moving gracefully.

The people of the Da Shu Clan moved back to gather with the other strong cultivators. They didn't feel like separating their group.

Those from Dragon Mountain had been extremely far from the battle. They caught up to see fireballs and hear several horrible shrieks ensue. After that, the people from the Da Shu Clan moved back. They were probably informing the stronger cultivators of their clan of what had just happened.

Jun Mo Xi frowned. Lin Feng had killed Miss Da Shu, he hadn't anticipated that. Besides, now those people were leaving to inform their superiors. Lin Feng was going to be in a great deal of danger.

"Maybe I should help them..." thought Jun Mo Xi. He thought about it some more and then he began running. His body turned into an arrow which streaked through the sky. He looked like a beam of light.

Three cultivators of the Da Shu Clan looked relieved, they were also riding ferocious, wild beasts. They were about to fly back to their companions when a beam of light appeared in front of them

along with terrifying deadly energy.

“Stay here.” said Jun Mo Xi indifferently. He punched towards that person and his fist crashed onto his chest. The opponent shook violently from head to foot, his internal organs and bones had all broken into pieces.

“Boom!” Jun Mo Xi then used that person as a step and jumped on the beast’s back, which roared violently. He then continued moving forwards at full speed.

“How audacious!” thought the other two when they saw that someone else was attacking them. Their facial expressions looked ice-cold and were filled with murder.

“You two stay here as well.” said Jun Mo Xi, again indifferently. He raised both his hands and released a monstrous pure Qi in a flash. A terrifying Qi of earth and sky suddenly mixed with his pure Qi and attacked the two beasts they were riding. Their entire bodies were ripped apart and their wings cut off.

“Air-Cut Kill!” People from Dragon Mountain were all astonished, that air-cut kill was monstrously powerful.

“Slash!” As expected, those two air-cut kill attacks immediately lacerated the air, it seemed like the atmosphere had separated the sky from the ground. Those two beasts had no chance to survive.

“How strong.” thought everybody shivering. Jun Mo Xi was the

best cultivator of Dragon Mountain. Of course he was extremely strong.

According to the rumors, Jun Mo Xi had never used his spirit during battles. He didn't need to use it because he was too strong. Nobody knew what his spirit was.

Jun Mo Xi killed those three and then gazed into the distance. He began flying again towards Lin Feng and the others.

Those from Dragon Mountain started moving as well, their silhouettes were flickering one after the other. There was now a crowd following the action, all of them were wondering what was going to happen this time. Maybe one of the participants of the competition would die before it even began....

If someone was watching from overhead, they would see a large line from Lin Feng back to the Dragon Mountain people. There was a succession of cultivators running one after the other. The wind was picking up with all the cultivators' influence.

The distance Lin Feng and company ran was vast, but then...

“You can't escape.”

Behind Lin Feng some people from the Da Shu Clan were shouting They hadn't been chasing them at full speed because Lin Feng and his friends' pure Qi couldn't be infinite. Eventually they could wear them down.

They didn't have to hurry, they just had to keep an eye on them, that was enough. It had been a long time since someone had dared infuriate the Da Shu Clan in Mi Cheng. But this time, they surprisingly had killed Miss Da Shu.... They really wanted to die.

“Who said we were escaping??” said Lin Feng while releasing his terrifying fire again. With the wind, his fire became even more intense and dazzling. The sunlight was shining upon his body, it was incredible.

“Crrr... Crrr....” Everybody stopped flying in the sky. It seemed like Tang You You, Lin Feng and Yun Fei Yang's hearts were all interconnected, they stopped at exactly the same time. They also turned around at the same time and confronted those who had been running after them.

“Tang You You, Yun Fei Yang, we don't have time so don't blame for being rude. Tang You You take him. Yun Fei Yang help me protect Xiao Ya.” said Lin Feng surrounded by flames. Tang You You was going to fight against their leader, that's what Lin Feng was asking. He was monstrously strong, he had broken through to the eighth Xuan Qi layer. Lin Feng couldn't defeat him, however, Tang You You had also broken through to the eighth Xuan Qi layer.

The others were composed of one cultivator of the seventh Xuan Qi layer and a bunch of cultivators of the fifth and sixth Xuan Qi layers.

“No problem.” said Yun Fei Yang.

Tang You You made a step forwards releasing some terrifying battle energy. The cultivator of the eighth Xuan Qi layer groaned coldly as he moved to challenge her. He was going to fight against Tang You You.

“You’ve been running after us for a while, it’s now time to end this all!” said Lin Feng coldly. He moved and a roaring sound spread through air, it was his purple spirit. It then turned into a boundless lake and blotted out the sky, swallowing everybody.

“Nine Palace Dragon Formation!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. In a flash, the purple light invaded the whole region and the illusion imprisoned the beasts and the cultivators on their backs. They were all in different rooms.

“Let’s crush it together!” said someone in the illusion. A terrifying Qi emerged in the illusion. Lin Feng couldn’t imprison so many strong cultivators in his illusion.

“Sword!” shouted Lin Feng. A fire-sword appeared in his hand, the flames coming off it were just as resplendent as Lin Feng’s.

“Boom boom boom!” A terrifying Qi invaded the entire atmosphere. Those who had just been imprisoned in the illusion rose up in the air.

“Die!” When they came out of the illusion they saw Lin Feng

waiting for them. Their hearts started pounding. Lin Feng's sword was so dazzling that they couldn't open their eyes.

It was a mixture of a deadly sword and a great radiant sword. It was also filled with sword determination!

When he raised the sword they all died! Those who had been too fast and had thrown themselves at Lin Feng were first! They couldn't stop such a terrifying sword.

Chapter 604: Willing To Fight!

“Sword determination, fire determination... They all became much stronger... I wonder what level they are now.” thought Lin Feng when he realized his determination was so powerful. With one sword attack filled with fire and deadly energy, he had been able to kill all those people. Including a cultivator of the seventh Xuan Qi layer.

“Back.” Lin Feng moved his hand and recalled his purple spirit back into his body. Then the formation disappeared and the few people of Da Shu Clan reappeared.

“You want me to die so I return the favor.” Lin Feng made a step forward and raised his sword towards the sky. The sunshine shone upon it and his body. All around him people could sense that the temperature had increased.

“Oh no...” some people’s facial expressions drastically changed. That sword also contained deadly energy.

“Lacerate!”

Lin Feng jumped into the middle of their group, the sun was reflecting red off of his sword.

“Die!” someone attacked Lin Feng from behind, his speed was incredible. Lin Feng immediately felt oppressed. Although he was surprised, he made the strength of the Herukas rotate five thousand times in his back. Then a muffled sound spread in the

air, that person's hand crashed onto Lin Feng's back but Lin Feng was still standing steadily. A black physical strength was flowing in his back.

He turned around to see the person attacking him had eyes filled with murder, his heart continued pounding.

“Die!” Lin Feng imbued fire Qu into his left fist and punched that person's chest. That person's chest quickly burnt and a black hole appeared. That person was terrified.

“Go.” Lin Feng shook his hand, and in a flash, that person burnt down to ashes.

Lin Feng was still holding his fire sword as he turned around., He moved like the wind, raising his sword to the west and created a setting sun sword. It didn't look as resplendent and hot as a radiant sword but it was as red as blood, it was filled with death.

Yun Fei Yang was watching Lin Feng, alone with his sword. He was lacerating everything and everyone around him. With each step someone else died.

All those cultivators of the sixth Xuan Qi layer were getting slaughtered and had no way to block him. Lin Feng knew how to fuse with the earth for a long time already, and now that he could use sword determination, he was indomitable.

Apart from that power, he also had his terrifying pure Qi fire

which was next-to impossible to extinguish.

“So that’s your real strength...” said Yun Fei Yang in a low voice while watching Lin Feng. That Lin Feng was the same as as he was before. Natural, free, unrestrained, proud, his sword was annihilating everything and everyone. If anyone dared offend him, he would kill them and he nobody would be let off!

In that cold and cruel world, Lin Feng had to be a real killer.

In this world he learnt and practiced cultivation with a passion, his heart was becoming wider as he became more open-minded. He was understanding the world in which he was living better through each experience. Even though he was becoming a better person, when facing such people he had to be an altruist. He had to be cruel and cold to murder them.

“Let’s go!”

Lin Feng was terrifying as he slaughtered cultivators of the sixth Xuan Qi layer. He only had the strength of the fifth Xuan Qi layer but he could slaughter those cultivators with ease, one attack sufficed. They couldn’t escape from him and they couldn’t stop him. They didn’t realize they had challenged a death god!... those people were dying one after the other without the hope to escape.

“Go? Go where?” said Lin Feng smiling coldly. They had been chasing him but now they wanted to escape. It was too late.

Lin Feng made a step and pure Qi whistled in the air. He was quick, the strength of the Herukas and his fire were mixing together. His fist crashed onto the one who had just said he wanted to leave. Like the others, he immediately burnt along with the ferocious wild beast he was riding.

“Stop!!” shouted someone loudly and furiously in the distance. That voice made Lin Feng’s head shake, he looked into the distance and saw a group of people surfing in the air. He froze.

Those people were extremely fast. It was only a second but they were next to him.

Lin Feng hadn’t been escaping before, he was just trying to find another place to fight and kill all those people.

Unfortunately, in this short time, he hadn’t killed all of them. One of them was left and the strong cultivators of the Da Shu Clan had already arrived which put Lin Feng in a difficult situation.

“The strong cultivators of my clan are here now. They will definitely kill you.” said the one Lin Feng was about to kill. He was sneering at Lin Feng. He and his companions had come to encircle Lin Feng but all the others had died. Now, he was the last one left.

His silhouette flickered, his ferocious wild beast beat its wings and moved away.

“Even if I’m going to die, I can promise you that you will die

before me!” said Lin Feng raising his sword which he hold with both hands. His sword was pointing to the sky, all around it, the atmosphere completely changed. It was suddenly filled with sword Qi, sword energy and sword determination.

“Die!” both of his hands descended, his sword twinkled and a magnificent bright trail appeared behind his sword.

The one who was trying to run towards his companions raised his head and hopelessness invaded his eyes. The sword descended swiftly and that person died.

Lin Feng had cut that person and his beast into two.

“Bastard!” shouted someone furiously. A shadow was moving towards Lin Feng at full speed.

“Boom!” That shadow was emitting rumbling sounds, it was annihilating everything in the air on its way to Lin Feng. That person wasn’t far from Lin Feng at all.

That person wasn’t the only one, many other silhouettes were following. They were all riding ferocious, wild beasts but these guys’ Qi was much stronger than those Lin Feng had just fought against....

The weakest people in that group had broken through to the sixth and seventh Xuan Qi layers and there were a few dozen of them. There were a few cultivators of the eighth Xuan Qi layer. As

far as the leader of the group was concerned, he had broken through to the ninth Xuan Qi layer. He was looking at Lin Feng in a despising way. However young that person was he looked enigmatic and unfathomable. He must have only been about thirty years old.

The people of the Da Shu Clan really had amazing cultivators. Because Lin Feng had killed Miss Da Shu, they had to kill Lin Feng and his friends.

The leader looked at all the corpses and then stared at Lin Feng, “Very well, it’s been a long time since anyone dared offend the Da Shu Clan. You are brave and audacious.”

That person’s eyes looked ice-cold. He wasn’t going to let Lin Feng off.

Lin Feng, Tang You You and Yun Fei Yang were standing together waiting for them to act. How horrible. How were they going to cope with all those strong cultivators?

In the distance several silhouettes were flickering. Jun Mo Xi and some others were rushing over.

When they saw the cultivators in the sky, they were speechless. What a monstrous group of people.

“You three, cripple your own cultivation. I don’t need to attack you myself. Of course, if you don’t cripple your own cultivation I

will attack you. I won't just cripple your cultivation, the result will be much scarier." said that person. He despised Lin Feng and his friends. He wanted them to cripple their own cultivation and then he would bring them back to the Da Shu Clan as he had been told.

Lin Feng was holding sword obliquely and he raised his head.

"We will never cripple our cultivation but if you want to fight, let's fight." said Lin Feng resolutely. If he had nowhere to go then he could only fight to the death. He hadn't thought that such a thing would happen to him in Mi Cheng but nothing could be changed. He remained fearless and without regret. If he fought and died during a battle, he didn't care.

Tang You You looked absolutely emotionless as well but it was clear that she wasn't going to cripple her own cultivation either. She would never do such a thing.

"You are all pretty good, I see." said the thirty-year old man while releasing some terrifying Qi which oppressed Lin Feng and his friends.

Some of the people from Dragon Mountain got excited while some others frowned. Jun Mo Xi looked calm and solemn as he walked forwards slowly. Then, he rose up in the air.

"If you want to fight, don't forget me." said Jun Mo Xi. "And me." said Jian Chen whose body, rose up in the air like a sword.

Chapter 605: Shen Gong

Jun Mo Xi, Tang You You and Jian Chen were running the fastest. They all guessed that he was the real Lin Feng after watching the battle.

Although the events leading to Lin Feng's disappearance were very mysterious, he had not died! He snuck his way back into the competition using another alias and some mysterious skill.

There was a group of people from dragon mountain following those three. They were surprised to see Jun Mo Xi, Tang You You and Jian Chen helping Lin Feng against the terrifying Da Shu Clan.

The group from the Da Shu Clan were also surprised they wanted to fight. But, they were more than willing to grant them their deaths.

“Would anyone else like to go against us?” asked the leader of the Da Shu Clan group. He was glancing at the people from Dragon Mountain coldly.

Qing Meng Xin smiled resplendently and looked at Lin Feng. She found him funny, as well as interesting. She had known that this Lin Feng was the real Lin Feng since Lan Jiao had gone to see Lin Feng that night.

What she didn't know was that Lin Feng was so strong. He had broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer and could easily kill cultivators of the sixth Xuan Qi layer.

“Even Jun Mo Xi is going to fight, could anything happen?” said Qing Meng Xin with a resplendent smile on her face.

“We have come from Dragon Mountain to participate at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. If you kill us who will bear the responsibility?”

“Huh?” The leader of the group of people from the Da Shu Clan frowned and his facial expression slightly changed. They had come from Dragon Mountain to participate to the Great Competition of Xue Yu?

Lin Feng was surprised to see their leader’s change in mood. What would he be responsible for?

Was there someone protecting the participants of the Great Competition of Xue Yu. Someone strong enough to discourage the Da Shu Clan?

“You may be participating at the Great Competition of Xue Yu, but you killed my sister.” said the leader of the group sounding glum.

“She was rude and aggressive. If I hadn’t killed her she would have killed me. Should I accept such a thing?” said Lin Feng with a cold smile on his face.

“Hehe.” Qing Meng Xin smiled and said, “No matter what, you

can sort the problem out after the competition. If you try to before Shen Gong will be furious. If something happens to the participants before the competition, no matter who you are, the Da Shu Clan or anyone else...”

“Shen Gong?” Lin Feng was surprised along with several others. What or who was Shen Gong??

From Qing Meng Xin’s tone of speech, one could guess that Shen Gong was stronger than the Da Shu Clan. Even they were scared to offend Shen Gong!

When the leader of their group heard her his facial expression drastically changed. He didn’t seem as determined to kill as before. If they were all going to participate at the Great Competition, it meant that they were real heroes. The Da Shu Clan couldn’t afford killing them, otherwise, Shen Gong would be furious.

“Even if we can’t kill you all, we can kill the one who murdered Miss Da Shu! Nothing will happen.” said a voice in the distance. That person’s voice came from very far away. The leader of the group of people from the Da Shu Clan was speechless.

“Who’s that?” Everybody was glancing right and left but couldn’t see anyone, there was no Qi either. There was a voice but nobody else...

“Distant Communication....” Jun Mo Xi frowned, someone was talking to them from a very far distance, more than fifty kilometers.... It meant that that person had broken through to the

Tian Qi layer, it was a strong cultivator of the Da Shu Clan.

The leader of the group smiled. Finally, he looked at Lin Feng and said, “You’re the one who killed my little sister, right?”

“Indeed.” replied Lin Feng resolutely.

“I am the one who killed her! Why are you saying that you had?” said Yun Fei Yang at that moment. He just arrived on Jun Mo Xi’s side and handed Xiao Ya over to Jun Mo Xi. On their side, they could be sure that nothing would happen to Jun Mo Xi, especially since Shen Gong was there. They wouldn’t dare attack the strongest person from Dragon Mountain, a cultivator considered as one of the two strongest participants at the competition.

Lin Feng glanced at Yun Fei Yang surprised. Yun Fei Yang had quickly released some monstrous Qi. He was fearless! Even if Yun Fei Yang was in danger, he didn’t hesitate to kill those who threatened him.

“Let’s say we both killed her.” said Lin Feng while smiling at Yun Fei Yang. Immediately after, they looked at the leader of the group. They didn’t look scared at all. Even though Lin Feng looked sick with his mask, there was a special aura around his face.

“Very good. You two will come back with me to the Da Shu Clan.” said the leader. He then transformed into a beam of light moving towards Lin Feng and Yun Fei Yang.

“You will not take anyone from Dragon Mountain with you!” shouted Jun Mo Xi furiously. He had turned into an illusion and collided with the leader of the group in the air.

“Boom!” A muffled sound spread in the air. Their fists had collided. Immediately after, the crowd saw two silhouettes flicker over and over again. They were both dashing through the sky. They were so fast that the crowd could barely follow them with their eyes.

So fast... They were so fast... People couldn't even see them.

“Boom boom boom!” The atmosphere kept vibrating and their silhouettes constantly looked like beams of light. As they fought, strong winds were forming in the air.

Lin Feng walked to Xiao Ya and grabbed her hand. He then raised his head and watched the two fighters. He felt touched, Jun Mo Xi was fighting for him...

“Slash slash slash!” A black hand was moving towards Lin Feng. Tang You You jumped and raised her fist, destroying that black hand.

“Give us those two!” shouted the leader of the group furiously. Tang You You looked solemn. Her clothes were fluttering in the wind and she looked particularly cold.

“No need.” said Qing Meng Xin. She then jumped into the air, she

also wanted to protect Lin Feng. She even smiled at him and said, “I’m helping you again, you must remember me!”

She then added a particularly seductive smile. Tang You You was on Lin Feng’s right and Qing Meng Xin was on his left. One was blazing hot like fire and the other was as cold as ice, but the Qi they started releasing was of the same level.

A terribly oppressive force emerged in the air and all the cultivators of the Da Shu Clan immediately threw themselves at Lin Feng. They wanted to kidnap Lin Feng and Yun Fei Yang.

“That’s enough!” said someone at that moment. Everybody stopped surprised.

The atmosphere became quite apocalyptic and a terrifying Qi rolled in the air from the distance as a face appeared.

“That’s enough. The Da Shu Clan made a mistake first, Miss Da Shu offended people and respected no rules. She chased people from Dragon Mountain to kill them and had instead been killed. You can avenge her but not before the competition. I will not tolerate anything like that. Now all of you go back.” That person was talking darkly. He was giving everybody an order that nobody could argue.

Jun Mo Xi and the leader of the group stopped fighting. They all understood something, that voice had to do something with Shen Gong.

The members of the Da Shu Clan were stupefied. Even though they really wanted to kill those people they couldn't, they didn't dare say anything superfluous either. They only nodded and said, "We made a mistake, sorry. We're going to leave immediately."

The person who spoke turned around and glanced at Jun Mo Xi, "Very early tomorrow morning, go to Duo Tian Mountain Chain for the Great Competition of Xue Yu." Then, the atmosphere vibrated as everything became normal again. That person left a lasting impression.

"Early tomorrow morning... Duo Tian... For the Great Competition of Xue Yu." In the entire region, that person's voice was resonating. He had said it loud enough for everybody to hear him. The competition was finally going to start. "What a terrifying soul Qi." thought Lin Feng while looking at that person. What were the mysteries of Mi Cheng? How come there were so many strong cultivators here...? Besides, what or who was Shen Gong?

Chapter 606: Duo Tian Mountain Chain

Everybody in Mi Cheng knew that tomorrow they had to go to Duo Tian for the Great Competition of Xue Yu. It was finally starting!

“It seems like the competition is organized by a third party because the other empires don’t know the precise starting time either... No wonder.” thought Lin Feng. There were four empires at the Great Competition of Xue Yu, however, those few words didn’t suffice to explain it all. That Shen Gong didn’t allow anyone to ruin the competition in any way. Nobody could kill the participants, not even the Da Shu Clan. One sentence had them with their tails between their legs.

Even the cultivator of the Tian Qi layer of the Da Shu Clan hadn’t said anything more. Nobody could disobey Shen Gong.

The leader of the group of people from the Da Shu Clan glanced at Lin Feng and the others and was wanting say something. He didn’t want to disobey Shen Gong’s orders.

“After the Great Competition of Xue Yu, if you are still alive we will meet again.” he said coldly and then left.

Every members of the Da Shu Clan looked ice-cold. This time, Lin Feng and his friends had been lucky. Shen Gong had saved them this time, but after the competition the Da Shu Clan wouldn’t let them off. They had killed Miss Da Shu and so many others from their Da Shu Clan.

This time they weren't able to get their revenge, and had lost so many strong cultivators trying. They wouldn't forget about this, they would get their revenge even it meant waiting.

Lin Feng watched as they all disappeared, one after the other. Lin Feng could finally take a breath and relax. There wouldn't be anymore problems until the competition now.

The first challenge was a huge free-for-all fight. People who were extremely cruel and dangerous would lurk on every side. Besides, there were even some from Dragon Mountain and countries under its jurisdiction who wanted try and kill him. Only after the death of a certain number of people, would he be able to move on to the second round.

Lin Feng looked at Jun Mo Xi, Tang You You, Qing Meng Xin and Jian Chen and nodded to them gratefully. They had been ready to fight for him. If Shen Gong hadn't appeared, the Da Shu Clan wouldn't have let him off and Lin Feng would have had no choice but to use his evil swords again....

“Alright. Let's forget about what happened today and instead get ready for the competition. Let's go to Duo Tian!” said Jun Mo Xi as if nothing had happened and as if he hadn't helped Lin Feng at all.

Everybody nodded, the most important thing for them was the Great Competition of Xue Yu.

Tomorrow the Great Competition of Xue Yu would finally start,

and they had been waiting for that moment for so long... Many were terribly excited and high-spirited thinking about it.

If they survived and seized all the opportunities, they would progress and become extremely strong cultivators.

Jun Mo Xi took out a memory jade and looked inside. A map of Mi Cheng then appeared in his head and he found the Duo Tian Mountain Chain on it.

He put the memory jade away and said, "Let's go."

Jun Mo Xi's silhouette then flickered and whistling sounds spread in the air.

The other people from Dragon Mountain then followed him closely. They had never been to Mi Cheng before so they didn't know where the mountain chain was. They had to follow Jun Mo Xi otherwise they would get lost.

Lin Feng grabbed Xiao Ya's hand, looked at Yun Fei Yang and said, "Let's go."

Yun Fei Yang nodded and they left together.

Dragon Mountain's large group of cultivators were flying towards Duo Tian.

On Lin Feng's left in the air, there were people from Dragon Mountain.

Some middle-aged man from Tian Feng looked at Lin Feng, smiled and said, "You haven't died, you're lucky but tomorrow the competition will start. I'm sure you won't have such luck then..."

"Too bad for you, you're so old that you can't even participate to the Great Competition of Xue Yu. Otherwise you could have seen killing me personally. Hahaha." said Lin Feng mockingly, infuriating that person. Lin Feng was making fun of the man because he couldn't do anything to him.

Even though that person's cultivation level was higher than Lin Feng's, he was already too old. Lin Feng was still young and famous, handsome and strong. In the future, he would be even stronger. The middle-aged man was making fun of Lin Feng without thinking. At the same age as him, Lin Feng would be infinitely stronger than he was. Killing people as strong as the middle-aged man would probably be extremely easy for Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was humiliating him.

"What? It does not matter because my seven envoys will kill you first at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. Get ready to die during the first round." said the middle-aged man coldly. He then rolled up his sleeves and flew further.

"You're always acting recklessly." said someone else coldly. It was Di Long. He had stopped talking a lot since what happened

with Duan Wu Dao.

However, he needed something to comfort him so he was using Lin Feng to humiliate and insult. Since he had lost his dignity when facing Duan Wu Dao he was trying to get it back by insulting others.

Lin Feng turned his head and smiled at Di Long in an indifferent way. He didn't say anything though, he just smiled for a second and then turned his head again.

Di Long was speechless and pulled a long face. He just remained silent again. Silence was even worse than insults! Lin Feng was humiliating him again by ignoring him.

“Don't think that you are strong because your cultivation level increased. It means nothing. You didn't die because you're lucky, it could only have been because other people protected you. During the first round of the Great Competition of Xue Yu, you will die.” After saying that, Di Long also flew faster and passed in front of Lin Feng.

“It seems like many people want to kill you.” said Yun Fei Yang while laughing and looking at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng frowned. Some of the people from Xue Yue wanted him to die... Then those people from Tian Feng had attacked him by surprise in the middle of the night. He didn't understand the situation very clearly but he knew that now, there were still some people who wanted him dead. Good, he precisely wanted to kill

them too.

Apart from the people from Dragon Mountain, there were those from the three other empires and even people from Mi Cheng who were rushing over to Duo Tian. The Great Competition of Xue Yu was about to start, everybody from everywhere wanted to see it.

In the middle of the Duo Tian Mountain Chain, there were eight mountains. Those eight mountains were very strange because their peaks were larger than their base, as if they had been turned upside down by someone... Or some deities.

It was a most famous place in Duo Tian.

“Duo Tian Mountain Chain...” In the air a silhouette descended from the sky like a god. That person’s Qi was monstrously powerful. It was Di Ling, possessor of the firmament blood!

“Come out!” shouted Di Ling. Immediately another silhouette appeared at the top of another of the eight mountains. It was Duan Wu Dao from Xue Yue.

“You arrived early.” An evil Qi emerged in the sky as well as some black clouds. A black Qi was surrounding a gigantic coffin and had surrounded another of the mountains. A loud noise emerged in the air and a silhouette came out of the coffin. It was obviously Xue Sha from Black Wings.

On another mountain there was the Qi of a dead tree. Ku Yao

Tong appeared.

The Qi of a sword then whistled in the air and seven lights appeared. The sound of a zither had also spread in the air. Qi Qing Jian Ling Xiao And Liu Yu Qin Yu Xiao Xiao also arrived. On the seventh mountain, there was Yu Mo. The seven geniuses had arrived first!

Chapter 607: Before The Start

The seven geniuses had all claimed their mountains. Jun Mo Xi was the only one who hadn't arrived.

In the air, many silhouettes flickered. These cultivators wanted to go to the top of those mountains but since there were those scary geniuses there already they wouldn't. They were at first surprised but immediately gave up the idea. Instead, they just sat upon on some stones.

Around the mountain chain, many silhouettes were coming. They were the people from Dragon Mountain.

They were running in the air and looking at the mountains.

Those mountains were like huge stone pillars. The gaps between them were like huge precipices. From those mountains one could enjoy magnificent sights.

However, between those mountains the ground was extremely flat and extremely vast, it looked like a palace with a mysterious Qi. Even though that mountain chain was famous in Mi Cheng, people from Mi Cheng had never gone to the palace between the mountains. It seemed like a mysterious place. Perhaps that Shen Gong, whatever it was, could go there. That Shen Gong was something or someone too mysterious.

“What a vast mountain chain.” thought Lin Feng. The sight was incredible looking up. It looked like another world.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the eight mountains and the seven people on them. Lin Feng turned to Jun Mo Xi and said, "There's one mountain for you too."

Jun Mo Xi looked at the mountain, shook his head and said, "It's fine if we go to any mountain."

He then jumped onto a normal mountain which looked like a stone pillar.

Lin Feng smiled, held Xiao Ya's hand and jumped on the same mountain as Jun Mo Xi. Then Yun Fei Yang, Jian Chen, Tang You You and Qing Meng Xin also followed them.

People from Tian Feng chose another mountain, since they were in Duo Tian they didn't need to stay with people from other countries. Even though they were under the jurisdiction of Dragon Mountain, they liked nobody else.

As far as they were concerned everyone else were their enemies. They were too inclusive. The other people with them were just going to be a nuisance on their way during the Great Competition of Xue Yu. More people meant more competition, even people from Dragon Mountain were enemies in their eyes. Maybe during the Great Competition of Xue Yu they would even have to kill people from Dragon Mountain.

There were more and more people in Duo Tian. Even though the Great Competition of Xue Yu was going to start the day after,

people were still rushing there because they were impatient. Everyone wanted a good seat.

“There are eighty-one stone-pillar like mountains in total which are in a nine times nine formation. All the mountains will be so filled with people that some will have to go down to observe.” thought the crowd. There would be too many people. In less than one hour, there were already a few thousand there and mountain tops were being invaded. Except for where the mountain tops claimed by the strongest cultivators were.

Concerning the seven huge mountains, nobody was going to try. There was still a free one too but nobody was stepping on it, who knew what the consequences would be after that?

“No, there will be fights. Because people can’t go down there.” said Jun Mo Xi to the person who had just said that if there wasn’t enough space on mountain tops, people would have to go down. However, they couldn’t go down into that mysterious valley so the only solution would be to fight to get some space.

“Get lost. What makes you think you can be here??” Jun Mo Xi had just finished talking when someone had begun fighting.

The crowd turned around and saw some people arguing at the top of a mountain. Surprisingly, there were some familiar faces, the Yu Clan from Xue Yue.

Yu Jian and Yu Qin were there too.

“We’re here for the same thing right, we want to see great battles! Why couldn’t we watch the Great Competition of Xue Yu together, wouldn’t that be great and comfortable?” said that person while pulling a long face but not losing their temper.

“Pffff, you came to watch the competition. We came because two people of our Yu clan are going to participate at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. Nothing gives you the right to sit with us! Piss off!” said Yu Liu Shui while making a step forwards and releasing a monstrous amount of Qi.

“They’re going to join the Great Competition of Xue Yu?!” some people were wordless. They looked at the two young people of the Yu Clan. As expected, those two young men were extremely strong. Then, that person and the others who were with him left.

Yu Liu Shui looked proud of himself. Two of the young men of their clan were going to participate at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. What pride, what an honor, what glory!

“Yu Jian, Yu Qin, there will be many strong cultivators at the competition so you have to stay together and fight against them together. You will have no problem if you fight that way. During the second round, give all you can and then you will be able to make it to the third round. If you manage to stand on the fighting stage during the third round, that is already amazing. When we go back to Xue Yue, you two will be the next most important people after the prince, Duan Wu Dao.” said Yu Liu Shui to motivate his two young juniors. Yu Jian and Yu Qin nodded. They knew that they weren’t that strong in comparison with other participants but they were two. If they were careful enough nothing would happen

to them. They hoped that they would manage to survive the first round.

“You really think too highly of them. They are a joke.” said Teng Wu Yao in a cold and detached way. He landed on their mountain and mocked them. Wu Qing was with him.

“Don’t forget that Wu Qing is the third high-official, Yu Jian and Yu Qin only ranked fifth. That’s the end of the ranking of the list.”

“Hmph, since when does the ranking list mean anything? You will see after the competition.” said Yu Liu Shui coldly.

“If they face Tian Ming they will have no chance.” said someone else which surprised Teng Wu Yao and Yu Liu Shui. They turned around and saw Yue Qing Shan looking extremely aggressive.

Yue Tian Ming looked at them indifferently and said nodding, “If I face them, they will have no chance at all. They will never be able to win against me.”

“So arrogant.” said Wu Qing while groaning coldly like an animal.

“Too bad Lin Feng has disappeared, I wanted to fight against him! He had sufficient strength to fight against me, but I’ve never thought highly of you guys. Lin Feng was going places.” said Yue Tian Ming. Lin Feng was surprised. Disappeared? He wasn’t going to disappoint neither Yue Tian Ming nor Yue Qing Shan.

Back then, Yue Qing Shan had still hoped that Yue Tian Ming would fight against Lin Feng for Duan Xin Ye.

Yue Tian Ming wasn't going to participate at the Great Competition of Xue Yu with the hope of becoming famous in Xue Yue... He didn't care about that. He wanted to become a monstrously strong cultivator in the entire empire, that was his goal. In the future, he would despise Xue Yue.

Lin Feng was like that too. Besides, Lin Feng had to finish amongst the top nine cultivators of the competition...

As if Yu Jian had sensed that Lin Feng was looking at them, he turned his head.

“What are you looking at you weak piece of trash! You're just extremely lucky to have made it so far and to be able to participate to the competition.” said Yu Jian, his eyes looked like swords. Yue Tian Ming and Wu Qing were humiliating him and he didn't like it. Good thing Lin Feng was there so he could get angry back at them.

“Unfortunately, you won't be as lucky.” said Lin Feng with a cold smile on his face. He then stopped looking at Yu Jian. Yu Jian was stupefied, but he released some deadly energy to show him his place... That Lin Feng really wanted to die.

“No need to argue with such people. Now, we need to rest and restore our vitality and energy. In one day, we will need it.” said

Yun Fei Yang while smiling indifferently. He then immediately sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes. “You’re right.” said Lin Feng while nodding. He also sat down cross-legged and entered into a trance. He ignored everything in his surroundings and his blood started flowing like a calm river.

Chapter 608: The Magical Seeds

It was early in the morning and the atmosphere was gray. Some people were walking up already to break the eerie silence.

The entire mountain chain was filled with people.

Only seven of the eight strange mountains were occupied. People couldn't help but looked at those seven geniuses, they were real geniuses... It was possible to see that from only looking at their Qi.

Besides them there were many other cultivators on those eighty-one mountains which looked like stone pillars. They were either chatting or sitting cross-legged or standing proudly.

Apart from those eight mountains and eighty-one stone-pillars, the other mountains surrounding the area were filled with people who looked like little insects in the far distance. There were too many people.

Many hung off the slopes of the mountains. They would still be able to see the vast area that way, especially the flat area at the feet of the mountains. Everyone had guessed that the first round was going to start down there.

Lin Feng opened his eyes and took a deep breath. He felt particularly well, like a newborn.

He raised his head and looked at the sky, it was getting bright. It

was finally going to start.

Jun Mo Xi, Tang You You, Qing Meng Xin and Yun Fei Yang also looked excited. They had been waiting for this day for such a long time. The Great Competition of Xue Yu, that wonderful event was going to start and they had the chance to participate in it.

There were only a few others with Jun Mo Xi on his mountain. Yet, nobody dared to take the final 8th strange mountain that was unoccupied.

The sun gradually unveiled the entire area. Everybody looked at the sky, they couldn't wait for the competition to start. They couldn't believe it was about to start.

Suddenly a hurricane appeared in the air.

Rumbling sounds spread in the air. In the flat area at the bottom of the mountains, a silhouette appeared.

It was an old man whose skin was as white as snow. His air was snowy-white. He looked very particular, after the first glance one could never forget his odd appearance.

That person then stood in the air above that flat area and looked at the crowd. People had the impression that time had stopped when the old man looked at them. He was particularly intimidating.

“He belongs to Shen Gong.”

People from Mi Cheng had immediately guessed that he was a strong cultivator from Shen Gong.

“Let me introduce myself, I am an envoy of Shen Gong. My name is Xue Wu Chang. I will be the one in charge of the first round of the Great Competition of Xue Yu.”

When he had begun speaking everybody had started whispering.

Shen Gong? What was Shen Gong? Most people had never heard of Shen Gong, was it a sphere of influence in Xue Yu?

It seemed like Shen Gong was quite famous in Xue Yu!

“Now, the four empires have chosen some outstanding disciples to participate at the competition of Xue Yu. All of those geniuses will stand in front of me so that I can see you.” said Xue Wu Chang. In a flash, he rose high up in the air and moved to the east.

“People from Dragon Mountain, come next to me!” said Jun Mo Xi. In a flash, a myriad of silhouettes flickered and they gathered behind and next to Jun Mo Xi.

“Xiao Ya, please be careful and take care of yourself.” said Lin Feng. Xiao Ya nodded and said, “Bro, don’t worry about me, just take of yourself and be careful.”

“Alright. I’m off.” said Lin Feng. His body emitted whistling sounds while he rose up in the air. In a flash, he was in the middle of all the other people from Dragon Mountain.

At the same time, the seven geniuses at the top of the mountains also started rising up in the air and moving towards their respective groups in the south, north, east and west...

The geniuses from all the other countries and empires also meticulously joined their groups.

The crowd raised their heads and looked at the geniuses, they were one hundred and forty-four. They were the most outstanding geniuses of Xue Yu. They were all very young and were going to play important roles in the future of the Xue Yu.

Finally, the cruel competition was going to start. Some geniuses would die but for others it would be a great opportunity. After the competition, some of them would be able to reach beyond the clouds.

Xue Wu Chang glanced at them, nodded and said, “One hundred and forty-four, very good. Please give your best during the competition. It can determine your future. Good luck.” said the old man. They had to give their best, the competition would determine their future... Those words were resonating in people’s heads... It wasn’t an ordinary competition...

“Alright. First, let me tell you the rules. Under your feet there is a

precipice, and down there is the Demonic Area. If you go there, no matter how high your real cultivation level is, your cultivation level will fall down to the first Xuan Qi layer. Your spirit, soul, physical strength and skills will also be restrained, you won't be able to use them. You will only be able to use basic magical powers." said Xue Wu Chang slowly. The crowd was stunned.

Their cultivation level would only be the first Xuan Qi layer down there...? And they wouldn't be able to use their skills or other things...?

That was really too cruel!

"Indeed. It's exactly the way you think it is. Inside, you will all be of the same level. No matter how high your cultivation level is, the competition is fair so everyone will have a chance. What we value most during the competition are those with high natural abilities."

"Everybody will be of the same level...!" Those who were weak were excited to hear that. They obviously had faith in their natural abilities but the cultivation level was important. This way they wouldn't get killed by the strongest cultivators directly at the beginning.

"Alright, let me give you all some seeds. These seeds will teach you skills which you will be able to use in the precipice. Besides that they will have many more benefits. Everybody give your best. Those seeds have extremely beneficial effects on your health. You will be pleasantly surprised." said Xue Wu Chang, and then stretched his hand in which appeared magnificent and bright seeds. He threw one of them to everybody.

The crowd remained there motionless and the seeds all landed between their eyebrows.

In a flash, all the geniuses had a shiny seed between their eyebrows.

“Alright. Jump into the precipice now. It’s been waiting for you for ten years. The opportunity is rare, cherish it. Dangers and benefits coexist, remember that, give your best and you will seize all those great opportunities.” explained Xue Wu Chang indifferently. Everybody was excited. The Great Competition of Xue Yu was about to start!

Would it be dangerous or would it be a great opportunity? It depended on each person!

“Demonic Area, here I am!” said Duan Wu Dao while jumping into that precipice and disappearing inside. Di Ling, Xue Sha, Lin Xiao and all the others all jumped into the precipice. All these geniuses’ silhouettes were flickering and jumping into the precipice. Very quickly, Xue Wu Chang was the only one left in the air. A hundred and forty-four geniuses had ended up inside. They were going to show what they were capable of!

Chapter 609: The Temple

After everybody jumped into the evil area, Xiao Ya found herself alone on a huge mountain. Now that everybody had left, she felt quite lonely there.

Jun Mo Xi and the others had already left. She was now looking down at the evil area.

In the crowd, there were two people talking. They looked extremely strange and were wearing ancient bronze masks.

“Po Jun, can you see Lin Feng?” asked one of them who looked extremely strong and robust. A moment before, amongst the hundred and forty-four silhouettes, they hadn’t seen Lin Feng. They couldn’t have been mistaken, they were sure about that.

However, Lin Feng’s rise in Xue Yue had been majestic. Po Jun and Han Man knew that he had left for Dragon Mountain. They had always paid attention to the news concerning Lin Feng. However, at this moment they couldn’t see Lin Feng.

“No idea.” said Po Jun while frowning. He felt quite bad. If Lin Feng wasn’t at the Great Competition of Xue Yu, it meant that he had been in an accident or something else had happened to him.

“With his temperament, he would have never missed the competition.” said Po Jun while looking at Han Man. They both looked extremely anxious.

“What you mean is that....” said Han Man, he didn’t dare think about it.

“Are you looking for Lin Feng?” said a little and gentle voice at that moment. Han Man and Po Jun turned their heads and looked a little girl.

“Indeed, do you know him? He’s like our brother.” said Han Man to Xiao Ya hastily.

“Maybe, what does your Lin Feng look like?” asked Xiao Ya.

“Younger than twenty-years old, handsome, amazing natural abilities. He uses swords and fire, he likes to put on white clothes.” said Han Man hastily.

When Xiao Ya heard him, she smiled. Lin Feng’s faced had changed so they couldn’t recognize him anymore.

“My big brother is inside already, it’s just that you cannot recognize him right now.” said Xiao Ya while giggling.

“Big brother?” Han Man and Po Jun were stupefied looking at her in a strange way.

“Yes.” nodded Xiao Ya, “My name is Xiao Ya, Lin Feng, the one you’re looking for became my big brother.”

“Why didn’t we see him then?”

“Hush!!!” whispered Xiao Ya in a low voice. “He offended too many people, so he has to hide.”

“I see.” Han Man and Po Jun glanced at each other and took a deep breath. They were suddenly relieved, nothing had happened to Lin Feng.

Xiao Ya was a little girl, she couldn’t lie to them about such serious things.

Besides the, everybody was speechless watching the cultivators down in the precipice. Everybody’s heart were palpitating.

They saw the mysterious Qi down in the precipice dissipate and everything became clear.

It was a vast area with rivers, mountains, and ancient temples. The hundred and forty-four geniuses in the precipice also appeared in various places. Suddenly, those who were immobile began turning around.

The observers could clearly understand why the geniuses were acting that way.

However, there was a wave of light down there and nobody knew

what it was.

“Look, it’s my big brother there.” said Xiao Ya while showing Lin Feng to Po Jun and Han Man. There was a silhouette by a river down there. It was Lin Feng looking around.

Lin Feng was stupefied. From the moment he had entered into the precipice he had sensed that his entire strength and pure Qi were absolutely oppressed, even the strength of the Herukas.

At that moment, Lin Feng only had the strength of the first Xuan Qi layer.

Down in the precipice, there was no exception. Everybody had their strength and pure Qi oppressed.

Lin Feng raised his head and saw that apart from mountains and rivers, there were stars. He looked at them and realized that there were a hundred and forty-three of them.

They were a hundred and Forty-four when they entered and Lin Feng could now only see a hundred and forty-three stars, it clearly meant that the star which was missing was himself.

“Huh?” At that moment, Lin Feng was speechless, a star disappeared! A star had disappeared without reason and Lin Feng had clearly seen it.

“Again....!!!” thought Lin Feng. At that moment, there were only

a hundred and forty-one starlights left.

“Nobody killed them.... Those starlights didn’t collide with anything else...” Lin Feng thought that they couldn’t have gotten killed. They had only just arrived in the precipice. They couldn’t have gotten killed in less than one second, it would have been too quick.

“Splash, splash, splash....” The splashing sounds of water were resonating in the atmosphere. Lin Feng frowned and looked at the river next to him.

“Boom!” Water was splashing in a terrifying way, there were gigantic waves on the water that were moving towards him.

Lin Feng was caught off-guard, he immediately jumped backwards. Even though his strength was restricted, he still had acute perceptions.

“Boom boom!” A trunk was immediately destroyed by something. Lin Feng stopped and stared at the silhouette coming towards him.

It was a ferocious wild beast... It looked like a fake flood dragon with fish scales all over its body. It looked really hideous.

“In the evil area, apart from cultivators, there are ferocious wild beasts as well...” Thought Lin Feng while looking at it. He immediately turned around and left. Lin Feng could see that a star

was getting near him too but he didn't feel like fighting against other people so soon.

His silhouette flickered and he appeared in another place. He looked around at the illusion and the stars.

At that moment, not far from Lin Feng, a star suddenly disappeared without any reason.

“Did a beast do that?” Lin Feng frowned and walked towards the place where the star had just disappeared. He wanted to find out why people were disappearing suddenly.

Lin Feng arrived next to that place and was absolutely astonished.

There was an ancient temple in front of him, it seemed half-real, yet half-fake. Its doors were firmly closed. On the temple, written in huge letters: TEMPLE.

“Temple?” Lin Feng was a bit surprised to see that such a place could be called a temple.

A moment before, those people had disappeared because they had just entered a temple.

Lin Feng assumed that there was something inside. It seemed like a sword, it was extremely strange.

“What is that place?” thought Lin Feng. He decided to wait outside and wait for someone to come out.

After a short time, the door of the temple opened itself and someone came out. Lin Feng was surprised, that person was Yu Jian.

At the moment when they entered the evil area they had lost their comrades. Therefore, Yu Jian wasn't with Yu Qin anymore. They couldn't find each other.

Yu Jian was also speechless when he saw Lin Feng, but he immediately narrowed his eyes and smiled coldly.

“What a coincidence.” Yu Jian slowly walked towards Lin Feng. In his hand he had a sword and he was smiling in an ice-cold way.

Lin Feng frowned but didn't retreat. He was just looking at him and standing.

In the evil area, everybody had the strength of the first Xuan Qi layer, without any exception.

“You piece of trash! You should have died earlier, now I'll take care of you!” Yu Jian made a step forwards and released his deadly energies. That sword looked particularly sharp. Lin Feng's heart started pounding. “It's a sword skill!!!” Lin Feng was astonished. He finally had an idea of what was in that temple. There were

skills and techniques!

Chapter 610: How To Use The Seeds

“What a fast sword!” thought Lin Feng. Lin Feng trampled his feet on the ground and moved backwards.

“Slash!” The cold light of the sword moved in the air and a starlight appeared in front of Lin Feng. His sword then moved obliquely in the air towards Lin Feng and had reached him.

His top was lacerated, the move had been too subtle and quick. Then Lin Feng saw blood appear on his chest where his clothes had been torn apart.

“As expected, the strength of my corporeal body is also constricted. His corporeal body also only has the strength of the first Xuan Qi layer.” guessed Lin Feng. That evil area was really terrifying. Its only rule was to constrict everybody.

The only strength which existed in there was the one provided by the evil area.

“You still want to try me?” said Yu Jian while smiling. His sword appeared again, twinkled and started shaking uninterruptedly. Yu Jian seemed like he was very far from Lin Feng but had in a flash appeared near him.

Lin Feng was fixedly staring at him. He wanted to understand the angle at which the sword was coming to him.

“Hmph.” Yu Jian moved his sword and in a flash, it was about to reach him.

Yu Jian and Lin Feng had the same level at that moment, they were both of the first Xuan Qi layer. The problem was that Yu Jian had a skill and Lin Fen didn't.

Lin Feng's eyes were twinkling and kept staring at the sword. He condensed a tiny amount of pure Qi into his hand. He then slapped that sword aside and then stretched his right hand, condensed pure Qi again and grabbed the sword. He held it firmly.

Blood started flowing in Lin Feng's hand and Yu Jian's sword kept shaking violently. Lin Feng's facial muscles kept twisting and he was shouting violently.

“Get lost!” He moved his right hand back. In a flash, the sword moved as well as Yu Jian's body. He looked like he was going to fall.

Lin Feng didn't knit his eyebrows at all, instead, he took advantage of the fact that Yu Jian looked like he was going to fall down and immediately attacked him.

“Get lost!” Lin Feng then immediately punched him violently and blood splashed out of Yu Jian's mouth. His punch had even managed to project him backwards. However, Yu Jian's fighting abilities weren't affected.

Lin Feng didn't wait for him to strike back though, he immediately moved in the direction of the temple. By the time Yu Jian understood what was going on the door of the temple was closing itself and Lin Feng was already inside.

Yu Jian looked glum while fixedly staring at the temple. Surprisingly, Lin Feng had managed to escape from him. Yu Jian obviously knew that if he just had a wonderful opportunity to kill Lin Feng.

Outside of the evil area, the people of the Yu Clan were looking at that move in an ice-cold way. He hadn't managed to kill Lin Feng. Xiao Ya, Han Man and Po Jun however, felt extremely relieved. Under such circumstances where their strength was constricted, courage, insight and willpower were the most important factor. And it seemed that when it came to those qualities, Lin Feng was much stronger than Yu Jian.

In the temple, Lin Feng's pure Qi was flowing and his hand was slowly healing. He was carefully observing his surroundings.

In front of Lin Feng, in the air there was a sword in suspension. There were several swords and there were stars twinkling on those swords. They looked like the seeds Xue Wu Chang had sealed between their eyebrows, they were exactly the same.

"Those small swords hide something... Probably some sword skills..." thought Lin Feng. Yu Jian had gone in without anything and had come back out with a sword skill. It was probably the first sword that he had obtained. There were six other small swords, the first sword Lin Feng could see had one starlight twinkling on it

while the last one had seven starlights twinkling on it, that confirmed Lin Feng's theory.

“Come down.” Xue Wu Chang had said that those seeds would give everyone a great opportunity. Relying on those seeds they would be able to choose skills which would provide them with unconceivable advantages. They just had to remain brave and courageous and the effects of the seeds would be incredible, they would be astonished.

Xue Wu Chang's words were resonating in Lin Feng's head which surprised him. Those seeds could provide them with unimaginable advantages.

“Could it be that the seeds and the swords have to be of the same level in order to get them...?” thought Lin Feng. He had many different thoughts. Indeed, it had to be that way. Xue Wu Chang had given everybody one seed before entering the evil area, there were one hundred and forty-four seeds, possibly, those cultivators had to kill other geniuses to obtain seeds and obtain better skills and magical powers.

“So you have to kill other people to get the best things... What an evil rule.” thought Lin Feng whose pupils shrank. He had to kill people to steal seeds to obtain better skills. Everybody would try to hunt him to obtain his seed. (editor's note: no pun intended :O

Lin Feng could guess that he was in one temple of many, maybe the others would have more techniques. Seeds could actually drive these geniuses insane, they would be ready to do anything to get seeds.

“What a cruel game.” thought Lin Feng whose eyes were twinkling. No wonder that Yu Jian’s deadly energies were so thick, he wanted to kill people to obtain seeds and then obtain better skills. Lin Feng needed to learn a skill very quickly and then steal seeds from other people as quickly as possible as well.

“Even though I can obtain treasures by using seeds, it’s only the first seed right now. And it is an unavoidable step, otherwise I will never be able to go and kill other people. On the contrary, they will chase me down with their new skills.” thought Lin Feng without hesitation. In a flash, the seed he had between his eyebrows twinkled as well as the starlight of the first sword.

Between Lin Feng’s seed and the sword then appeared a bridge. In his brain also appeared a sword, it was appeared slowly. It seemed to be coming from far away and abruptly it appeared in front of him and then penetrated into his brain. Lin Feng’s forehead was there covered with cold sweat.

“What a powerful sword...” thought Lin Feng surprised. It was similar to the sword that Yu Jian had just used. As expected, he had taken the first sword. However, Yu Jian hadn’t understood the fundamental essence of that sword. He couldn’t control it that well.

“With one seed, I could get only that sword.” whispered Lin Feng but that sword was already very good.

A green sword slowly descended in front of Lin Feng, he

stretched his head and put it in his back. Then he sat down cross-legged and visualized that sword.

He had already used the seed to get the sword, he could go out if he wanted just like Yu Jian had done. But instead he preferred staying inside and learning first. If Yu Jian managed to properly understand the sword, he would be able to kill Lin Feng very easily. The best thing Lin Feng could do was to stay in the temple in the temple and understand the sword.

Sharpening the sword wouldn't interfere with the cutting of firewood. He needed to practice the skill before using it. Meanwhile, others outside could become much stronger while he took his time.

That sword kept revolving in Lin Feng's brain, his understanding of that sword skill was becoming deeper and deeper, as if it had been carved into Lin Feng's brain.

After a long time, Lin Feng opened his eyes and between his eyebrows, the sword was brighter than before.

Lin Feng abruptly stood up and stretched one finger which was as sharp as a sword. It seemed extremely slow but it actually crashed onto a wall of the temple in a flash and a hole appeared.

"One day.... surprisingly, it took me one day to learn that skill. No wonder that Yu Jian hadn't managed to understand it all that well." whispered Lin Feng. Suddenly, a light beam spread in the temple. Lin Feng turned around and discovered that the door of

the temple was open. He was stupefied.

As expected, the door had just opened itself, one could practice cultivation in the temple for only one day, otherwise people could have hidden in it indefinitely.

One day was the limit!

Chapter 611: A Disaster for the Yu Clan

“It seems like I have to go out.” Thought Lin Feng when he saw that the door was open. He couldn’t see what was happening outside, but he was hoping that the temple wasn’t being encircled by his enemies.

Lin Feng grabbed hold of the sword he had obtained and left the temple.

He checked to the left and right, he was being extremely careful. There was nobody outside which relieved Lin Feng. He continued to glance around.

But after a while, Lin Feng saw some starlight, two of them and then three.

“As expected.” Lin Feng was surprised. After one day, nobody wasted any time. People continued to hunt others to steal starlight seeds...

“There...” At that moment, Lin Feng was stupefied. There were five star lights, someone had five starlight seeds which meant that he had killed four people already!

Besides, Lin Feng just realized that there was something strange, everybody was trying to avoid him. All the starlights were moving away from him.

People who had that many starlight seeds were very strong.

“Huh?” Lin Feng was surprised, at that moment, there was a star approaching him.

There were two people, one of them had one starlight seed and the other had two.

“Do they want to kill me?” Thought Lin Feng. He then started to calmly walk away. As expected, when Lin Feng changed direction, the other two moved in the same direction as him. They were rushing in his direction and gaining speed.

Lin Feng's pace didn't change, he was moving neither slowly nor quickly at that moment but those two people continued to move closer.

Finally, he arrived somewhere and stopped, he then turned around and saw the people arriving.

Yu Jian and Yu Qin.

Yu Jian already had two starlight seeds, he had killed someone and stolen another starlight seed.

“After one day in there, you finally came out!” Said Yu Jian with a cold smile on his face. He had been waiting for Lin Feng to leave. After seeing only one starlight leaving the temple, Yu Jian understood that it must be Lin Feng. On the way, Yu Qin managed

to join him.

“You want to kill me that badly...?” Said Lin Feng indifferently while looking at Yu Jian.

“You should have died much sooner. You’re really lucky to have made it so far. But, I have an extra seed now, with its advantage, you are already a dead man.” Said Yu Jian while smiling coldly. A sword then appeared in his hand.

“Moron. You’ve only been hiding in the temple for one day, that wasn’t very smart.” Said Yu Jian mockingly and then added: “I learnt the same skill as you with my seed and then an agility technique with the other one, Yu Qin learnt a hand skill with his seed. You’re nothing, how could you hope to compete with us?”

Lin Feng reached back and unsheathed the sword from his back which emitted a cold gleam.

“Hmph! We learnt the same sword skill and I now have an agility technique, get ready to die.” Shouted Yu Jian furiously. He then jumped forwards attacking Lin Feng abruptly. His sword was dazzling.

Lin Feng took a step, his sword twinkled, the same sword as Yu Jian. They both looked exactly the same.

“I’m going to get another seed!” Said Yu Jian happily. He then moved with incredible speed and in a flash his sword arrived in

front of Lin Feng.

But at that moment Lin Feng's sword which was in the distance, moved like an illusion, slow and quick at the same time...

"Psssshhhh..." A sound spread through the air and a sword penetrated through flesh. Lin Feng and Yu Jian were facing each other, Yu Jian's sword was in front of Lin Feng's chest and even pierced his clothes, but it was unable to move farther. However, Lin Feng's sword had already pierced Yu Jian's throat.

That sword seemed to be slow, but in a flash, it had pierced into his throat. He had learnt an agility technique which had helped him improve his speed but his sword skill wasn't at the same level as Lin Feng, who had truly understood the skill!!

"Same sword skill indeed, but our way of practicing is different." Said Lin Feng indifferently. He then pushed Yu Jian's sword aside using his finger.

Yu Jian's eyes were wide open, he was fixedly staring at Lin Feng, he refused to close his eyes. Lin Feng's sword had been incredible, to the extent that Yu Jian was still seeing an illusion.

Lin Feng was a moron?

But, why was he able to comprehend the skill much better than Yu Jian? And in the outside world, wasn't it the same?

“Because you’re about to die, let me tell you something, I am Lin Feng, I am Lin Feng from Xue Yue!” Said Lin Feng coldly which astonished Yu Jian, he started shaking even more. Lin Feng, it was the real Lin Feng...!

Then Lin Feng’s sword moved more and he started shaking intensely. The two seeds between Yu Jian’s eyebrows immediately appeared between Lin Feng’s eyebrows! It was incredibly intriguing.

Lin Feng had killed him and gained two starlight seeds. Yu Jian had already used his two seeds to learn skills but after dying, they were usable again, Lin Feng could use them again to learn another skill.

When Yu Qin saw Yu Jian collapse, he was shocked as he stared at Lin Feng.

It was the real Lin Feng, he had just thought that it was a nobody with a strong body, but in fact it was Lin Feng, the real one... It was the Lin Feng he had always wanted to eliminate...

Lin Feng had disappeared but he hadn’t died, he instead transformed and appeared with a new face. He hadn’t even bothered to change his name, yet nobody had guessed that he was the same person.

“You asked people from Tian Feng to come and kill me, you nearly caused my death. Initially, I didn’t intend to kill you, but you’ve always continued to push me. How foolish!” Said Lin Feng

while slowly walking towards Yu Qin. Yu Qin kept moving backwards, he was terrified.

Lin Feng originally was a nobody in Xue Yue and then rose and became a famous figure. Everybody had been astonished by Lin Feng's cultivation speed. He used to be trash, but step by step, he had become so strong that it scared everyone, making them seem like trash for being so afraid. So just like Yu Qin, many people wanted to eradicate him.

However, Lin Feng was still alive and he was in front of Yu Qin.

“Run.” Thought Yu Qin at that moment. He was terrified by Lin Feng and, of course, didn't dare fight against him, he turned around and started running like mad. Surprisingly, he didn't even consider trying to avenge Yu Jian's death.

“You know, running is useless now.” Said Lin Feng. He made a step forwards, raised his sword which seemed to be extremely distant, but in a flash, it abruptly appeared in front of Yu Qin, it was releasing a suffocating pressure. Yu Qin wasn't even able to move for much longer until he crashed into the ground and the starlight seed between his eyebrows appeared on Lin Feng.

Lin Feng already had four starlight seeds and could learn three new skills.

He didn't go back to the temple though, he needed to get more seeds to learn the better skills, he wanted to learn the sword skill which required seven seeds!

Outside of the evil area, Yu Liu Shui was furious and his face had become extremely red.

The two geniuses of the Yu Clan had died! They were both killed by the same person.

Yu Liu Shui had hoped that those two geniuses would make it, at least, to the second round, but in the end they died. He would be going back to Xue Yue with nothing.

When Yu Qing Shan, on Yu Liu Shui's side, saw that Yu Qin and Yu Jian had died, he remained calm. There were many benefits to gain in the evil area but not everybody could seize those opportunities! Yu Jian and Lin Feng had had the same sword skill and the same cultivation level, but there had still been a huge difference in power!

The Great Competition of Xue Yue belonged to real warriors, to the real geniuses! Even though there was an initial one hundred and forty-four geniuses, lots of them would die!

Suddenly, Yu Liu Shui turned his head and looked at Xiao Ya on another mountain. Sharp lights were twinkling in his eyes. Lin Feng had come together with that girl.

Lin Feng had killed his sons, so the Yu Clan would make him pay the price for it!

Chapter 612: Encountering Yu Mo!

Yu Liu Shui's silhouette flickered and he threw himself towards Xiao Ya while releasing his Qi.

That powerful Qi terrified Han Man and Xiao Ya who turned around and immediately saw Yu Liu Shui attacking them.

“How shameless!!!” Shouted. Han Man furiously. He grabbed Xiao Ya's hand and moved backwards but Yu Liu Shui acted as if he hadn't heard him and kept moving forwards. His fist was still aiming at them.

“STOP!!!!!!” Shouted a furious voice which crashed through the air and oppressed the entire mountain chain and especially Yu Liu Shui.

Yu Liu Shui felt like a meteor had crashed into his body and he groaned in pain. He immediately fell to the ground and struggled to remain conscious.

He pulled a long face and raised his head, he saw Xue Wu Chang in the air who was fixedly staring at him with killing intent. Yu Liu Shui was terrified.

“The Great Competition of Xue Yu is a competition in which those geniuses fight and risk their lives, you are an insignificant outsider. If we allowed insignificant people to shamelessly attack people out here, how could the geniuses concentrate their efforts on the competition? If you want to avenge your people, you can do

it after the competition. BUT! If you even glance at them again during the competition, I will kill you on the spot!” A terrifying energy had invaded the mountains, everybody could clearly sense it which made them shiver. Nobody dared to make a single move.

“What a buffoon, you really made a spectacle of yourself.” Said Yue Qing Shan while looking at Yu Liu Shui. Yu Liu Shui groaned and coughed even more blood. His face looked hideous. The geniuses of his clan had been killed and he couldn’t even avenge them.

“Han Man, bro, are you alright?” Said Po Jun at that moment. Even though Yu Liu Shui hadn’t managed to attack him properly, his Qi had still reached Han Man and injured him.

“I’m ok.” Said Han Man while wiping some blood from his mouth. He was fixedly staring at Yu Liu Shui under his bronze mask and then looked at the evil area again.

After Lin Feng killed Yu Jian and Yu Qin, he had four starlight seeds. He looked around and found out that there were more people coming towards him. Everyone had seen that there were three people in the area, but shortly after there was only one person left with four starlights, he had obviously killed the other two people.

The killer hadn’t taken the time to go to a temple and learn an amazing skill, so the best time to attack him was now.

Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled and he immediately started to move

towards the temple. However, four people started rushing to block his path. Two of them had one starlight seed and the others had two each. He couldn't deal with them all by himself.

When they saw Lin Feng continue moving towards them, they threw themselves towards him. If they could obtain his seeds, they would reap a huge benefit. They had to stop Lin Feng from entering the temple, otherwise he would enter the temple and become a much stronger opponent. He would be very difficult to defeat after that.

Lin Feng obviously knew what these people were thinking. However, defeating the people who had only one skill learnt was the best strategy.

Very quickly, Lin Feng could see people closing in, but he didn't stop. He rushed forward at full speed. The maximum speed of the first Xuan Qi layer was, of course, not the same as when he was in the outside world.

“Stop!” someone bombarded the atmosphere with their fist. It was filled with deadly energy. Lin Feng saw many fists start to form in the air and move towards him, they were forming a perfect line in the air.

“What a monstrous punch.” Thought Lin Feng. His silhouette flickered and he unsheathed his sword.

At that moment, Lin Feng had already forgotten the punches, he was focusing on his sword which emitted a whistling sound.

The sword collided with the punch and a fierce deadly energy was released into the atmosphere. That person had much better comprehension of his skills than Yu Jian.

“Die!”

Lin Feng shouted furiously and his sword pierced the atmosphere, it cut through the fists in the air and continued moving, ignoring the resistance of the atmosphere, moving forwards with indomitable will.

“Pssshhh....” Another sound spread in the atmosphere, this time it wasn’t deadly energy which had been pierced but the person who unleashed it.

“Boom!”

The fist however hadn’t stopped for even a second as it crashed onto Lin Feng’s body causing him to fly backwards. His sword pierced the enemy’s throat and created a scene filled with blood as another starlight seed appeared between Lin Feng’s eyebrows.

At that moment, Lin Feng had five starlight seeds. Around him, many people were paying close attention to his movements.

“What a terrifying sword... One attack and he was killed...” People outside were also stupefied. They were all sent into the evil area with the same level and no skills, it was to see who had greater

comprehension abilities.

This was actually an extremely fair way to compete. Those who had higher cultivation levels were inherently stronger than those with lower cultivation levels, if they retained their cultivation level in the evil area, the strong would have killed the weak in the blink of an eye. However, those who had an extremely powerful comprehension would have a greater advantage in a fair fight, and Lin Feng was one of those people. Therefore, under such circumstances, he could easily handle people who relied on solely on their cultivation.

Lin Feng stood up and looked around. The other three people were closing in. Besides, some more people were starting to change direction towards them. They all wanted to steal his seeds.

“Go.” Thought Lin Feng as he rushed in another direction, he couldn’t afford to be surrounded, otherwise, he would really die.

In that evil area, one could see other people’s position with a glance, so he couldn’t afford to be careless.

“A temple.” At that moment, Lin Feng had created some distance between them and was the north area close to a temple. Lin Feng’s eyes were distant as he contemplated his options.

If he went in, he would be able to use his four seeds to obtain a powerful skill but after that he would have no seeds left and would have to kill even more people to obtain better skills...

Lin Feng was irresolute at that moment. More people would arrive as time progressed. What he initially wanted was to kill enough people to obtain the better skills right away.

Now, he had to decide on a different plan.

“Huh?” But while Lin Feng was considering the situation, he narrowed his eyes and suddenly, five starlights appeared. There was already someone at the temple... What a coincidence, that person was coming out.

That person immediately jumped out and appeared at the top of the temple. When he saw Lin Feng, he looked excited.

Lin Feng had five starlight seeds... If he stole them, he would be able to use another five seeds!

It seemed like this time the heavens were on his side.

Lin Feng stopped walking and looked at that silhouette. It was one of the eight most outstanding geniuses, Yu Mo from the Firmament Empire.

During that short time, the people from behind were starting to catch up when they saw Yu Mo leaving the temple and his five starlights shining brightly, they all stopped and didn't dare approach.

Everybody revered and worshiped the eight most outstanding

disciples of the competition. Besides, at that moment, Yu Mo had five starlight seeds after exiting the temple which meant that he had probably obtained a monstrous ability.

“I must leave.”

Lin Feng didn't want to fight against Yu Mo either. He was using only one seed and Yu Mo was using five seeds, besides Yu Mo was one of the eight geniuses of the competition, he probably mastered skills at an incredible speed. Lin Feng wasn't strong enough to fight against him with only a single skill.

Lin Feng then moved in the other direction but Yu Mo just smiled coldly.

“Where are you going?” Said Yu Mo at that moment while turning into a hurricane and moving at full speed.

Yu Mo had killed one person and rushed to a temple, he acquired a monstrous agility technique, then he used that agility technique to kill two other people, one of them had a single seed and the other had two seeds, then Yu Mo had used those three seeds to obtain a monstrously strong skill, a fist skill.

“Come back!” Shouted Yu Mo furiously.

Chapter 613: Ambition

Lin Feng's clothes had been shredded, Yu Mo gathered pure qi into his fist and struck towards Lin Feng's body. Where Lin Feng was, a terrifying whirlpool appeared which seemed like it was going to swallow him.

“Boom!” Lin Feng slammed his foot to the ground, he wanted to retreat but he only saw Yu Mo give an evil laugh. He then threw himself at Lin Feng with lightning quick speed.

“Sword!” Shouted Lin Feng. A light twinkled, Lin Feng abruptly turned around and raised his sword to the west, that terrifying sword was neither too slow nor too fast, it just continued to move forwards.

“Die!” Lin Feng looked murderous. It seemed like Lin Feng wasn't near Yu Mo, however, Lin Feng's sword seemed like it could defy the physical laws as it immediately appeared in front of Yu Mo, it was aimed at his throat.

Lin Feng's sword was extremely fast.

Yu Mo quickly dodged and raised his hand to block as terrifying pure Qi started undulating around him. A subtle sound emerged as Lin Feng's sword penetrated into his hand which made Yu Mo's proud face suddenly drop.

Lin Feng's sword was incredible, it had ignored the laws of physics. If Yu Mo hadn't reacted quickly, that sword wouldn't have

penetrated his hand but his throat instead!

“DIE!..... die... die.....” Yu Mo shouted “die” once, but it echoed through the sky. He was furious and his long hair started violently fluttering in the air, he was releasing a terrifying energy.

He unleashed a punch and a vortex appeared next to Lin Feng again, it wanted to swallow him. Lin Feng groaned and was once again projected backwards.

While Lin Feng moved backwards, blood splashed from Yu Mo’s hand again as he heavily stepped on the ground and suddenly disappeared from sight.

“Agility technique!” Thought Lin Feng stupefied. Yu Mo had learnt an incredible agility technique which enabled him to move extremely quickly.

Lin Feng raised his sword and instead of moving backwards, he rushed forwards. However, he only saw Yu Mo appear briefly in front of him and vanish once again. Lin Feng’s sword was only fast enough to pass through an after image, while Yu Mo threw himself at Lin Feng’s back while shouting furiously. A terrifying fist was aiming at the back of Lin Feng’s head. If Lin Feng didn’t move quickly, his skull would be crushed.

“Boom!”

“Kacha!”

Yu Mo's hand didn't reach Lin Feng's head like expected, instead, it was greeted by a punch from Lin Feng's other arm. However the power of the punch travelled through the fist and snapped Lin Feng's arm in half.

"Kacha!" Pure Qi continued up his arm, doing more damage to the bones as it passed. Lin Feng gnashed his teeth and glared Yu Mo with killing intent.

"You injured me!"

Yu Mo was glaring at Lin Feng and continued moving forwards to put more pressure on Lin Feng's fist.

"Die!" Shouted Yu Mo. Yu Mo shook his fist and in a flash, Lin Feng was surrounded by a vortex again.

Lin Feng's facial expression was ruthless and he was still firmly holding his sword with his other hand. In his head, there was only his sword, nothing else.

"Boom! Boom!" Another series of sounds emerged in the air. Yu Mo continued moving forwards and putting pressure on Lin Feng. He looked like he had gone crazy.

Lin Feng was firmly holding his sword but at that moment, he was shocked. As if someone couldn't wait for him to die quick enough, he suddenly felt a powerful Qi surge from behind him...

Lin Feng quickly jumped and moved aside. He then felt a wind breeze past his body and immediately a rumbling sound filled his ears as wind was blasted in every direction.

“Tang You You!!!!” When Lin Feng saw that Tang You You was attacking Yu Mo, he was astonished! She was now fighting against Yu Mo!

Yu Mo was also stupefied. Tang You You had four starlight seeds already. She wasn't going to be easy to defeat either. Yu Mo suddenly pulled a long face, he looked particularly glum.

In the evil area, their cultivation levels were all the same, what a pity! The most important thing was to obtain as many starlight seeds as possible to get the treasures, that was the only thing which could make the difference inside the evil area.

“Let's go.” Said Tang You You to Lin Feng. She then slowly moved backwards. Lin Feng coldly looked at Yu Mo and left with Tang You You.

Yu Mo looked at them leave, fighting against them at the same time wouldn't be that easy, he had no choice.

“Fuck off! Stop looking at me!” Said Yu Mo as he rushed towards someone who had moved too close to the fight. Everybody started shaking, it didn't look good for that person. Tang You You and Lin Feng had left and that person was now closest to Yu Mo.

That person then immediately started running but Yu Mo moved like a hurricane and in a flash arrived next to him. Then Yu Mo's hand suddenly clamped onto the person's neck, a subtle sound emerged in the air and in the blink of an eye new starlight seed appeared between Yu Mo's eyebrows.

Most of the others who had been watching had already left. They had been careful, prudent and smart, they had understood that they couldn't waste time watching, they had to use their time to hunt others to become stronger.

Those who weren't seizing the early advantages in the beginning, were dying one after the other... Those who were still alive were becoming stronger and stronger. Killing the strongest ones had become almost invincible, so the weakest had no chance of winning, they had to adopt a defensive strategy and quickly retreat from all danger.

Lin Feng and Tang You You were on a dune at that moment. They could see all around them.

The wind was blowing on Tang You You's hair making it float on the wind. Her white skin looked particularly cold at that moment.

"Thank you." Said Lin Feng. Tang You You had saved his life, he wouldn't have been able to escape otherwise.

"Jun Mo Xi said that people from Dragon Mountain have to stick together! I hope that more of us will be able to move on to the next

round. Besides, you are talented, it would be a pity if you died in the first round... Get ready to use the seeds you have right now.” Said Tang You You while turning her head to him. She looked elegant and beautiful. Lin Feng had given her a very good first impression. He was extremely brave and courageous as well as a strong and talented cultivator from Xue Yue... She appreciated him and didn’t want him to die in the first round.

At that moment, he had four seeds which he hadn’t used, if he had, he would have been able to fight back against Yu Mo.

Besides, Lin Feng had also injured Yu Mo with his sword while being at a disadvantage.

“Don’t worry. I am going to wait.” Said Lin Feng while shaking his head. He really wanted better treasures, he wanted to wait.

“We were a hundred and forty-four cultivators when we came in, now forty people are dead already. In a short while, the first round will be over. Maybe if you get to a temple, you will become much stronger but many people have died already. The first round will be over soon, it is just a matter of time. It also means that we won’t have a chance to kill many more people. After all, you’re not the only one with multiple starlight seeds, therefore, we need to get stronger as soon as possible to gather more seeds. That is what Xue Wu Chang meant when he talked about the benefits.” Said Tang You You. Lin Feng was very ambitious but the problem was that the eight most outstanding geniuses were very dangerous. Of course, people would all adopt different strategies, some of them thought that using seeds immediately was the best way, then they could immediately kill to gather more seeds. That was one

strategy.

“It’s very possible that other want your seeds and are paying attention to you.” Said Tang You You after remaining silent for a short while. Lin Feng already had five seeds and wasn’t going to the temple, many people would target him.

“Therefore, I cannot afford to waste time.” Said Lin Feng, he was fixedly staring at Tang You You and added: “Will you help me?”

“Help you...?” Whispered Tang You You, she was a bit surprised.

“Yes, help me. I know that I may sound selfish, but I don’t want to miss out these opportunities, I know you don’t either. Considering the transparent nature of this place and your strength, people will try to avoid you at all costs and there’s not much you can do alone. Therefore, if we work together, we can kill people and acquire seeds which wouldn’t be possible for either of us by ourselves. We should use this opportunity to seize an advantage.” Said Lin Feng firmly. This was a rare opportunity, Lin Feng, just like Tang You You, didn’t want to let it slip. Lin Feng needed strength so he didn’t hesitate when asking Tang You You for help!

Chapter 614: Killing Together!

Tang You You remained silently staring at Lin Feng, he was asking her to help him. He was asking her to give up a part of her freedom. She would certainly miss out on some seeds if they worked together.

“Why would I help you when I could instead take your seeds from you?” asked Tang You You surprised. Her cultivation level was higher than Lin Feng’s. If she could obtain some great skills, wouldn’t she be stronger than him?

“We are two different people, one of us must compromise. If it’s not you then it’s me, but in any case one of us must compromise otherwise we won’t progress. At this time I need strength more than you do. It is only because of this that you think that I am selfish which might be true to some extent. But if you help me I can give you two pure healing pills. I think that you would be happy to have them.” said Lin Feng looking determined. His cultivation level was indeed very low, if he missed the opportunities of the evil area he would be too weak to combat the other geniuses. In the evil area, some already had six or seven starlight seeds. They were probably the eight most outstanding geniuses.

Besides, the number of people who had only three or four seeds was reducing quickly. Lin Feng was convinced that those people were going to be killed by the others.

Lin Feng had to become stronger otherwise everybody would rush to kill him.

“Pure healing pills!” Tang You You was surprised. Lin Feng also had such treasures... Pure healing pills enabled cultivators to entirely refill their pure Qi reserves. That kind of pill was extremely useful, especially during the competition. If there was a cultivation difference between two cultivators, a pure healing pill could make the difference.

After remaining silent for a short while, Tang You You said, “Alright, what do you want me to do exactly?”

When Lin Feng heard Tang You You, he smiled resplendently. Tang You You was accepting his request!

Lin Feng took out two pills and gave them to Tang You You, she looked pleasantly surprised.

“Are you not afraid that I’ll betray you now that you gave me these?”

“You just saved my life. Those two pills are nothing compared to what you have done for me, just see it as a sign of my gratitude. Even if you take them and leave me I will not blame you.” said Lin Feng with a warm smile on his face. Tang You You’s beautiful eyes were twinkling as she immediately put the pills away.

Lin Feng was funny and interesting.

“There are two people at the top of some dunes, one of them has

three seeds and the other only has one. We should kill the one with three seeds first.” said Lin Feng. Tang You You nodded and they started walking through some dunes.

In the evil area, even though everyone only had the strength of the first Xuan Qi layer, they could still control pure Qi use it to fly through the sky. However, not many people dared to because they didn't want to waste pure Qi, it was too dangerous.

Lin Feng started running quickly at full speed. Somebody could sense that Lin Feng was coming towards him and he raised his head. He obviously didn't want to fight because he had started running away.

Lin Feng suddenly jumped closed in the space between that person. They all had the strength of the first Xuan Qi layer so chasing other cultivators wasn't easy at all. Therefore, it was easier to escape. And in case it was impossible, you could always hide in temples and waste some time.

Lin Feng looked extremely resolute, he jumped forwards. His pure Qi emitted whistling sounds as he rose up in the air like an arrow.

He was flying in the air above a dune which seemed to increase his speed. Chasing people while flying was much easier! He then noticed a gray silhouette not far from him.

“Someone from Tiang Feng...” When Lin Feng saw that person, he smiled devilishly, that person was the one of the seven envoys!

That person rose his head and saw Lin Feng, he was surprised. Not only had he found Lin Feng but Lin Feng had five starlight seeds already.

“Didn’t you want to kill me in the first place? Why are you escaping now?” said Lin Feng before landing on the ground. He was looking at him in a cruel way. He despised him.

That person shook his fist and it turned golden. It was particularly dazzling and his Qi was quite strong.

Then he threw himself at Lin Feng, leading with his fist. That fist contained some Buddha Qi, unfortunately, it didn’t seem to be compatible with that person’s evil Qi. It was very strange.

A cold light twinkled, Lin Feng unsheathed his sword and immediately attacked that person’s fist. His golden Buddha fist seemed extremely solid and indestructible.

“Clang!!!!” A metallic sound spread in the air. Lin Feng jumped backwards and smiled.

“You are so weak...” That person had just exchanged his three seeds for a skill, a golden Shakyamuni fist skill. Even though he hadn’t practiced it for a long time, he was already able to make his fist turn into a real golden Shakyamuni fist which meant that almost nothing could destroy him. Therefore, he had stopped chasing people. His sole purpose was to protect himself, that’s why he was hiding in the middle of some dunes. He had first killed two

people, then he had acquired this skill and thought it was enough.

He hadn't thought that Lin Feng was paying attention to him, and even less that he would waste his pure Qi to chase him and run in the air.

"You really are a coward. I used only one seed and you tried to run away from me. People from Tian Feng are all weaklings and cowards, you chicken. You have no guts at all. Just like the envoys I killed in Xue Yue, you are also a mere piece of trash." said Lin Feng indifferently. That person was astonished, Lin Feng had killed some of the envoys in the past?

"You are... Lin Feng?!"

"Indeed I am. On that night, you sent so many people to kill me but I killed all of them and I am still alive." said Lin Feng mockingly. The other looked furious. Surprisingly, this Lin Feng was the real one. They had all been fooled by his appearance.

"You didn't die then but now I will kill you!" said the envoy while jumping forwards. His two hands turned golden, they were dazzling while looking extremely solid.

Lin Feng's sword looked like a poisonous dragon incessantly attacking that person's fist, but it was useless. His sword couldn't cut through those fists.

"No wonder you were just hiding here, that skill is only enough

to protect yourself.” said Lin Feng.

The envoy had just joined his hands and could protect himself. When he was blocking Lin Feng’s sword he had managed to grab it and hold onto it firmly. Lin Feng smiled coldly and tried to move his sword back. Before that man realized, Lin Feng had managed to pull his sword back and put it in front of the envoy’s throat.

“Golden Shakyamuni Body!” shouted that person whose facial expression drastically changed. His entire body was dazzling. He transformed into a golden statue, that skill looked particularly inappropriate and inharmonious on such a person.

“Who?”

However, at that moment, the envoy was caught off guard. He turned his head and saw a beautiful silhouette run towards him. Immediately after, her fists broke through the golden statue.

“Crrrr....” His entire body was breaking. Lin Feng’s sword then pierced through his throat. He was shaking violently, he looked astonished as he collapsed.

“Die.” Lin Feng shook his sword in that person’s throat and in a flash, three starlight seeds appeared between Lin Feng’s eyebrows. Now Lin Feng had eight starlight seeds and could use seven of them.

“Thank you.” said Lin Feng while smiling at Tang You You but

she didn't look so reassured. She pointed at a place down the hill and said, "Don't talk too fast."

Lin Feng turned his head and immediately looked down the dune. There were many stars twinkling down there. Those people had been staring at them. At that moment, Lin Feng's eight stars obviously attracted everybody. "Let's go." said Lin Feng when he saw that many people were running towards them. Tang You You started running with him at full speed.

Chapter 615: The Evil Temple

There were many people running up the dune together, but strangely they weren't fighting each other.

There were two people at the top of the dune. One of them had twelve starlight seeds, stealing that person's seeds would have been incredibly great.

There was another person with eight starlight seeds and it seemed that they hadn't used seven of them yet, which meant he hadn't obtained any great skills yet.

Many people in the area noticed that and rushed over to the dune. It seemed like the first round could finish any time on that dune.

Lin Feng and Tang You You were running frantically. Finally they arrived at the very top of the dune, it was a huge and vast flat area.

Surprisingly, at the top there was a temple out of which a mysterious and mystical Qi was emerging. Lin Feng looked at the temple, it seemed like there was a Heruka there, it looked kind and evil at the same time.

It was difficult to distinguish if it was evil or good.

“Maybe that the envoy obtained his golden Shakyamuni skill

from that temple.” Lin Feng and Tang You You glanced at each other and then gazed into the distance. More and more people were running up the dune. They were getting closer and closer to the top.

“Do you want to go to that temple?” asked Tang You You to Lin Feng. Lin Feng already had eight seeds and had used only one of them. He could probably obtain some monstrous skill at that moment and become much stronger.

Lin Feng looked irresolute, it had been so difficult to obtain those seven seeds. What he wanted the most was the sword skill from the sword temple but people were chasing them at that moment. If he wanted to obtain the sword skill, he definitely had to fly through the sky and use too much pure Qi... Others would then join in chasing him then. It would be horrible if Lin Feng ended up dying.

If he entered the temple in front of him he might obtain a great skill, but he might not have the opportunity to go to the sword temple again.

Lin Feng was fixedly staring at that temple with the statue looking both evil and good at the same time. It seemed like the nature of the statue kept changing every second.

Lin Feng, however, had a familiar impression. Wasn't his Heruka strength skill also good and evil?

Maybe that it was a sign that he had to get in.

“Can you come in with me?” asked Lin Feng. Tang You You looked pensive for a few seconds and replied, “The doors might not shut because I don’t have any more seeds to bargain with. But we might as well try.”

Lin Feng nodded. They needed the door of the temple to remain closed, otherwise they wouldn’t be protected.

“Let’s go in.” said Lin Feng. They then immediately entered the temple without another hesitation.

Tang You You entered with him, and as hoped, the door of the temple closed itself. In a flash, some stars disappeared at the top of the mountain, surprising the people that were running up the dunes.

Was there a temple at the top of the dune??

A lot of them began leaving. Lin Feng had eight seeds and would probably obtain a monstrously powerful skill. After coming out, they wouldn’t be the ones to kill him. Instead, he would kill them.

Of course, some people stayed and waited. They consisted of a group of five people. Those people only had one seed between their eyebrows. They had managed to survive only because they had stayed together the whole time. That was a smart strategy, they kept helping each other. If they had decided to kill each other initially they might not have survived the confrontation after.

They decided to wait for those two. One of them had eight starlight seeds and another had four. If their group had managed to kill them and obtain their seeds they wouldn't be scared of anyone else anymore.

Even though the seeds would only belong to one of them, they still wanted to try. Maybe they would be the one to succeed.

At that moment, Lin Feng and Tang You You were in the temple. It was as big as the sword temple. There were no swords in suspension however, only the statue.

That gigantic statue wasn't facing them, they could see it from the side only because it had two faces facing leftwards and rightwards.

One evil and one good side... Looking in two different directions.

"It's a Heruka statue..." whispered Tang You You. She sounded very surprised. How come there was such an ancient statue in there?

Evil was evil, good was good. How had they managed to merge together in antiquity?

Lin Feng was astonished, it was a real Heruka statue.

Did that temple have anything to do with the Heruka skill he had?

Lin Feng looked at the hands of the statue. On its left hand there were three good benevolent statues sitting. On its right hand there were three malevolent statues. On these statues there were also stars, from one star to six stars.

“The benevolent statue only has one to three stars while the malevolent ones have four to six stars... Is good less powerful than evil?” Tang You You looked surprised. That statue was extremely mysterious. Since the benevolent-looking statues had less stars than the malevolent-looking ones, did it mean that the malevolent skills were more powerful than the others?

“It seems like the one who built the temple didn’t respect good as much as evil.” whispered Tang You You. But Lin Feng didn’t hear her, he was staring at the one statue in the middle.

It was half good, half evil and had seven stars on it. That was probably the most powerful one.

“Seven seeds... Are you going to use them all?” asked Tang You You. She sounded excited and curious. Was Lin Feng going to spend all of his seeds to learn the most powerful skill or was he going to spend a few on a several skills?

Was he going to get a kind one, an evil one or the harmonious one?

“Of course, I will get this one.” said Lin Feng while pointing at the one in the very middle. Lin Feng had the strength of the Heruka, of course he would get the most powerful one. He had to get the authentic one, half-evil and half-good.

Perhaps this statue would help him in the future with his strength of the Heruka. Tang You You looked at Lin Feng in a deep and meaningful way and immediately walked towards the statue. She then said, “I know you wanted to go to another temple, but now you can relax. I won’t bother you while you learn the skill.”

“Alright.” said Lin Feng, nodding. He shook his head and his seven starlight seeds connected with those of the half-evil half-good statue. Bridges appeared between his seeds and those of the statue. Swiftly, Lin Feng had the impression that his head was going to explode. Some memories had entered his brain which made him shake and move back a step.

Lin Feng tried to stand steadily but gave up and sat down cross-legged. As expected, a skill which required seven stars was much more powerful than a skill which needed only one... Those memories were extremely brutal.

At that moment, a vast starry sky appeared in Lin Feng’s brain. It was gigantic.

A dazzling golden light started twinkling all around his body. The aura of the Buddhas were shining all around him and illuminating the entire atmosphere of the temple.

On one side in the space there was a magnificent light, and on the other side there was a black evil light which couldn't be pierced by the beautiful and dazzling light.

Those statues seemed like they had come from ancient times, as if good and evil had been fighting since the beginning of time.

It seemed like the mouth of the good statue was moving. Texts written in sanskrit started flowing, they were written in beautiful golden letters and they were moving towards the dark light.

However, the evil statue remained fearless and remained standing there indifferently. An evil energy kept flowing and rolling in the atmosphere. The beautiful golden texts in sanskrit kept colliding with that evil energy and then disappearing as if they had never existed. Even though Lin Feng's eyes were closed, his facial expression kept changing. The images in his brain were incredible, astonishing. His heart kept pounding violently and he couldn't calm down.

Chapter 616: The Beginning of an Era

All around, evil and good were competing. The endless golden light of good was illuminating the evil darkness which was corroding the aura of the Buddha.

They had been there for millions of years and the space around them was being destroyed through the struggle. Evil and good kept colliding, and yet, neither disappeared. Instead, a balance between good and evil started to appear. The black evil lights kept flowing in the air, the golden light couldn't destroy it. In Lin Feng's brain, the balance between good and evil had started to stabilize.

“Heruka's strength rotation skill!” Lin Feng's heart was pounding. That was probably the skill he had thought about!

He had already seen and learnt the skill, but this time, good and evil kept changing and evolving. In the end, good and evil merged together. Maybe that his skill came from the memories of an extremely strong cultivator from an ancient time.

All skills had a strong cultivator at their origin, they were the ones creating them. Extremely strong cultivators could learn skills but also create skills for other people. They then could become Zun cultivators.

Lin Feng was visualizing the skill which kept changing. He was sure that the Heruka's strength skill came from an extremely strong cultivator.

However, while good and evil were fighting, Lin Feng's heart was pounding. He was realizing how monstrously strong some cultivators could be in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Those extremely strong cultivators, who had reached the clouds, had created skills combining good and evil and then transmitted them from generation to generation using this Buddha statue. If such a strong cultivator had still existed, they could annihilate anything.

There was good, evil and what else?

Was there really such a thing as good and evil?

Were those concepts related to a mysterious level of enlightenment?

Lin Feng was asking himself many questions. People in his previous life were atheists but he was realizing that people in the Continent of the Nine Clouds knew all under heaven. Good and evil were at the origin of life. Maybe that after reaching a specific cultivation level, cultivators could be exceptionally enlightened.

At that moment, Lin Feng was surrounded by a light. The strength of the Herukas was rotating around him, the good golden light and the evil black light were rotating together all around him. His muscles, bones and visceral organs were transforming and absorbing that strength.

“What on earth is that skill...?” Tang You You was astonished watching Lin Feng. Those ancient evil and good Qi were terrifying and rotating at full speed around Lin Feng!

What secrets was the Heruka statue hiding?

“If Lin Feng doesn’t die, he will become monstrously strong... He will be a monster like Duan Wu Dao or Di Ling in the future...” thought Tang You You. She hadn’t known Lin Feng for a long time but each time she met him she was surprised. Last time, he had burnt monstrous quantities of liquor, then he had attracted sunlight and now he was practicing a Heruka skill... She was witnessing the rise of a real genius.

The strength of the Heruka kept rotating around him. Lin Feng was visualizing the evolution and changes of the liquids. It seemed like he was witnessing the beginning of a new transnational era.

Lin Feng had absolutely no perception of time anymore. In the evil area, some buzzing sounds were spreading everywhere and piercing through people’s eardrums, the entire area was vibrating!

At the same time outside of the evil area, many people were watching the competition. It seemed like some marks and fissures were appearing throughout the evil area.

People’s faces had quickly changed, they were astonished. What was going on down there??

Several people raised their heads and looked at Xue Wu Chang. By this time in the evil area, fifty or sixty people had already died. For a region like Xue Yu, that was a huge number already. Those fifty or sixty people were all incredible geniuses but they had died.

They were chosen to participate at the Great Competition of Xue Yu and had become stepping stones for the first round...

They had died and their seeds had been taken by their murderers making them even stronger.

Those who had only three seeds were being chased, their lives and seeds would be taken.

Xue Wu Chang looked calm and serene. He was just staring at the evil area. He was looking forward to seeing the evil area turn upside down just as much as he was also looking forward to seeing the second round.

As the evil area was getting destroyed he was wondering which genius was the one who was causing it. He was particularly surprised considering that all the cultivators only had the strength of the first Xuan Qi layer inside.

In order to destroy it like that, the cultivator necessarily had seven seeds and had been able to learn that specific skill...

“Boom boom boom!” Most of the participants stopped moving as the evil area kept trembling. What was happening??

The group of people on the dune were particularly shocked, they could sense the vibrations even more than the others.

“Ka, kacha!!!” It seemed like something was about to explode.

They raised their heads and saw a layer surrounding the atmosphere. There was a pallid light that seemed like it was going to burst out.

“Boom!”

“Boom boom!” Terrifying explosion sounds started emerging in the air. Suddenly, an incredibly powerful Qi started rolling in the atmosphere!

The crowd looked around and realized that they couldn't see stars anymore. They were wondering where they were.

“My cultivation is back!”

“My cultivation is back to normal too!” said some people in the evil area realizing that their Qi was back to normal. They suddenly felt so happy and so comfortable.

“Yeah right, the strongest cultivators now have their cultivation back to normal too! Who can stop them now?” said some of the weakest cultivators. They were suddenly feeling hopeless and terrified. In the evil area, everybody's cultivation level was oppressed so it was better for them. They didn't have to make too many efforts to survive, but now the strongest cultivators would be able to slaughter them...

Just like they had guessed, the restrictions of the evil area had disappeared. Some people rose up in the air and flew slowly into

the sky.

They had immediately started looking for people to chase and kill, they wanted more seeds.

Unfortunately, they couldn't see starlights anymore. Otherwise, it would have been very easy to slaughter the remaining cultivators.

Many of them were terrified when they saw the silhouettes rise up in the air. Some of them even started running away in order to find a place where to hide. Even some of the strong cultivators began to hide. They couldn't let other people know how many seeds they had, otherwise they would be killed.

"You can kill those people, I'm no longer interested." said someone waiting on that dune who was really weak. Then his silhouette flickered and he started leaving.

"Where are you going?" shouted an ice-cold voice. An oppressive Qi surrounded that person and a fist bombarded his head, he died in a flash and his murderer took his seeds.

"Let's go." said someone else. The others were escaping as well, but the enemies looked at them and surprisingly didn't chase them.

Immediately after, they glanced at each other and smiled coldly. They understood what it meant.

Chasing them would have been worthless. They would have only obtained a few seeds. The people who were in the temple had twelve seeds, they were worth the wait.

“Boom!” A rumbling sound spread in the air, the door of the temple slowly opened itself and a young man appeared. He looked sick but clean. He was slowly walking out of the temple.

Chapter 617: Indestructible Golden Body

“They came out!” The crowd was excited and looking at the person exiting the temple.

Tang You You also came out. At that moment she looked calm and serene. She wasn't releasing any Qi, she was only looking at Lin Feng's back.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the three people in front of him, they were all of the seventh Xuan Qi layer.

“Fifth Xuan Qi layer...” When the three people saw that Lin Feng had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer, they looked even greedier. Lin Feng had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer, nothing more. They felt very lucky. Surprisingly, Lin Feng already had eight starlight seeds, they looked forward to stealing them.

“Huh?” At that moment, the three of them were confused. They noticed Tang You You, she wasn't doing anything even though her cultivation level was much higher than Lin Feng's. She had broken through to the very top of the seventh Xuan Qi layer.

Why wasn't Tang You You protecting him? Why was he the one protecting her?

“Four seeds...” Lin Feng calmly glanced at them and counted the enemies' stars out loud, which surprised them. Lin Feng was counting the seeds the opponents had.

Could it be that Lin Feng wanted to steal their seeds?

Lin Feng made a step and slowly started walking towards them. However, Tang You You remained at her initial position and didn't move at all. Everybody smiled coldly when they saw that. Lin Feng was really conceited to think he could rely on a skill he had exchanged against seven seeds and defeat them.

Besides, the enemies outnumbered them, he really wanted to die.

“Those eight seeds are mine.” said one of them whose silhouette flickered, and in just a moment appeared in front of Lin Feng. His eyes were twinkling. He then raised his fist and bombarded the space in Lin Feng's direction.

The two others were looking at him and smiling coldly. They glanced at each other and in a flash, they appeared on both his left and right. At the same time, they threw themselves at Lin Feng. Of course, the first one to kill Lin Feng would be happy to get his seeds.

“Boom!”

The first one was still attacking Lin Feng as his fists crashed onto Lin Feng's body. But he was astonished, he cleared his head and looked at Lin Feng. Lin Feng looked calm and solemn, like a golden Shakyamuni. (Translator's note: the Shakyamuni is a Buddha represented in the form of a golden statue.)

The enemy didn't have the feeling that he had hit a human being but instead an extremely solid statue.

“That's the skill from the temple?” That person was surprised as it was inconceivable. That person's cultivation was higher than Lin Feng's by two cultivation layers. However, when he punched Lin Feng with all his strength it seemed like it had done nothing to Lin Feng at all. It was as if his strength of the seventh Xuan Qi layer had been negligible, that opponent seemed like an ant trying to shake a tree.

Lin Feng's body was clearly as strong as that of a Buddha's warrior attendant, it had the strength of the vajra (translator's note: vajra means diamond in Sanskrit, and Vajryana is a branch of Buddhism, Diamond School of Buddhism).

“Die!” That person looked hideous, he condensed a massive amount of pure Qi in his fist and punched Lin Feng again. In that fist he had concentrated all his pure Qi. It was twinkling all around him and Lin Feng, illuminating the atmosphere.

However, that pure Qi just slid off Lin Feng's body and dispersed itself before vanishing. Lin Feng remained standing his ground.

“What the hell! How's that possible??”

“Seeds!” said Lin Feng calmly and indifferently. He then slowly raised his hand which was surrounded by a golden light.

The enemy's face was alarmed, he raised his hand to block Lin Feng's hand but he just heard a cracking sound. The bones in his arm were completely crushed. He hadn't been able to withstand a single attack and instead emitted a horrible shriek.

Following the onslaught, Lin Feng slapped his head which exploded easily. It took only a breath for that person to die.

"How scary..." thought Tang You You who was still standing behind Lin Feng. She continued staring at him. What kind of skill had Lin Feng learnt to be that strong? He was surrounded by a golden aura and looked just like a Buddha.

The other two that remained were terrified, their hearts were pounding. They had the feeling they were suffocating from their own palpitations.

How terrifying. How come Lin Feng had become so strong in the temple?

Opportunities... Those were the kind of opportunities which cultivators could seize during the competition...

All the extremely strong cultivators had made a mistake. After getting a few seeds they had immediately exchanged them for skills and treasures. Then they continued to kill a few cultivators and again exchange for lower level skills.

Why hadn't anyone done like Lin Feng? First gather seven seeds and then get into a temple to obtain their ultimate treasures.

"It's your turn." said Lin Feng turning to the other two cultivators. He made a step towards one of them and that person's heart started pounding brutally. He didn't look greedy anymore, only terrified.

"Let's go." Those two people didn't want to steal Lin Feng's seeds anymore. They just wanted to escape alive.

"Where?" said Lin Feng indifferently. A hand emerged out of his mouth, it was a gigantic golden hand. That hand was emitting whistling sounds in the air as it enveloped one of their bodies.

"Get lost!" said that person while releasing some pure Qi, he then raised his two hands towards Lin Feng's hands.

"Bzzzzzzz....." It seemed like an ancient bell had been hit. The moment that person's hands collided with the gigantic golden hand, he sensed a strength invading his entire arms. His bones were crushed in the blink of an eye. He couldn't stop that gigantic hand as it continued moving forwards.

"Booom!" That person had no time left to try anything, his body started shaking uncontrollably as blood splashed everywhere. Some more buzzing sounds spread in the air as his body was projected away.

“What the hell is with that physical strength?” thought that person astonished. He was trying to fly away in the air. Lin Feng looked like a Buddha statue still.

“The strength of the Buddha, Indestructible Golden Body.” said a calm voice which resonated in his ears. Then another hand came attacking and grabbed his entire body. He was being shaken violently and was terrified.

“Bzzzz.....” Some words in Sanskrit then spread in the air. That gigantic golden hand threw him away again. He crashed into the ground and sat there seemingly calm, he wasn’t breathing anymore.

On Lin Feng’s head, more precisely between his two eyebrows, two more seeds appeared.

“Indestructible Golden Body.” whispered the other one. Lin Feng looked calm and serene from beginning to end. It seemed like he wasn’t worried at all, he had just managed to kill two cultivators of the seventh Xuan Qi layer.

Only one was left!

“Let me off, I beg you.” begged the remaining cultivator. “If you do I will be your slave!”

“You wanted to steal my seeds, should I let you off?” asked Lin Feng looking as calm as before, but also a bit cold.

That person started moaning with grief, he understood that Lin Feng wouldn't let him off. He was hopeless.

“I want to know, what skill did you get in the temple? Is it a Di level skill of high quality or a Tian level skill? How come you've become so strong?” “I didn't get any skill inside, I just obtained some memories from the antiquity.” explained Lin Feng but his opponent couldn't understand what he meant. Lin Feng jumped forwards and his Buddha hands riddled that person who died in the blink of an eye. Three cultivators of the seventh Xuan Qi layer had died!

Chapter 618: Killing Down The Hill

What Lin Feng had obtained in the temple actually was a set of memories, good and evil ones from an ancient time!

If Lin Feng hadn't learned how to use the strength of the Heruka in the past, even with his power of understanding, he would have needed much longer to understand these memories! However, he had been able to learn from them swiftly and had even destroyed the restrictions of the evil area. People had retrieved their original cultivation levels. After observing the memories he had made the strength of the Heruka rotate in his body and could now have it rotate six thousand times. This meant that his corporeal body had the strength of the sixth Xuan Qi layer.

It also meant that Lin Feng could just stand there without doing anything to protect himself. If an ordinary cultivator of the sixth Xuan Qi layer hit him, then nothing would happen to Lin Feng. He wouldn't even budge more than a single millimeter.

The strength of the Heruka coupled with the memories he had acquired in the temple, Lin Feng's entire body had transformed into a Buddha. With his indestructible golden body, he could easily defeat opponents of the seventh Xuan Qi layer.

Studying those memories had given Lin Feng an enormous advantage.

Lin Feng already had twelve seeds between his eyebrows and could already use four of them to learn a new skill.

“Let’s go,” said Lin Feng to Tang You You. Lin Feng jumped up into the air and started flying at full speed without trying to hide.

He had already realized that the exterior had changed, everyone’s cultivation levels had gone back to normal. Because no one could be found by their stars anymore, hunting other participants was very difficult.

Lin Feng needed more seeds to go back to the first temple where he had been craving the ultimate sword skill.

The sword temple had some incredible sword skills. Lin Feng had guessed that all the temples contained different skills.

Tang You You was closely following him at full speed. Several people noticed Lin Feng’s many seeds, they wanted to steal them from him!

When the crowd saw those seeds between Lin Feng’s eyebrows and that he had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer, they were in disbelief... If they managed to kill him they would obtain twelve seeds, how wonderful would that be! Twelve seeds would enable them to obtain the very best skill in one temple and a very decent skill in a second temple.

Lin Feng was already going to the second temple.

“Where are you going?” said a cold voice as Lin Feng was passing.

A sword light twinkled and then suddenly moved towards Lin Feng.

“Get lost!!”

Lin Feng opened his mouth and a terrifying energy emerged out of it. Some golden words in Sanskrit started flowing out of his mouth.

“Boom!” When the Sanskrit words collided with the sword, the sword was surrounded by a golden light. Then Lin Feng jumped forwards and raised his fist. Another seed soon after appeared between his eyebrows. Lin Feng still needed two more seeds, he wanted to spend seven seeds in the sword temple to get the best skill.

“I need two more.” Lin Feng jumped and rose up into the air again. His body was surrounded by a golden aura which drew many people’s attention.

Thirteen seeds! The crowd was astonished, what a huge number!

Some of them decided that they definitely had to kill Lin Feng.

At the same time, Lin Feng glanced at the crowd too. He was looking down at them. He had to get more seeds from them..

“How audacious.”

“Who’s that? How arrogant?” thought the crowd while looking at Lin Feng. He was just running in the sky and not even trying to hide. Everybody could see him and he was looking back at them, how arrogant! Only the eight most outstanding geniuses could do such things!

Lin Feng glanced at the crowd and finally saw someone. That person was from Tian Feng, he could get his revenge.

“Two seeds, perfect, that’s exactly what I need.” Lin Feng jumped towards that person without hesitation. He was acting without wasting time.

That person from Tian Feng watched as Lin Feng landed in front of him and narrowed his eyes. Lin Feng’s cultivation level wasn’t that high, so how come he had managed to obtain so many seeds?? Between his eyebrows, there were so many dazzling starlight seeds.

“You won’t go to the Nirvana, instead you will go to Hell And then.....” said that person slowly and mockingly. Lin Feng’s seeds had to end up between his eyebrows!

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng. That person wasn’t even done talking when Lin Feng interrupted him. In a flash, a gigantic golden hand appeared and flew in his direction. The atmosphere became extremely oppressive.

“What a terrifying magical power.” thought that person whose face turned deathly pale. How could Lin Feng be so strong...? It

was just a moment but he was already attacking at full speed.

He raised his hand and condensed some pure Qi. However, the golden hand that appeared in front of it was overwhelming, comparing the two's strengths seemed particularly ridiculous.

“Boom boom boom....!!!!” The hand crashed onto the enemy's body and his bones broke into pieces. He immediately issued a horrible shriek and blood started gushing all around.

“Die,” said Lin Feng again. In a flash, he hit him again and that person had died. He now had fifteen starlight seeds which meant he finally had seven seeds to get the skill he wanted.

“Lin Feng, we can't stay here too long. We must hurry,” said Tang You You whose face was changing drastically. Lin Feng had been too aggressive, wild and careless a moment before. He had flown through the air and everybody had seen him. Now, people were trying to encircle him all around, they were trying to find where he went. He had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer, he was so weak in comparison with them!

“I see that you've been well since we parted!” said a cold voice at that moment. A silhouette ran towards them from the horizon. Yu Mo laughed mockingly when he saw Lin Feng.

“Boom!” That person was precisely Yu Mo. His fist was aiming at Lin Feng and he was flying at full speed. How aggressive. Lin Feng's pupils looked colder and colder.

Yu Mo had retrieved his cultivation level so he feared nobody. Lin Feng and Tang You You were definitely going to die if they tried to fight against him, especially Lin Feng! Lin Feng had put his sword against his throat before, what a bastard! Now, he had to die in this evil area!

Chapter 619: Heruka Body Transformation

When Lin Feng and Tang You You saw Yu Mo, they stopped and calmly stood analyzing the situation.

At the same time Yu Mo's arrival, others were rushing over still. But when they saw Yu Mo they all stopped and stayed far away from him. They didn't dare get too close. Maybe Yu Mo would go crazy and kill them too. They would lose their seeds!

Mysteriously, they didn't know how strong he was. They did know he was one of the most outstanding young cultivators of the four empires of Xue Yu and he had a strange eight trigrams eyes spirit...

"You all want to take advantage of the weak I see!" said Lin Feng while glancing around. They didn't dare get close, they were all glaring at him like a tiger watching his prey. Lin Feng had fifteen seeds... Acquiring fifteen stars, having only to kill one person would be an amazing opportunity... With fifteen seeds, they would be able to go a temple and obtain some incredible treasures, how could they control their greed?

"Get lost, all of you." said Lin Feng calmly. Those people were first alarmed and then smiled coldly. Lin Feng was quite audacious and arrogant. He surprisingly dared them to get lost... If Yu Mo hadn't been there they would have taught Lin Feng a good lesson already!

Nobody moved. They despised Lin Feng. Yu Mo didn't hurry to

attack either. So many people were around so he was trying to think about a way to obtain as many seeds as possible in this situation. There were Lin Feng's seeds but also those of all the others around. If he managed to obtain all those seeds, he would be able to learn the best skills of three or four temples... How tempting! Nobody would ever be able to stop him after that.

Greed, he was greedy because he wanted to become stronger. And he was becoming greedier and greedier each second. He wouldn't only take Lin Feng's seeds but those of everyone else as well.

When he saw that the crowd wasn't moving any, Lin Feng's eyes twinkled with cold lights. He then whispered something, some mysterious mantra in Sanskrit and some golden texts written in Sanskrit were coming out of his mouth and floating in the air. More and more prayers continued to appear like that in the air.

A golden light was revolving around Lin Feng's body, it seemed like many shadow hands were appearing.

"One Thousand Buddha Hands, die!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. The infinity of small Sanskrit letters in the air turned into golden hands and moved in all directions! They were so fast that people didn't have time to react!

"Boom boom boom!"

A thousand Buddha hands killed some people instantly, the weakest cultivators couldn't stop the attack and their blood had splashed everywhere. The strongest ones managed to stop the

attack but had the feeling that the bones in their arms were broken. That thousand Buddha hands attack was monstrously powerful and contained terrifying physical strength. Not to mention it was as fast as lightning.

“You You, help me!” shouted Lin Feng. Tang You You reacted immediately.

“One thousand dream shadows!” shouted Tang You You and a thousand clones appeared in the air.

“Boom!”

“Boom!”

All her clones kept attacking and so many people collapsed, they were dead.

“Back back!! Quickly!” Many people were trying to escape at that moment but those who had just been attacked by Lin Feng couldn’t move back. And Tang You You’s clones were extremely fast, they moved around like hurricanes and surrounded the remainders. When Tang You You moved back to her initial position, five or six people had already collapsed and she had ten seeds between her eyebrows.

Lin Feng had shouted her name and asked for help but Tang You You perfectly understood that Lin Feng had just been nice. He had given her those people! He had just injured them with his golden

Buddha hands and purposely left them alive.

Lin Feng glanced at Tang You You and then at the remaining enemies coldly which made their hearts start palpitating. They had underestimated Lin Feng.

Those thousand Buddha hands contained a physical strength of the seventh Xuan Qi layer, how terrifying! With that speed and that strength they didn't have the time to react.

"That's what he obtained in the temple..." The crowd was astonished. They were greedy and had neglected the fact that Lin Feng could have obtained an incredible skill in the temple.

"Temple..." Yu Mo's eyes were twinkling. The stronger Lin Feng was, the more excited Yu Mo was. So that was the real power of the skills he could find in the temples...

"Fifteen plus ten, that's twenty-five..." said Yu Mo while counting Lin Feng and Tang You You's skills. Then a magnificent smile appeared on his face. He had the impression that he already possessed those twenty-five seeds.

"They're all mine!" exclaimed Yu Mo, while releasing some terrifying, whistling, pure Qi. His hair and clothes were chaotically fluttering in the wind.

He jumped forwards and disappeared from his initial position. But Lin Feng's eyes were filled with sharp lights, Yu Mo appeared

in front of him in a flash.

“Wind!” Lin Feng then moved like the wind and disappeared from his original position.

At the same time, golden lights were twinkling all around his body.

“Do you think you can escape?” mocked Yu Mo coldly. His pupils slowly turned white and gray and had the form of the eight divinatory trigrams.

Lin Feng had the impression that the atmosphere was distorted, he was caught off guard. He had the impression that he was walking in a swamp, he had fallen to a hallucination.

“Come back!” shouted Yu Mo while raising his hands. Waves of pure Qi rolled in the atmosphere and surrounded Lin Feng, slowing him down drastically.

That was a skill that Yu Mo had obtained from a temple which coupled with his two trigram eyes. They complemented each other very well.

“Die!” In a flash, Yu Mo appeared in front of Lin Feng and his two hands tore through the space between them. His hands hadn’t reached Lin Feng yet but he could already sense that Yu Mo’s pure Qi could break his bones and tear his flesh apart.

“Indestructible golden body!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. Some words written in Sanskrit emerged out of his mouth, and he raised his hand. Then a gigantic Buddha hand moved towards Yu Mo.

“Boom!” Both attacks collided and the golden Buddha hand was destroyed, it then turned into countless small golden stars. Yu Mo’s hands were not hindered, they were still moving towards Lin Feng.

“Die!” However, at the same time, an ice-cold voice pierced through Yu Mo’s ears. A hand filled with deadly energies was moving towards his back. It was Tang You You!

“Get lost!” shouted Yu Mo furiously. A distortion immediately appeared in the space behind him and eight trigrams appeared. Tang You You was blocked.

“Boom!” Yu Mo’s hands and Lin Feng’s body collided as some crackling sounds spread in the air again. His golden body was breaking apart.

“Destroy!” Lin Feng’s body was projected backwards. A terrifying and painful, scorching hot energy had spread in through Yu Mo’s hands at the moment he had hit Lin Feng.

Yu Mo frowned and condensed some pure Qi but the fire was particularly hot. He wasn’t able to make it go away immediately.

“Boom!” A terrifying Qi emerged out of Yu Mo’s body and

surrounded the flames. Then he turned around and his fist rocketed towards Tang You You's body, which projected her flying backwards.

Lin Feng was standing in the air and blood was flowing out of his mouth. He was fixedly staring at Yu Mo. Yu Mo had already broken through to the very top of the eighth Xuan Qi layer. He was monstrously strong, as expected from one of the eight most outstanding young disciples of Xue Yu.

Even though Lin Feng's strength of the Heruka could rotate six thousand times, and even though he had an indestructible golden body, he still couldn't rival with Yu Mo.

"Heruka's strength, Heruka body transformation!" said Lin Feng looking calm and solemn. The strength of the Heruka started rotating in his body at full speed, it kept changing and evolving. Lin Feng's body was sometimes golden, sometimes pitch-black. Sometimes he looked benevolent, other times malevolent. He seemed to be both good and evil.

Heruka Body Transformation! Will Lin Feng survive or will Yu Mo obtain the seeds of power and conquer the world? Find out next time on P..M..G..!...

Chapter 620: Get Back Into The Temple!

Good and evil had been fighting and fluctuating unceasingly in those memories from the Heruka statue at the temple.

There were many things in the memories to understand for those with a great power of comprehension. There were monstrous advantages for those who rediscovered them! It wasn't a specific skill or technique because skills and techniques had a maximum limit in terms of power. But those memories, the stronger a cultivator was the stronger that magical power was!

Lin Feng had extremely high natural abilities and had an incredible power of understanding. His spirit aided him in understanding things even more.

The strength of the Heruka kept flowing through his entire body. Sometimes he looked like a Shakyamuni, while other times like a demon. At that moment, Lin Feng was half-good and half-evil.

“Very good.” said Yu Mo looking excited. He then disappeared from his original position again looking particularly bestial. His eight trigrams eyes were spinning.

Lin Feng then entered into a distorted part of the atmosphere again.

“Break!” shouted a voice and then some rumbling sounds spread in the air. Lin Feng's body turned into a Heruka that seemed it was as solid as a mountain. The distorted atmosphere couldn't affect

him anymore.

He chanted some mantras quietly in Sanskrit. Immediately after, a thousand Buddha hands appeared and moved towards Yu Mo.

“Gigantic and simple, eight trigrams blood formation!” shouted Yu Mo coldly. The Qi of his spirit started invading the atmosphere and in his back appeared a gigantic ashen-white eight trigrams spirit. It looked just like his eyes.

“Die!” shouted Yu Mo. He then stretched out and his eye spirits floated into the air. In just a breath it had enveloped Lin Feng’s body. Even though he had a Heruka body, he couldn’t move.

The eight trigrams kept spinning around Lin Feng’s body. The golden and black lights around his body were weakening.

“How scary...” Lin Feng was speechless. That eight trigrams blood formation was terrifying. Even though there was no blood yet, Lin Feng could understand why it was called that!

Lin Feng had a Heruka body and still couldn’t move. If he had an ordinary body he would have already died! His bones and flesh would have been wrecked in the eight trigrams.

Lin Feng moved his hands and several Heruka fists attacked the eight trigrams blood formation. The formation shook but it wasn’t enough to break it. It continued to imprison him.

Tang You You's facial expression went rigid when she saw Lin Feng in danger. She jumped and started pummeling towards Yu Mo with her fists filled with deadly energy, but Yu Mo was stronger than her by one cultivation layer. He wasn't scared of her at all.

His ashy-white eight trigrams eyes kept revolving, and then Tang You You was imprisoned.

Tang You You suddenly looked solemn, as if she had no other choice... Some spirit Qi appeared around her and from her back appeared a myriad of illusions.

"One thousand shadows!" she said with a melodious voice. In a flash, a myriad of clones appeared. They weren't fake though, these were all her real body. The sky was covered by her. Those clones were all filled with incredible physical strength. Her original body was in the middle of the developing chaos.

"Destroy!" said Tang You You and immediately a thousand fists moved towards Yu Mo at full speed. It seemed like she wanted to bury him under all those hands.

If those hands bombarded his body, no matter how strong he was, Yu Mo would die.

Yu Mo's expression changed dramatically. Tang You You was also extremely strong... All those hands were real and filled with deadly energy, there were no illusions.

“Eight trigrams!” shouted Yu Mo furiously. In a flash, eight trigrams appeared on his body, his spirit seemed like it was going to explode. His body transformed into a vortex filled with eight trigrams. Suddenly, Tang You You’s original body disappeared in the vortex.

The other clones weren’t influenced by Tang You You when she disappeared. They were still encircling Yu Mo. It was at this time that Lin Feng shouted, “Let’s go!”

It’s important to remember that those clones were all real, none were fake.

Without hesitation, Lin Feng took this opportunity to bombard the eight trigrams vortex with physical strength. And this time he managed to break the formation! Lin Feng moved like the wind off into the distance at the speed of sound.

He had managed to maintain the body of the Heruka through that endeavor.

“Annihilate!” shouted Yu Mo furiously when he heard that Lin Feng wanted to escape. He was furious. His eight trigrams vortex started spinning again and kept swallowing Tang You You’s clones, but those clones didn’t give up and kept encircling him. They didn’t let him have a moment to chase down Lin Feng.

“Tang You You, it’s alright. Protect yourself now!” shouted Lin Feng who disappeared into the distance. Then, one of Tang You You’s bodies started moving at full speed away from Yu Mo. She

already possessed ten seeds so she could get some amazing rewards from a temple.

A hurricane was emitting whistling sounds from behind. Lin Feng felt frustrated. His cultivation level was too low! When would he be as strong as the cultivator to whom the memories of the Heruka belonged! When would he be able to turn into an authentic annihilating machine, or into an authentic Heruka? If that ever happened he would crush people like Yu Mo as if he were an insect. With the body of the Shakyamuni or of the Heruka, he would actually become indestructible. Nobody in the world would stop him.

“Fifteen seeds...” On the path, someone saw Lin Feng’s seeds and rose up in the air. Lin Feng had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer, he would be extremely easy to defeat. (editor’s note: They’re all Sheeples, I swear).

Lin Feng was furious when he saw that someone was attacking him again.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng while raising both his hands. One was golden like the hands of the Shakyamuni and the other was black like that of the Heruka.

Good and evil were bombarding the atmosphere together, some rumbling sounds spread in the air. That person was not prepared for Lin Feng’s attack.

“Boom!” Immediately after a buzzing sound spread in the air, as

if it had been a death bell. The enemy was punched by those fists and a new seed appeared between Lin Feng's eyebrows.

Those who were watching from the distance were astonished when they saw Lin Feng. They decided not to get any closer to him and challenge him again. They were all stunned by fear.

Lin Feng had attacked with his two fists and had exterminated a cultivator of the seventh Xuan Qi layer. Almost unphased, he was still moving at full speed and emitting whistling sounds. It was a short time after when he finally found the sword temple.

"There's nobody inside, great." thought Lin Feng, as he rushed over to the temple. The worst scenario would have been like the first time when he wanted to get in but the door had been closed. Lin Feng would have come for nothing. If he were to remain outside waiting for the temple, others might challenge him and manage to defeat him.

Sixty or seventy people had already died so far during the first round.

The first round would end any time now. He had to hurry if he wanted to reap his rewards!

Silhouettes were approaching not far from the temple. They were glancing left and right for someone.

"Stop!" shouted a voice furiously, which made them shiver.

Immediately after, Lin Feng entered the temple and disappeared from their field of vision.

“Bzzz.....” buzzing sounds spread in the air as the doors closed themselves. The small group was astonished, they had been tricked to stop.

One shout had been enough to make them stop... And now they had to find another temple! They gnashed their teeth and left, leaving Lin Feng to the temple.

Chapter 621: The End of the First Round

Lin Feng didn't stop when he entered the temple. He immediately went to the seventh sword and bridges appeared between seven of his seeds and the seven seeds of the sword. With a flash, the mysteries of that sword started leaking into his head.

“Bzzz bzzzzz....” that sword was emitting buzzing sounds, an incredible Qi was moving in a swift and fierce way all around. Lin Feng's clothes and hair were fluttering violently like a flag in a strong wind.

“Boom boom!” Lin Feng felt assaulted, he had the feeling that his brain was shaking violently. In his head appeared a vast and wild place that was seemingly endless.

But then a sword descended from the highest of heavens. That sword contained a monstrous sword Qi which was extremely oppressive.

Lin Feng fixated on the sword and had the feeling that his entire body was trembling.

“Boom!” Lin Feng's brain started shaking again. That sword landed on the ground and slightly penetrated into it. A vortex of sword Qi appeared and it seemed like everything else started dwindling in the foreground.

The universe, the earth, and the ground seemed like they had disappeared. There was only one thing in the world, that sword.

Just like in the Heruka temple, Lin Feng wasn't obtaining a skill or a technique. He was obtaining a memory and in that memory there was only a vast and wild area.

At this moment, outside the temple, the evil area started shaking again.

Xue Wu Chang remained in the air as the crowd was still standing at in the same place. They were all watching as the scene changed again.

Finally, it was shaking again. Was this the end?

Last time that evil area had shaken there had been a great deal of changes. And then they were cut off from seeing what was happening.

This time, everybody wanted to know what the results were. It was assumed that many people had died already and just as many had seized great opportunities.

They were all extremely curious but they had no choice but to wait. Perhaps, even Xue Wu Chang didn't know what was happening.

Sharp lights were twinkling in Xue Wu Chang's eyes. He was fixated on the events in the evil area while talking to himself.

“The third temple opened... So the first round is finally over... I wonder who opened them...” thought Xue Wu Chang. Actually, going into the temples didn’t count in itself. They couldn’t be considered as opened when people had just taken the first skills. They were considered as opened only after seven seeds had been exchanged for the greatest prize. Each time seven were used the area would shake.

“Bzzzzz.....” A gigantic amount of Qi started flowing in the atmosphere. The crowd only saw an enormous cloud of dust, it looked like the judgement day on the planet. Everybody was astonished, their eyes were wide open. They could only watch what was happening.

The hurricane then dispersed and to everyone’s disbelief, a flat area appeared. Some of the people were battling, others were practicing cultivation, but the ground was littered with corpses. The mysterious and mystical evil area had disappeared with the hurricane! Nothing was left.

“How intriguing and enigmatic!” thought the crowd while shivering. They calmed down again and looked at those who were still alive.

So many people had died during the first round and they were lying on the yellow ground... Now, there were maybe sixty or seventy people who were still alive. So about half of the initial candidates had died.

How terrifying! So many incredible geniuses had been killed! All those geniuses that had died had, in the past, been dazzling

cultivators respected by everybody. They had come excited, impatient, happy. They had hoped to become dazzling cultivators in the region or even the continent. But in the end, they had died and their bodies were already being devoured by worms. They had died away from home and hadn't said any farewells to their relatives.

“Alright, the first round of the Great Competition of Xue Yu is over! Everybody can stop fighting.” said Xue Wu Chang. His voice rolled everywhere in the air so that everybody could hear him.

Fighters immediately moved away from each other and stopped fighting. Back in the evil area, the temples had disappeared. The seeds cultivators had between their eyebrows also vanished. Fighting was now meaningless.

Everyone looked left and right and saw that a certain number of participants were still alive. People at the top of the mountains were being particularly attentive. They were looking for the favorites they had come to see. Notably, those people who were members of wealthy and noble families and sects...

Many of their faces became rigid as they couldn't find their disciples... They must have died.

They were feeling like Yu Liu Shui who had had seen everything when his disciples. They were also his real sons Yu Jian and Yu Qin, both killed by Lin Feng. Yu Liu Shui was looking for Lin Feng at this time to see if he was still alive.

Quickly, he found Lin Feng sitting cross-legged with his eyes closed. He looked calm and serene as he was cultivating.

Yu Liu Shui was staring at Lin Feng coldly.

But Han Man, Xiao Ya and Po Jun were smiling in a magnificent way. Lin Feng was safe!

“Yu Liu Shui, since you lost your two disciples, you have nothing to do here anymore. You should back to Xue Yue. Hahaha!” laughed Yue Qing Shan mockingly. Yue Tian Ming was safe and sound.

Yue Tian Ming was still alive, just like Wu Qing. The people of the Wan Shou Sect were laughing too. Finally, the dangers of the first round were over.

“Wu Qing is extremely strong, he will definitely finish amongst the best ones in the final rankings.” said someone next to Teng Wu Yao, which made him even more proud.

“Wu Qing deserved to be called the most dazzling disciple of our Sect, I feel honored.”

For the Wan shou Sect, seeing Wu Qing down there was an incredible honor. Even though the Wan Shou Sect had the reputation to be extremely strong in Xue Yue, they were absolutely unknown abroad. They were not that strong compared with others from different countries.

“Indeed. Back then Lin Feng resisted us and now he must be dead somewhere. What a pity! Wu Qing could have killed him himself!”

Yu Qing Shan looked strange when he heard Lin Feng’s name. His grandson... Such a genius... Was he really dead?

This time, from the hundred and forty-four initial participants, only sixty-nine were left. Seventy-five had died. More than half had died...

From all of the four empires of Xue Yu, there wasn’t one who had lost more participants than the others. They had all lost about a dozen to twenty disciples.

The strongest geniuses, including the eight most dazzling cultivators of Xue Yu, were safe and sound.

Yu Mo looked cold. He was glancing around and very quickly found Lin Feng. He was just sitting cross-legged and meditating. He looked so calm and serene.

Yu Mo was even more upset because he felt Lin Feng had obtained another treasure and was practicing it at this moment.

However, Yu Mo, one of the eight most dazzling geniuses of the competition hadn’t obtained that much.

“I hope that I find you during the second round...” thought Yu Mo, glaring at Lin Feng. If Lin Feng fought against him during the second round, he would have no hope. Same goes for Tang You You. That girl had surprisingly dared attack him! Even though she was beautiful, he really wanted to kill her!

At that moment, a silhouette was slowly walking towards Lin Feng.

That person was staring at Lin Feng darkly, his face was filled with murder. That person was from Dragon Mountain and had lots of influence, Di Long.

Back in the evil area he had really wanted to kill Lin Feng, but when he saw that Lin Feng had become too strong he had to give up. Give up then and wait for his opportunity later.

When Di Long thought about it, he suddenly moved and threw himself at Lin Feng. His body was surrounded by deadly energy, he wanted to take advantage of the situation and kill Lin Feng! And then Lin Feng died.. The end.. Yay! Fine fine, maybe he comes back in the next chapter... but only if you leave me nice comments!
*MOEW

Chapter 622: Regrets!

Di Long was like a spear trying to impale Lin Feng, his pure Qi was whistling all around as shot forward.

“Oh no, it doesn’t look good!” Han Man, Po Jun and Xiao Ya all thought when they saw that Di Long was attacking him by surprise. What a bastard!

Xue Wu Chang frowned, he had already told everybody that he wouldn’t tolerate such things anymore. Yet, Di Long still dared attack in such a sly way, how audacious!

“STOP!!!!!!” shouted Di Long furiously and a terribly oppressive energy spread in the air, but he was too far away from Di Long. The energy which flowed out of his mouth didn’t reach Di Long.

Di Long looked hideous as he attacked, but he didn’t care because he was going to kill Lin Feng.

Yu Mo looked amused and smiled when he saw that. Di Long was a funny guy and quite audacious, he surprisingly dared attack Lin Feng.

Many people were watching the scene.

“Boom!!” His fist suddenly crashed onto Lin Feng’s body, strong winds spread all around as Lin Feng’s clothes were ripped apart. Lin Feng groaned and slightly shook.

“Huh?” Di Long frowned, what was going on? He had just punched Lin Feng but he had the feeling he had just punched an iron statue, a metallic sound was resonating. His fist had done nothing to Lin Feng.

Everybody was astonished. Di Long’s punch had been incredibly violent but it seemed like Lin Feng had felt nothing. He didn’t appear to be hurt at all.

Lin Feng, sitting cross-legged, abruptly opened his eyes. Sword energy was twinkling in his fists and sharp lights were flashing in his eyes. He abruptly turned around and stared down Di Long. Lin Feng’s sword energy suddenly oppressed Di Long, he had the feeling his body was going to be cut apart. Di Long’s face then changed drastically.

What was going? How come Lin Feng had such a monstrous sword energy?

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng furiously and a monstrous sword energy rolled in the air towards Di Long. He looked terrified as Lin Feng released some monstrous pure Qi which formed into an extremely sharp sword.

“Crrrr.... Crrrr.....” His sword energy penetrated into Di Long’s body making him shake violently. His muscles, including his facial muscles, were unceasingly twitching.

How come Lin Feng had become so strong?

“Boom!” All of Lin Feng’s sword energy penetrated into Di Long’s body. Di Long’s body was entirely lacerated.

The crowd was astonished. How was that possible? Di Long had attacked Lin Feng by surprise who was only of the fifth Xuan Qi layer. But instead of perishing, Lin Feng had ended his life!

“It’s because of the temple. It has to be.” Many people were astonished. Lin Feng had become so strong in the temple.

“Po Jun, Lin Feng has become so strong.” said Han Man. He looked delighted and glanced at Po Jun. Po Jun nodded, indeed Lin Feng had become so much stronger than before and only in such a short time!

But in the distance, Yu Liu Shui lost his excitement. He had seen Lin Feng kill his two sons and hoped that Lin Feng would die there. Seeing how strong Lin Feng had become instead made him furious.

“Sixty-eight people...” Di Long had just died so there were sixty-eight people left.

“Alright. The first round of the Great Competition of Xue Yu is over. The second round will consist of several battles. Those who are ranked amongst the first ones will fight against the last ones and vice-versa. You have to think carefully about your strategy.... I’m also giving you one day to rest. See you tomorrow at the Flood Dragon Cave!” said Xue Wu Chang to the crowd, and then immediately left.

“Boom!” a silhouette rose up in the air whose Qi was monstrously strong. It was Di Long the possessor of the Firmament Blood. He landed atop of a mountain as if nobody else had existed around him.

Yu Mo looked at Lin Feng coldly and said, “You better hope not to run into me during the second round.”

He then rose up in the air and released a terrifying, deadly energy.

Lin Feng looked at him in an ice-cold way... Yu Mo was, indeed, a terrifying opponent and was a real threat for Lin Feng.

It seemed like he had no time to lose during the day before the second round. He had to understand the Heruka memories as well as the sword memories even more.

Two silhouettes moved towards Lin Feng. Tang You You looked as cold and elegant as before but something rare happened, she smiled at Lin Feng and said, “Did you get it?”

“I did!” said Lin Feng while nodding. He then looked at her and asked, “What about you?”

“Same.” said Tang You You while smiling resplendently. They had both obtained memories from the temples.

“It seems like you two obtained some amazing treasures...” said Jun Mo Xi with a magnificent smile beaming at them. Tang You You and Lin Feng seemed like they had gotten real close to each other during that first round.

Lin Feng and Tang You You smiled. Then Lin Feng asked Jun Mo Xi, “What about you? Did you get anything?”

“Well I obtained eight seeds but unfortunately I didn’t use them all... So I obtained various, relatively good things.” said Jun Mo Xi while shaking his head. It seemed like he regretted that he hadn’t obtained anything great but that was expected. Almost everybody was the same as him. Lin Feng had taken huge risks to obtain seven seeds and receive great treasures. If Tang You You hadn’t helped him, he would have surely died.

“Alright. It seems like people from Dragon Mountain will be lucky this time!” said Jun Mo Xi smiling. Immediately after, he rose up in the air and disappeared.

“See you tomorrow!!!” said Lin Feng and Tang You You. They then both rose up in the air as well and moved away into the distance.

Lin Feng landed on a mountain.

In the distance, he could see Xiao Ya and two silhouettes. He was surprised but smiled, he was so happy!

Those people wearing bronze masks looked strong with their robust Qi. Lin Feng recognized his friends.

“How come you’re here?” asked Lin Feng. They both looked delighted. As expected, it really was Lin Feng!

“We knew that you were going to participate at the Great Competition of Xue Yu so we rushed over here to see you!” explained Han Man, jumping towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng stretched his fist and punched Han Man on the chest, “You’ve broken through to the second Xuan Qi layer, not bad!”

“Haha!” Han Man smiled and said, “I’m still much weaker than you!”

Lin Feng shook his head and looked at Yu Liu Shui who was watching him coldly.

Lin Feng didn’t feel at ease with Yu Liu Shui on the mountain next to him, releasing some evil Qi.

“Lin Feng, that bastard wanted to attack Xiao Ya and us when you were down there.” said Han Man, staring at Yu Liu Shui.

“Did you see what happened inside?” asked Lin Feng.

Han Man nodded and said, “At the beginning we could but

something strange happened and then we couldn't."

Lin Feng just realized that he had been careless when he heard what Han Man said. He had killed Yu Qin and Yu Jian and had left Xiao Ya outside alone. So, it was no surprise that Yu Liu Shui had wanted to kill him.

"Are you looking for trouble??" asked Yu Liu Shui, jumping forwards. He was glaring at Han Man and the others. He had clearly heard Han Man call him a bastard!

"Asshole, remember me? I will kill you with my own hands!" said Lin Feng looking evil. Lin Feng was calling him an asshole?!

"Just wait and see." said Lin Feng not caring about Yu Liu Shui's surprised look. The head of the Yu Clan was an ordinary cultivator of the eighth Xuan Qi layer, nothing more. Lin Feng just needed to understand the memories a little bit more and he might break through to the next Xuan Qi layer. Then he would be able to crush him without any difficulty.

Lin Feng might have to wait until the end of the Great Competition of Xue Yu to kill Yu Liu Shui. Then he would go back to Xue Yue and exterminate the Yu Clan and the Wan Shou Sect!

Chapter 623: The Sword Qi in the Cave

Everyone was leaving the mountain chain to another place in Mi Cheng, called the Flood Dragon Cave.

However, some cultivators stayed to practice their cultivation.

Lin Feng was one of those staying behind. After having spent some time with Han Man and Po Jun, he had then handed Xiao Ya over to them. They could take care of her. Lin Feng didn't want other people to see him spend too much time with Xiao Ya. During the Great Competition of Xue Yu he was going to kill even more cultivators and that would offend their friends and families, who would then want to take their revenge. That would endanger Xiao Ya, just like before with Yu Liu Shui.

If they weren't strong enough to challenge Lin Feng they would go to Xiao Ya to exact their revenge.

In the middle of the night, an eerie silence invaded the mountain chain. In a cave, Lin Feng was sitting cross-legged with his eyes tightly closed. There was pallid light all around him, it was a sharp sword energy.

Lin Feng was visualizing a vast area where the ground was made of loess and there was that sword. There was that sword and only that sword in the world.

It looked like a simple, pure and unadulterated sword.

Lin Feng didn't look at anything else but that sword. He then penetrated into it, his body completely fused with that sword.

It was nothing like the battle between good and evil when he was visualizing the Heruka statue in the temple! There were no incredible magical powers and incantations, there was only a very simple arid area and a sword. This memory was completely different from those of the Heruka.

The Heruka's memories were constantly changing and were closely related to the impermanence of life. So Lin Feng challenged himself to understand the impermanence of life, the constant evolution of life... Without that mindset it would be difficult for him to understand the essence and nature of the Heruka.

But that sword looked calm and serene, absolutely immobile. Lin Feng understood that the sword was selfish and egocentric, it didn't want anything else in its world so that its user could only pay attention to it. That sword embodied and personified the origin of the universe.

Lin Feng was still sitting cross-legged in the cave as sword energy penetrated and threatened his body. That thread of sword energy followed the sword Lin Feng was visualizing. That sword then slowly became stronger. It didn't release any monstrous Qi that dashed to the skies. Small threads of Qi were just moving step by step to it and making it stronger.

After what seemed to be a long time, Lin Feng's sword energy

started swallowing some lights which illuminated the cave all around. It seemed like there was a myriad of dazzling swords all around him.

“Crrrrr... Crrrrr...” Lin Feng’s sword energy kept emitting whistling sounds that pierced into his ears. His sword was becoming stronger and stronger, the lights were extending all the way to the walls of the cave. It was extremely dazzling to behold. Some fissures were appearing on the walls of the cave where many small holes were being created. The sword Qi was creating those fissures... Many more holes were appearing.

Even the dust began to rise and float in the air.

At the same time, outside of the cave on the eight mountains. Someone had jumped from the eight mountains into the evil area.

That person’s skin was red so they looked particularly evil in the middle of the night.

That person stood there with an evil grin. They opened their mouth and took a gigantic mouthful of air. The corpses that were littered across ground flew into that person’s mouth, he swallowed all the cadavers.

He looked intoxicated, as if he had too much to drink. As expected, the taste of the geniuses’ corpses of the Great Competition of Xue Yu was exquisite!

Eating corpses enabled that person to increase his cultivation level.

There was someone else standing at the top of one of the eight mountains, he was observing the scene rather calmly, expressionless. He wasn't surprised by the human consumption.

“The technique which enables the Tian Sha Sect to use dead Qi, isomerize it, and then turn it into pure Qi is really incredible. That sorcery is incredible, but it can't turn into Qi though.” said the one at the top of the mountain, he was smiling evilly. He had a commanding presence from the top. The other one was laughing coldly.

He swallowed every single cadaver calmly.

“It can't turn into Qi?” asked that person. He looked at Di Ling evilly.

“Di Ling, wait until the final battle at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. I will also swallow your body then you won't say such things anymore.” threatened Xue Sha arrogantly.

Di Long groaned coldly, turned around, and left.

“I will wait for you!” said a voice in the distance and then Di Ling disappeared into the darkness of the night. Xue Sha stayed there though and jumped back onto a mountain.

In the darkness of the mountain chain there were many dark coffins flying unceasingly. In another place of the mountain chain, someone was sitting cross-legged and in a special state of mind. A pitch-black coffin that didn't emit any Qi at all was on his side. Then the coffin slowly opened itself and a skeleton came out. The skeleton immediately grabbed the cultivator and pulled him into his coffin.

In the middle of the night a horrible shriek could be heard. But then the atmosphere became silent again.

This wasn't the only one place, many other shrieks could be heard followed by an eerie silence.

Xue Sha was calmly observing everything that was happening, he was smiling in a particularly evil way. His face was extremely white.

The people of the Tian Sha Sect were happy to be in Mi Cheng. They were eating all those cultivators practicing in the mountain chain. These cultivators were all delicious and full of nutrients.

The coffins were slowly opening themselves to reveal skeletons that surprised and devoured unsuspecting cultivators.

“Ahhhhhh.....!” Blood splashed, a horrible shriek spread in the air which broke the silence of a cave. A skeleton had just stretched his hand out to grab a person who was practicing cultivation, but instead he had the feeling that he had grabbed the blade of a sword. His hand been cut. That sword energy was absolutely real.

How was that possible? How could someone release such a terrifying sword energy?

The coffin then moved back. He wanted to leave the cave but suddenly a terrifying sword energy invaded the entire cave. Cutting sounds could be heard spreading in the air as the coffin was completely cut into pieces. A horrible shriek emerged again and the skeleton that was in the coffin was lacerated!

The young man sitting cross-legged slowly opened his eyes, he looked expressionless. Then he closed his eyes again, looking absolutely unperturbed.

The cave had become absolutely silent again.

Outside of the cave, a coffin was precisely flying nearby and heard those shrieks. He was surprised, he signalled for two more coffins. They immediately turned around towards the place whence the horrible shriek had come.

After a short time, they arrived next to the cave.

Those three coffins didn't immediately enter the cave, they had decided to act slowly.

The coffins slowly opened themselves and three silhouettes crawled out of them. They were extremely pale, livid and skinny. They gave the saying 'skin and bones' another meaning. Their Qi

was absolutely evil.

Those three monsters glanced at each others and entered the cave altogether.

They saw a young man practicing cultivation. He was sitting cross-legged.

At his side there was some sword Qi, but it looked intangible. But then it transformed into a curtain and enveloped the young man so nobody could get near.

One of the three undead walked forwards and bobbed his head as he spat out a monstrous evil Qi which moved towards the young man.

“Crrrr crrrr....” The evil Qi penetrated into the curtain of sword Qi and was minced. It immediately turned into smoke and then disappeared without leaving a trace. The three undead were astonished. That curtain made of sword Qi was terrifying.

The three people immediately moved back to leave the cave. Even though that cultivator had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer, his battling abilities were monstrous. They couldn't compete with him and risk provoking him.

“Since you came, no need to leave.” said Lin Feng. Immediately after he opened his eyes and a dazzling sharp sword twinkled in the atmosphere. What looked like a real sword then emerged out of his

eyes and dazzled those three undead's eyes!

Chapter 624: Sword Intent

Those three froze there, they were surprised by Lin Feng.

“Your Excellency, we didn’t intend to provoke or disturb you, please forgive us.” said one of the undead to Lin Feng, but remained oppressed by the sword intent. Lin Feng’s strength was hard to determine, but even though the three of them had also broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer, they knew they couldn’t compete with him.

“You didn’t mean to bother me?” Lin Feng smiled coldly. If he hadn’t maintained a curtain of sword Qi, they would have tried to kill him.

When they sensed that Lin Feng was releasing cold Qi, their faces started looking cold.

“Your Excellency, some things can be forgiven and everyone will be fine.” said that undead again. He wanted everybody to forget about what had just happened.

“I am now awake.” said Lin Feng.

“Hmph, why do you need to try and convince him? All our comrades are everywhere in the mountains right now. If he dares touch us he will offend all of them, then they will kill him and eat his corpse.” said another one, coldly trying to scare Lin Feng away.

“The Tian Sha Sect...!” As expected, those three didn’t look like human beings. Back then in Celestial River Lin Feng had already seen those people and their evil skills. After Mo Cang Lan had left, they hadn’t been a bit lost.

The Tian Sha Sect had some cultivators of the Tian Qi layer. Back then, Duan Wu Ya had actually sealed the soul of a cultivator of the Tian Qi layer... So the undead who had just talked was trying to scare Lin Feng by officially declaring the name of his sect.

“Indeed, the Tian Sha Sect.” repeated the third one as if Lin Feng hadn’t heard.

Lin Feng slowly stood up, his sword Qi whistled in the air and invaded the atmosphere.

“I have already met people from the Tian Sha Sect in the past and killed them!” said Lin Feng. In a flash, his sword Qi invaded the entire cave and obstructed the exit. It was dazzling. Those three undead were astonished as their faces dramatically changed.

The entire cave was filled with sword energy, it felt as if there had been millions of arrows inside.

“How dare you!” said those three extremely loudly while they released some ice-cold Qi.

“Crrrrr.... Crrr.....” his sword energy was unstoppable, those three undead looked terrified and desperate.

“Boom!”

They started breathing heavily, the sword light was moving towards them. The walls of the cave were filled with holes created by the sword energy. As the lights closed in, their bodies disappeared.

Lin Feng stretched his hand and the sword Qi disappeared from the cave but his eyes were still filled with sword-lights.

“Sword determination...” Lin Feng smiled in a resplendent smile. In the vast and arid area of the sword memories, he hadn’t seen a monstrously powerful sword skill, he hadn’t even seen a monstrously powerful magical power either. Instead, he had been learning about the origin of swords.

He had learnt about the source of sword strength and thus sword intent. Back then, without realizing, he had broken through to the first layer of sword intent. But now that he had visualized the area and that sword in the desert he had understood so much more. He had understood incredible, deep, profound and mysterious things. Now, he had already broken through to the third layer of sword intent. Within a second, he could release millions of dazzling light swords with the power of his thoughts.

Of course, it wasn’t all due to the sword memories! In the preceding weeks, Lin Feng’s pure Qi had been constricted. He had then also understood many things, his cultivation level had increased. He had meditated with Xiao Ya in the mountains. It was

then that he had visualized things and practiced meditation he had watched the sun rise and the sunset. Even though his cultivation had been limited at that time, he had progressed a lot because of it.

Lin Feng stepped out of the cave. Although it was pitch-dark outside things were extremely calm. Lin Feng could sense that there was an evil Qi in the distance though. And that evil Qi was getting near him.

He gazed into the distance and saw some pitch-black coffins radiating an evil Qi.

“Tian Sha Sect...”

Lin Feng was standing on a stone, looking calm. He watched as the coffins flew towards him.

After a short moment, they arrived in front of him with their thick, evil Qi.

“You dared kill the people of my Tian Sha Sect?” said a voice from the coffins. The coffins then opened themselves and several silhouettes crawled out of them. Their evil Qi was terrifying and they were looking deathly pale. They were extremely skinny, like skeletons. Interestingly, their cultivation was higher than that of others their age. On the path of cultivation, not everyone had the same advantages and disadvantages. These walking corpses that still referred to themselves as humans looked truly abominable though.

“Your people wanted to kill me so I killed them. I don’t have time to play with you. If you want to kill me, don’t blame me for being aggressive.” Lin Feng challenged coldly. After that his silhouette flickered, he had turned around and started leaving. He didn’t want to fight. He just stepped on a sword light and surfed in the air on it.

Those people from the Tian Sha Sect were astonished. They went back into the coffins which started emitting whistling sounds in the air as they began chasing Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was streaking through the sky like a meteor. Not long after he moved down and arrived in front of a cave.

Without hesitation, he entered that cave.

The cave was extremely deep. Some small pieces of stones and specks of dust were falling onto his head. The tunnel in the cave was irregular, like it had just been dug by someone!

“Who??!!” shouted someone furiously. A silhouette was staring at Lin Feng coldly. That person wasn’t happy to hear Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked back at that person, his sick-looking face was expressionless. There was a huge ancient room in that cave where some small lights could be seen. The entrance to that ancient cave had been obstructed with time.

Lin Feng realized there wasn’t only one person in that cave, there

were two others digging in the ground as if they had wanted to unearth something.

“I’m the same as you guys.” said Lin Feng indifferently. That person coldly stared at him and said, “this cave is ours. You have nothing to do here so please leave.”

“You just arrived. How could it be yours? Are you joking? If you found some vestiges, it would be a miracle.” said Lin Feng, shaking his head. How could a cave have an owner? They had just entered it and were still digging it.

Lin Feng’s words silenced the people who were still digging. They gathered together and looked at Lin Feng with what only could be described as discontent.

That person suddenly wanted them to share their treasures with him or what? Was he crazy?

“It’s a nice place. That’s why he ran so fast.” said some voice from behind Lin Feng. Some evil Qi had just now penetrated into the cave, everything suddenly became colder.

Immediately after that voice spoke a group of cadaveric people entered the cave. They glanced around and released some monstrously thick evil Qi.

That cave was surprisingly ancient. It seemed like it had a very rich history. The more ancient a cave was, the higher the chances

of finding treasures.

They had thought that Lin Feng wanted to escape, but instead he had left to find some treasures.

“You...” said the three diggers while glaring at Lin Feng. They hadn’t thought that he would bring such evil people along with him. Those people were from the Tian Sha Sect and were all extremely strong. The people in the cave couldn’t fight against them... If they tried, they would immediately die...

“Since you said it’s a nice place, make them leave immediately.” said Lin Feng moving aside. He crossed his arms against his chest and leaned on the wall of the tunnel, as if he had no problem at all.

“You bastards! The cave is yours!” said the three people while gnashing their teeth, and then leaving. Their pure Qi whistled as they started digging another hole in the cave and left. They were extremely good at digging holes!

Chapter 625: Bloodthirsty Sword

Lin Feng was happy to see those three leave.

He turned back around and coldly faced those people from the Tian Sha Sect.

“Since you like to stay with me, I will help you.” said Lin Feng, releasing some terrifying sword energy which whistled all around the air. With his mind he could release sword light and energy that was dazzling to behold.

“Huh?” Those people were astonished confronting Lin Feng. What a terrifying sword energy. Lin Feng had probably left the strange dimension of the human earth fusion already and had penetrated into the dimension of sword intent... With his thoughts and heart he could release some monstrous whistling sword energy. And what a terrifying curtain of sword energy it was!

“Break!” Lin Feng shook his arms and his sword energy started lacerating the space around him. It seemed like the cave was going to collapse as huge pieces of stone and rock were falling down.

“What are you doing???” asked someone furiously. The massive amount of sword energy was destroying the cave. The people from the Tian Sha Sect all released some pure Qi in order to prevent the massive stones from crushing their bodies.

“I want to bury you!” said Lin Feng darkly. He then joined his hands together and whistling sword energy continued to spread in

the air, it was painfully piercing those undead's eardrums. The sword energy then turned into sword light and targeted the Tian Sha Sect disciples.

The entire atmosphere was filled with sword light, all the exits were obstructed. It seemed like there were a million swords there. They had no chance of dodging them so they could only block.

“Let's make a wall of corpse Qi!” they shouted when they saw the sword energy moving towards them. They were at a loss, they had to defend against the sword energy and the falling rocks. They released some evil corpse energy and made it turn into a wall to block the swords.

“Fall!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. Rumbling sounds spread in the air and the cave was trembling more and more violently. The people from the Tian Sha Sect didn't try to dodge the stones anymore as massive stones were falling onto their heads. They had the feeling they were being buried alive with the entire cave collapsing on top of them.

Lin Feng moved his fingers and some more rumblings sounds spread in the air. Under his feet, specks of dust rose up as he moved back. Even more stones were falling now. He locked himself in the room where the three others had looked for treasure a moment before.

Lin Feng absorbed some sword light and turned into a sharp sword. He moved towards the wall of the cave like an arrow and pierced straight through it.

“Crrrr... Crrrr.....” He was moving quite slowly through the stones and rocks because he had the feeling there was an incredible pressure on his body.

Soon, he felt like he could relax when he arrived in a new cave. As he entered this new cave he found that there was a very thick sword energy emitting somewhere nearby!

“I arrived.” thought Lin Feng, taking a deep breathe. Surprisingly, in that cave there was a large skeleton. On that skeleton there was a blood-red sword!

“Rumors said that after understanding sword intent you can use it on an extremely sharp sword to create a separate life inside that sword. That blood-red sword must be a monstrous weapon because it contains sword intent, maybe that sword is reacting to my sword intent.” thought Lin Feng, observing the sword. He had just used his intent to escape from those people, and to make the cave collapse. Then he used it to dig a tunnel and arrived in that room to find the sword... Was it a coincidence?

Everything seemed to come from his thoughts and heart.

Mi Cheng was an ancient and mysterious city. Vestiges could be found if you knew where to look. The evil area had existed for such a long time... it was normal to find miracles. Therefore, Lin Feng didn't dare waste time anymore. He had to become stronger with haste.

He made a step forwards and saw that the cadaver was clinging onto the blood-red sword. He took the sword and stabbed his own heart with it as if he wanted kill himself!

Those who could use that sword had to be extremely strong.

“The evil swords are extremely powerful and seem to be their own masters with their own lives. Their goal is to swallow me and use my body. Because I can’t control them I need a good sword that will follow me.”

Lin Feng slowly held the sword even more tightly, as the red color of the sword became even more intense. It was becoming shiny and seemed to be coming to life.

“Crrrr....” The red light illuminated the skull. The rotten body that was holding the sword then turned into ashes and disappeared.

At the same time, a red light appeared and followed up the sword and into Lin Feng’s hand. A red-blood color appeared in Lin Feng’s veins and merged with his blood.

“The sword recognizes me as its owner...?” thought Lin Feng surprised. It was a weapon with its own life. That blood sword had its own intent too and could even use telepathy!! That sword was traveling in Lin Feng’s body and telling him that it accepted him as a master.

“It really accepts me as a host...” thought Lin Feng. Its red light invaded the entire atmosphere and all around Lin Feng there was only bloodthirsty killer, sword Qi. The sword was shaking intensely as if stretching after sleeping for so long.

“Bloodthirsty sword!”

A memory appeared in Lin Feng’s brain. A sword technique had appeared in his head: thirteen bloodthirsty swords.

A killer sword technique!

Lin Feng’s pupils shrank. That thirteen bloodthirsty killer sword technique required killer energy!

Had he come across this sword thanks to his murderous personality?

“I accept you.” said Lin Feng and placed the sword on his back. It was then that the sword became calm and docile again.

Lin Feng glanced around, there were no other treasures. He had only found that sword and the corpse. Lin Feng was curious how that person had died.

“Let’s go now.” Lin Feng created some incredible sword energy again to dig through the cave. The walls were extremely hard, the room he found was probably meant to be hidden!

Lin Feng dug through a little bit and arrived in another opening. Rumbling sounds were spreading in the air. But it was dark so he couldn't see what was causing them.

“”Die!” A terrifying evil Qi emerged and Lin Feng had the feeling his head was being crushed. That evil Qi made him feel nauseous!

“Get lost!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. A terrifying fire emerged and illuminated the dark night.

“Bzzzzz crrrr....” Flames had suddenly appeared! That person was unable to dodge Lin Feng's attack and burnt alive.

His evil Qi was rolling and spinning but it couldn't extinguish the flames. The fire enveloped his entire body creating huge flames. That person was now a human-bonfire.

“Ahhhhh....” A terrifying, horrible shriek spread in the air, breaking the silence of the night once more. Many silhouettes started flickering. The people of the Tian Sha Sect all gathered around that place. They watched the fire burn grimly. That Lin Feng had killed another comrade. Their look was terrifying, ice-cold.. piercingly-cold...

They had been waiting for Lin Feng to come out. They thought that one surprise attack would be enough, they never thought that he would kill one of them first.

“I want to eat your flesh and drink your blood!” shouted someone in a particularly evil voice. That was a cultivator of the seventh Xuan Qi layer. He then continued, “With a wall made of corpse Qi, we should be able to eat him!”

They all encircled Lin Feng as a terrifying corpse Qi emerged out of their bodies, moving towards Lin Feng.

“It seems like I’m going to need my bloodthirsty sword...” thought Lin Feng. Lin Feng concentrated and some sword energy started twinkling in the air. This time it was bright red and looked particularly scary in the middle of the night.

Chapter 626: One Sword

Blood-red light was illuminating the night, it looked even more terrifying than the Qi of the people from the Tian Sha Sect.

Besides the red light, that terrifying sword possessed intent, a life of its own life.

“Did he obtain that blood-red sword in the cave?” they wondered, watching Lin Feng’s bloodthirsty sword. Lin Feng didn’t have a sword on his back when they previously saw him in the cave. But after he entered the cave and made it collapse with his terrifying sword Qi, he now possessed it. What other reasoning could there be?

“Since my sword intent has become stronger I haven’t been able to use it with an authentic sword. I think now would be a good time.” said Lin Feng coldly. A terrifying sword Qi emerged out of his body and dashed to the skies. It contained terrifying killer, blood energy.

“Crrrr.... Crrrr....”

That sword was emitting strident whistling sounds. Lin Feng raised his head and closed his eyes. His sword intent was already level three. Given his cultivation level that was already monstrously powerful, Lin Feng wanted to give it a try!

“Eeeeeee.... Eeeeeeee!!!” The evil Qi the others emitted disappeared when it came into contact with Lin Feng’s sword energy. Their Qi

was had been lacerated by the sword energy and then dispersed in the form of strong winds.

“How strong, what a terrifying sword intent. He has only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer, how come his sword intent is so powerful?” they wondered. Generally speaking, cultivators as young as Lin Feng were already considered as geniuses when they could fuse together with the earth. But Lin Feng had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer and could use sword intent, which was enough to scare cultivators of the seventh Xuan Qi layer. Lin Feng had extremely high natural abilities.

The winds being created were blowing away the Tian Sha Sect disciples. They felt as helpless as leaves being blown away by the autumn wind.

“Let me help you in leaving this world.” said Lin Feng, holding his sword obliquely with both hands. He sliced horizontally in front of him.

“Boom!” A terrifying blood-red light rose up, sword energy started to burst in the air. It whistled as it moved straight towards the people from the Tian Sha Sect. The sword energy and sword Qi should be sufficient to kill them.

“Level three sword intent, die!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. He spun around with his sword still held in both hands.

It didn't look like sword light anymore but instead blade light. An arch-shaped blood-red light moved blindingly fast.

“Crrrrr.....” There were no explosions sounding this time, there were no whistling sounds. There was only a calm and peaceful sword emitting soft, subtle sounds.

The people from the Tian Sha Sect began to dodge but then they lowered their heads and realized they had been cut in half at the waist. How terrifying...

Were they going to die?

“Crrrrr... Crrr...” Blood started flowing out of their waists where they had been cut. At first a venous bleed, slow and oozing. But suddenly it started gushing out violently! The scene was very gory as their blood flowed like a violent river!

Their blood was falling downwards, gushing sideways, and splashing towards Lin Feng’s direction.

All of their blood began directing itself towards Lin Feng.

“How strong...”

Lin Feng had been astonished... Level three sword intent was really scary... It seemingly could cut through everything... Those people of the Tian Sha Sect had already broken through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer none of them could resist him. They weren’t even able to escape!

But now there was blood flying towards him, what was the reason for that?

Lin Feng quickly understood what was happening. That blood was penetrating into his body and mixing with the bloodthirsty sword...

The bloodthirsty sword was shiny as it started vibrating. It seemed like it was drinking the blood. It had an extremely greedy and endless craving for blood.

It was a vampiric sword.

“A bloodthirsty sword... Bloodthirsty indeed....” whispered Lin Feng. He finally understood the meaning of bloodthirsty... That sword liked to drink blood!

“Ahhhhhhh!!!!!!!”

Bloodcurdling shrieks continued spreading through the night. Those from the Tian Sha Sect were extremely sly and evil. Their skills and techniques were demonic, but now something even more corrupt was punishing them!

Death. That was death. They used to eat other people's flesh and drink their blood, what incredible times those were! But now the table was turned. That sword had cut through them and was drinking their blood. The worst part was that they were still alive!

“What is going on??” There were many people in the distance that heard the bloodcurdling shouts. Who could be causing them?

And it wasn't a single shriek. They could tell that there were multiple persons suffering.

Several more coffins flew over there. Apart from the Tian Sha Sect, others who were practicing cultivation were in the mountain chain and had been surprised. Their silhouettes flickered as they rushed over to see what was going on.

At the top of one of the eight mountains, Xue Sha had his eyes closed and was practicing cultivation. But then he opened his eyes and frowned. Where were those shouts coming from?

He stood up and gazed into the distance. He decided to go see what was happening, as his silhouette flickered into the sky.

Lin Feng was still standing in the air with his bloodthirsty sword drinking their blood. The red light was oscillating and illuminating the air around him. After such a long time, it still wanted to drink more blood.

Lin Feng's eyes were gradually turning red like blood, making him look like a demon.

The sword and he were communicating by telepathy.

Extremely strong cultivators could influence swords and sword

intent. Oppositely, extremely strong swords could influence cultivators.

Lin Feng was using telepathy to tell the bloodthirsty sword to become stronger and to drink more blood. Drinking blood was the same as cultivating to that sword.

When Lin Feng saw all those silhouettes rushing over to him from all directions, he decided that now was a good time to run away.

Two pitch-black coffins were moving towards Lin Feng. He produced sword intent again and cut through them. A loud sound spread in the air, the coffins were disintegrated as well as the people inside them.

But this time Lin Feng didn't stop, he had no time to let his sword drink their blood. He started moving at full speed through the night. Nobody else tried to impede him.

“Who did that???” shouted a furious voice. It spread all around the mountain chain making everybody shiver. It was Xue Sha's voice, one of the eight most outstanding geniuses of Xue Yu.

The people who had been killed were from the Tian Sha Sect. They had come with others from the Black Wings Empire and had died there.

In the air, a silhouette appeared and looked panic-stricken.

Initially, he had wanted to intercept Lin Feng when he had come out of the tunnel in the mountains. But when he saw so many people already there to intercept him, he believe that they wouldn't need his help. But now that he had seen everything he was panicked.

“Do you know who did this?” Xue Sha asked him.

“It's the guy who was attacked by surprise at the end of the first round of the competition.”

Xue Sha was surprised. He had, of course, seen that move at the end of the first round.

“You are doomed....” said Xue Sha while gazing into the distance. His face was filled with murder. Xue Sha wanted his Tian Sha Sect to see how amazing he was in the competition... so many people who had come to support him had died now... Lin Feng hadn't given him any face.

Lin Feng had to die, he was doomed. (Editor's note: A typical human body has 3-4L of blood. Assuming you've been cut straight through the gut, you'd probably lose all of your blood in a few seconds. Is it just me or is that sword a slow eater?)

Chapter 627: The Discussion

One day wasn't endless, time passed very quickly for the competitors.

The Flood Dragon Cave is where the second round of the competition would take place. It was extremely wide, maybe a few dozen kilometers. There wasn't just one entrance, surprisingly, there were several... There were flood dragon statues around the entrances with their mouths acting as entrances. In total, there were eighty-one flood dragon statues in the form of a nine times nine formation.

It was strange because there was only one exit. The exit is where the main stage was placed.

After going through the flood dragon's mouths, participants would arrive before the main stage.

It seemed like everything had been prepared quite well for the second round of the competition.

In front of each flood dragon statue, a brouhaha was spreading. Each entrance was like a boiling cauldron of voices. So many people were in front of the mouths of the dragons chatting, they had been waiting for this day for a long time. They couldn't wait to watch the spectacle of the second round, and then the final round... Who would be the most dazzling cultivator of the Great Competition of Xue Yu?

Besides, the candidates had already gone through the hardships of the first round and many of them had died. There was initially a hundred and forty-four participants, but now there were only sixty-eight. Were more people going to die?

Nobody could predict anything.

In the distance, there were more and more people coming. Di Ling was as unsociable as before, coming by himself. He had flown through the air and landed on the head of a flood dragon. He sat down cross-legged and closed his eyes. He didn't care about other people so he ignored them. In his world he thought he was the only person of importance.

Xue Sha was there too, though he had arrived much earlier. In the same way, he landed next to Di Ling and glanced at the crowd. He was trying to see if Lin Feng was there or not. If Lin Feng came across him during the second round, he would definitely die. However, he couldn't see Lin Feng so he must not have arrived yet.

Several more people were walking towards those flood dragon statues. In the distance there were two Chi Xie horses walking slowly. On one of them there were two silhouettes, they were both wearing bronze masks. On the other horse, there was one cute and pretty girl.

Not far from those two Chi Xie followed several others. They were also walking towards the flood dragon statues.

Lin Feng was one of them. He wasn't far from those two Chi Xie

horses, he looked calm, serene and had a nice smile on his face. He had broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer and looked like an ordinary young man. Who would think that on the night before, he had used a sword which had drunk the blood of a few dozen extremely strong cultivators of the Tian Sha Sect? He had destroyed them all with one sword. (editor's note: no idea where the 'dozens' came from, you all just read it like I did and there were not even..)

Lin Feng looked like a little sunshine, not a fighter. At the same time he looked like someone frivolous with a good joke to tell.

Lin Feng didn't talk to Han Man and Po Jun, he was staying away from them as if he didn't know them.

Someone was glaring at Lin Feng coldly, it was Yu Liu Shui. He obviously knew that Lin Feng was with them. Even though Yu Qin and Yu Jian were already dead Yu Liu Shui didn't want to leave Mi Cheng. He wanted to stay there and avenge his sons.

He couldn't kill him right now though. He had to wait until the end of the competition.

Lin Feng didn't pay attention to him. He knew that Yu Liu Shui wanted to kill him after the Great Competition of Xue Yu. But Lin Feng believed that he would be the one killing Yu Liu Shui in the end.

A few silhouettes flickered and arrived between Lin Feng and the Chi Xie horses. Lin Feng was surprised but quickly he looked

normal again, as if he hadn't been surprised.

“Are you from Xue Yue??” asked Yue Qing Shan to Han Man. If Yue Qing Shan wasn't mistaken, those horses were Chi Xie horses. The soldiers protecting the border of the country were using those very horses.

Even though Yue Qing Shan wasn't a member of the army, he had heard all of Liu Cang Lan's stories. In fact, Yue Qing Shan admired Liu Cang Lan. Even though the army was just some of the King's pawns, they were extremely strong pawns. Their strength was acknowledged by everybody.

Military members, even though they were pawns, always paid tribute and respect to their king. They were ready to sacrifice their lives for their country.

“My three brothers are, I'm not.” said Xiao Ya while smiling resplendently.

“Three brothers??” Yue Qing Shan was looking at Han Man and Po Jun. There were only two people, he turned around to look at Lin Feng curiously.

Lin Feng was a participant at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. If he were from Xue Yue, Yue Qing Shan would definitely know him or at least would have heard about him.

“You are from Xue Yue??” asked Yue Qing Shan curiously. He

had never heard of Lin Feng before.

Lin Feng smiled wryly, Xiao Ya had committed a gaffe.....

“Indeed.” said Lin Feng calmly while looking at his grandfather... He wanted to tell him that he wasn’t only from Xue Yue but was also his grandson, that they shared the same blood.

Yue Qing Shan recognized Yue Tian Ming as his grandson, but not Lin Feng. He wanted Duan Xin Ye to become Yue Tian Ming’s wife. Lin Feng would never accept such a thing and it made him sad that Yue Qing Shan was like that. During the competition, Yue Tian Ming and Lin Feng might fight. It would be difficult for Lin Feng not to show his true colors then. He would have to use his skills and everything...

Sometimes, Lin Feng wanted to see Yue Qing Shan look remorseful. He wanted to prove to Yue Qing Shan that he was more outstanding than Yue Tian Ming.

Yue Qing Shan obviously didn’t know about Lin Feng’s thoughts though. When he saw that Lin Feng was admitting he was from Xue Yue, he was even more surprised.

“Forgive me but I know almost all the geniuses of Xue Yue and I’ve never seen or heard of you. Your Excellency, what is your name?”

“Mister Yue, head of the Yue Clan, is very famous. But you

cannot possibly know everybody.” said Lin Feng while smiling. Yue Qing Shan was astonished, Mister Yue, Head of the Yue Clan... it meant that Lin Feng knew him. He was really from Xue Yue.

“Alright, maybe.” said Yue Qing Shan while nodding. Then he shouted, “Tian Ming, come here. Do you know that outstanding and handsome young man? He says he’s from Xue Yue!”

Yue Tian Ming came over and looked at Lin Feng. He of course knew about him, he had seen him in Dragon Mountain. Lin Feng’s corporeal body was monstrously strong. He had impressed everybody. Besides, Lin Feng seemed to be progressing extremely fast on the path of cultivation. In Dragon Mountain, he hadn’t even broken through to the Xuan Qi layer and now he had already broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer. For anyone else it would be impossible.

Yue Tian Ming knew that Lin Feng had been hiding his real cultivation level.

But that guy who had the same name as Lin Feng was now saying that he was from Xue Yue? Since when?

“Grandpa, that guy was qualified for the competition in Dragon Mountain, and his name is Lin Feng too.” said Yue Tian Ming. Yue Qing Shan was astonished. His white hair fluttered in the wind and then quickly stopped moving again.

“Lin Feng....” Yue Qing Shan was looking at Lin Feng. That young man was also called Lin Feng but he wasn’t like the Lin Feng

he knew. He was however saying he was from Xue Yue.

“Indeed. I also know that Mister Yue knows another person called Lin Feng, what a coincidence.” said Lin Feng, smiling indifferently. Yue Qing Shan slowly calmed down again, but Yue Tian Ming was fixated on Lin Feng.

Lin Feng, when he had appeared in Dragon Mountain had never said that he was from Xue Yue. He also had never said anything in particular, actually. But now he was saying that he was from Xue Yue and also seemed to know a lot about the Yue Clan! He even knew Lin Feng... it seemed too exaggerated, Yue Tian Ming was finding it harder to believe...

“It’s really a coincidence.” said Yue Qing Shan while smiling and nodding, “The fact that we met here at the Great Competition of Xue Yu is fate! You and Yue Tian Ming should become friends, you can exchange a lot. He has lots of experience.”

“Mister Yue is very strong, you are not a young man anymore. Yue Tian Ming is also extremely talented and very strong. Neither of you have anything to learn from me.” said Lin Feng modestly. Yue Tian Ming understood what Lin Feng meant and said, “Alright, we’re not going to bother you anymore.” Then Yue Qing Shan and Yue Tian Ming left and walked away. However, Lin Feng’s silhouette kept appearing in Yue Qing Shan’s thoughts, especially his face and eyes. Lin Feng was so young but looked so deep.

Chapter 628: Enemies and Friends

Lin Feng was following the Chi Xie horses, not too close, not too far as they arrived next to the statues. He looked at the eighty-one statues, especially at their mouths. Lin Feng's eyes were twinkling, he was wondering what kind of treasures were hidden in them.

During the first round, in the vast evil area, there had been temples with incredible skills, techniques and memories inside.

The second round was taking place in the Flood Dragon Cave. It was probably going to be very difficult too, at least more so than the first round. The rules had to be different as well so there would probably be no temples this time. How would the candidates be selected if it wasn't more difficult?

This time, the battle would determine everyone's specific rankings for the battles of the last round, so nobody would spare any effort. Everyone wanted to be ranked amongst the first ones so that they wouldn't have to fight against the strongest cultivators...

If they had to fight against one of the eight most outstanding geniuses, they would immediately lose.

An ice-cold Qi spread out into the air and crashed onto Lin Feng's body, making him frown. He turned around and saw Xue Sha.

"Xue Sha!" Lin Feng was surprised and staring at Xue Sha.

“Die!” shouted Xue Sha! Everybody was speechless, looking at Lin Feng.

Xue Sha released some monstrous deadly energies but didn't attack him. With that word he wasn't saying that he was going to kill him right away, he was telling him that sooner or later, he would die.

“It seems like Xue Sha knows about what happened yesterday...” thought Lin Feng. He had to be very careful. At the Great Competition of Xue Yu, too many people wanted to kill him already, Yu Mo, Xue Sha....

The crowd looked at Lin Feng with empathy in their eyes... Xue Sha wanted to kill him... He was doomed. He had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer and he was acting so recklessly.... Last time, he had already infuriated Yu Mo... this time Xue Sha...

Against all expectations, Lin Feng looked calm and serene. He just calmly stood there.

“It seems like many people want to kill you.” said someone mockingly. It was someone from Tian Feng. Of the seven envoys from Tian Feng, four were dead already, so there was now only three left.

Lin Feng smiled strangely when he said, “Indeed! During the first round, you all wanted to kill me but now I am still alive. Unfortunately, I see that four of you are already dead. I wonder if

any of you will make it to the third round. Haha.” said Lin Feng, silencing them. They were coldly glaring at Lin Feng. Already four of them had died... That didn’t leave them in the best position. Four people at the scale of the competition wasn’t such a large number, they were initially a hundred and forty-four people... More than half of them had died during the first round so the fact that four people from Tian Feng had died was unsurprising.

“They may have died, but don’t think you are exempt from death.” said the first envoy of Tian Feng, Nie Yun. Lin Feng was making fun of Tian Feng and knew what their tender point was.

“Let’s hope so, for your sake.” said Lin Feng indifferently.

“His name is Lin Feng.” Many people were trying to remember his name. He was courageous, brave, and audacious! He had so many enemies but still managed to survive the first round. And in the end, with the strength of the fifth Xuan Qi layer, had managed to move on to the next round. However, he would probably end amongst the last ones in the rankings and end up fighting against the strongest cultivators.

“You have many enemies...” someone said. A silhouette flickered and appeared next to Lin Feng. That person looked cold and elegant. Lin Feng smiled resplendently.

“Long time no see!”

“Huh?” Tang You You was surprised, they had seen each other just the day before...

“Let’s say I missed you...” said Lin Feng, smiling shyly, what an awkward situation.

“You guys arrived.” said Jun Mo Xi to Tang You You and Lin Feng. He looked at them and said, “This time, you really have to finish amongst the first ones. Then you won’t have to fight against the strongest ones till later!”

“I know that I will finish amongst the best ones.”said Lin Feng. Against all expectations, he had absolute faith in his own abilities. Didn’t he know that with his strength of the fifth Xuan Qi layer, he was easy to defeat? He surprisingly thought he was going to end up high in the rankings...

The crowd was surprised when they saw Jun Mo Xi and Lin Feng, they seemed to be good friends... Besides, only he was friendly to such people.. The other seven geniuses were extremely arrogant and solitary. They looked down upon everybody else...

Jun Mo Xi was the only genius who was standing with ordinary people... The seven other geniuses were sitting or standing on the heads of the flood dragon statues while Jun Mo Xi was calmly standing amongst the crowd... And he even seemed to be friends with a cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer! Jun Mo Xi was quite strange.

“I’m late. Sorry.” said Yun Fei Yang while sluggishly walking over to them. He looked calm and unrestrained.

“So what do you think? Do you think you will manage to finish amongst the first twenty best cultivators?” asked Yun Fei Yang to Lin Feng.

“No idea.” said Lin Feng shrugging. He adding, “What about you?”

“Me?” asked Yun Fei Yang. He shrugged and said, “I survived the first round, I’m happy already. If I manage to move on to the next round, that would already be incredible!”

Yun Fei Yang then stretched himself. The sky was particularly blue on that day, making him feel extremely free, unrestrained, and carefree...

The second round would start soon.

“Do you think I believe you?” whispered Lin Feng. Yun Fei Yang was always like that, since the selection rounds at the Xiangjiang Lake... He had always acted sluggishly, he was also quite frivolous... Looking like he cared about nothing. Lin Feng was starting to understand him.

“I’m here!” In the air, someone suddenly appeared and it was Xue Wu Chang!

He had arrived!

It meant that the second round of the Great Competition of Xue

Yu was about to start.

Xue Wu Chang looked down at the crowd from the sky.

“The rules of the second round are extremely easy! You all have to enter the Flood Dragon Cave from a different entrance! Then you have to go through as fast as you can, on the other side there are some jade medals with numbers on them. When you pick one up you will see a number. That number will be your ranking!” said Xue Wu Chang. The participants then all nodded one after the other. The rules were simple indeed, it was all about getting ranked.

“I would like to remind you of something. Don’t procrastinate because of other things. The best plan is to pick up a jade medal as fast as possible! If you finish amongst the first ones you will be able to choose your opponents! The most important thing for most of you is to choose your opponent after all. It is worth mention that if you finish amongst the first ones, you cannot challenge someone else from the top ten.” said Xue Wu Chang. Everyone was in an uproar.. The first ones would be able to choose their opponents! They would have to make great efforts to finish amongst the first ones!

But Xue Wu Chang was worried to see the most outstanding geniuses of the competition challenge each other immediately. So he had added an extra rule, they simply weren’t aloud to. Such battles were better saved for the end of the competition...

“Interesting rules...” thought Lin Feng. The extra rule was fair. The strongest cultivators wouldn’t be the only ones to decide

everything. It was quite equitable. “If I manage to finish amongst the first ten... Nobody will be able to challenge me.” thought Lin Feng. His eyes were twinkling with determination!

Chapter 629: The Flood Dragon Cave

Of course, when Xue Wu Chang finished talking Lin Feng wasn't the only one thinking that... The others were all thinking that they had to finish amongst the first ten cultivators.

Even if they weren't as good as the eight most outstanding geniuses of Xue Yu, they still had two free spots to finish in the top ten... They must leave no effort wasted if they wanted a chance to move forwards.

“Now, there are sixty-eight people. Please all move to different entrances and get ready for the beginning of the second round. ” said Xue Wu Chang. In a flash, silhouettes started flickering and the participants appeared in front of the mouths of different flood dragons. They were all releasing pure Qi and condensing it.

The second round of the Great Competition of Xue Yu was actually a race. They had to cross the Flood Dragon Cave in the shortest time, then they could end up in a better situation for the final stage.

There were eighty-one statues so thirty-one of them had nobody in front of them. It seems that nobody went missing the night before.

And who would have dared to be late? The Great Competition of Xue Yu only happened once every ten years...

That competition would maybe enable them to have a great

future.

“GO!” said Xue Wu Chang, raising his hand. Everybody released a monstrous amount of Qi and delved into the Flood Dragon Cave. Nobody wasted time. They had to get the first jade medals! ...and then they would be able to choose their opponents. They could survive the onslaught of the top eight...

Lin Feng didn't hurry that much though. He released some monstrous amounts of energy and then entered the cave. His silhouette looked blurry at that moment but he actually was moving very slowly. Actually, Lin Feng didn't believe that it was a race at all! Otherwise, the second round would have been way too slow.

From outside he had noticed that only a few steps were required to walk from one statue to the other end of the cave...

Xue Wuv Chang watched as they entered the Flood Dragon Cave. He then rolled up his sleeves and made a step towards the other extremity of the cave. He was going to wait at the exit.

The audience did the same and moved towards the exit. In a short time, the exit of the cave was surrounded by people and the entrances were left completely barren. Everyone was remaining silent. Some pedestrians were passing by the entrances sometimes, they had the feeling that that the silence was too oppressing.

It didn't take long for the exit of the Flood Dragon Cave to become a boiling cauldron of voices, people were close and

numerous. Everybody was watching the exit, calmly waiting.

“I wonder which of the eight most outstanding disciples will finish first?...” various comments were spreading in the crowd. Indeed, which one of the eight most outstanding disciples was the strongest?

Those crowd could only guess randomly at that moment. There was no way to predict what would happen. Several were guessing that Di Long was the strongest, while some others thought it would be Duan Wu Dao... They had heard about Duan Wu Dao and just how monstrously strong he was. His sealed doors spirit could seal anything! His spirit was too terrifying.. Nobody could stop him.

Of course, others were betting on Jun Mo Xi as he was extremely enigmatic.

Everybody was guessing one of the eight amazing geniuses, obviously it had to be one of them. But who would be the first one out?

Even though people knew that they wouldn't come out too fast, they were still staring at the exit. They were impatient to see who it would be.

Lin Feng entered the cave and saw a valve... A huge water valve. Lin Feng could see himself in the water of that door.

Lin Feng moved forward and crossed the water valve. Some ripples and waves appeared but then the door disappeared into a spiral. Around the door there were lights that looked like pure Qi.

His silhouette flickered as he moved forwards and looked around. In front of him several people appeared as rumbling sounds spread in the air. Gigantic monoliths were moving out and transformed into a wall that obstructed his way.

“Are they people?” Lin Feng was baffled, were those people made of stones?

They could move by themselves and create obstacles to obstruct Lin Feng’s way...

“Hmph.” Lin Feng smiled coldly and made a step forwards. Those were only stone puppets, nothing more. Even though they had human shapes they probably couldn’t rival with human beings.

“Boom boom boom!” several stone fists launched towards Lin Feng. They were allowing him to come closer. Lin Feng could clearly sense their physical strength. Those stone fists had the physical strength of the fifth Xuan Qi layer.

“Like me?” Lin Feng raised his hands and a golden light suddenly appeared. It looked dazzling, pure and holy.

“Boom boom!” Those stones immediately broke. The stone puppets were indeed as strong as Lin Feng, however, Lin Feng

could easily crush people of the same level as him.

After he destroyed the stone puppets, Lin Feng continued to walk forwards when another water vortex appeared in front of him.

Lin Feng frowned but didn't stop. He was about to get through that door when a silhouette came out of it... Lin Feng immediately stopped because he was surprised.

It was him! The silhouette coming out of the door was him, exactly the same person... That silhouette was even wearing the same mask as him. They were absolutely the same, just like clones.

"Huh?" Lin Feng frowned and stared at the silhouette. That person was himself. How was that possible?

"Did the first water door clone me when I crossed it...?" thought Lin Feng. That was the only explanation... He couldn't think of anything else.

"I knew that the flood dragon cave would be extremely complex. I'm not the only one experiencing this, it should be the same for everybody else. This is a battle, I have to fight against myself and surpass myself... Change my state of mind..."

Lin Feng made a stepped towards that silhouette but the silhouette copied him.

"Boom!" A collision sound spread in the air. That counterfeit and

him moved back to where they were. Their movements were exactly the same.

“It has the same strength as me too.” thought Lin Feng stupefied. How come... He couldn't figure it out.

“Die!” Lin Feng jumped forwards and released some killer energy which was ice-cold. At the same time, the counterfeit also released the same killer energy.

“Lacerate!” Some tearing sounds spread in the atmosphere, Lin Feng was staring at the counterfeit.

“Lacerate!” As Lin Feng had expected, the silhouette said and did the same thing. The two killer Qi collided and made the cave shake. Then the sword energies collided and disappeared together.

“I have to stay calm and cool-headed.” thought Lin Feng. He slightly closed his eyes and then opened them again. He was smiling resplendently.

Lin Feng slowly walked forwards, very calmly, he wasn't releasing any energy or using any tricks. He was absolutely calm and serene.

The other Lin Feng also walked towards him until they touched each other.

“See you.” Lin Feng slightly inclined his body. The counterfeit

did the same and they passed next to each other, slightly brushing the other's arms.

“Bzzz.....” The sound of their clothes rubbing could be hear, and then the clone evaporated like steam and disappeared. Almost as if it had never been there. “I’m so stupid, I’ve made a huge mistake. But I’m sure all the others will make the same mistake and think that they have to defeat themselves.” thought Lin Feng. Actually, Lin Feng was right. Most of the other people had the same idea as him and thought that they had to defeat themselves to get past the clone. The harder they tried to fight the further they were from victory! That was just a water illusion set there to test their hearts.

Chapter 630: Rushing Through the Flood Dragon Cave

In order to defeat one's own self, strength wasn't key. It is their heart and state of mind. In order to break through to higher cultivation layers, one's heart and state of mind were extremely important. Otherwise one's cultivation could start stagnating at some point.

The tests of the Flood Dragon Cave couldn't only be related to strength, it wouldn't be that simple.

Lin Feng then crossed the water valve and was left speechless again. There was a passageway in front of him but it was made of magma and filled with monstrosly scorching-hot fire Qi.

From outside, Lin Feng could already sense the horrible heat. He had even started sweating profusely.

"How hot!" thought Lin Feng staring at the flames. The entire passageway was filled with flames. They were diffusing a light which looked almost illusory.

"The physical strength contained in that fire has the strength of the sixth Xuan Qi layer, It seems like the Flood Dragon Cave is adapting to my cultivation level as I progress further in." thought Lin Feng, smiling. It was just adapting to his relative strength, nothing more. In fact, his cultivation level and fighting abilities were incomparable. That fire of the sixth Xuan Qi layer couldn't be a problem for him.

Lin Feng jumped forwards as he released some fire Qi which surrounded his body. Then he penetrated into the fiery passageway.

“Roar!” A fire dragon emerged out from the flames and darted towards Lin Feng. But when it collided it suddenly became much weaker. His cosmos-burning sun was a sun skill and required sunfire. It was much stronger than a normal and ordinary fire.

“Let’s swallow the fire.” thought Lin Feng. Then his cosmos-burning sun started revolving and a terrifying vortex of strength appeared all around his body. The fire surrounding him started moving towards his body. Instead of stopping Lin Feng’s own fire it was being swallowed, it was becoming a part of Lin Feng’s fire.

“Roaaarrr!” Another roaring sound spread through the air. In front of Lin Feng appeared several terrifying flames. They looked like fire beasts that were made of fire.

Lin Feng made a move and his banner appeared in his hand. It was his spiritual fire banner.

“Go!” Lin Feng shook his head and the banner moved forwards with a terrifying strength radiating from it. The fire beasts were enveloped by the banner and disappeared, swallowed by it.

To add, the fire of that banner had become denser and more powerful.

“The entire passageway could make me stronger!” thought Lin Feng, He kept walking forwards, around his body a fire was burning. It was even more violent than before. The banner continued swallowing fire along the way.

Now and then, some terrifying lights would appear. But they couldn't affect Lin Feng at all, instead they became part of Lin Feng's strength.

After a few kilometers, Lin Feng sensed that he was arriving at the end of the passageway. The fire had disappeared. Lin Feng was disappointed because he didn't want to stop! He had the impression he hadn't swallowed enough fire yet!

He then left the passageway and saw a passageway. On the right and the left of the passageway there were tunnels which were criss-crossing. Those tunnels should have led to the other tunnels where the other participants were. But Lin Feng couldn't see anyone, how strange.

“If I maintain this speed, not only will I finish amongst the first ten best, I will finish first!” thought Lin Feng determined. He saw that there were many tunnels and holes everywhere. The one in front of him was probably the best one. The problem with all those tunnels criss-crossing was that it reminded him of a labyrinth. A maze that you could get lost in.

Lin Feng started forwards and without hesitating started running. Since he didn't know the way, his best idea was to trust

his heart. Hesitating was only a waste of time anyways.

There was absolutely no sound in that passageway, only an eerie silent.

“Welcome.” said a mysterious voice suddenly. Lin Feng stopped and looked in front of him. There was a light beam that stopped when a human silhouette appeared.

That silhouette had the demeanor of a transcendent being. It was floating in the air like a celestial being with pure and holy Qi.

The silhouette slowly walked towards Lin Feng, it was an old man! The old man smiled at Lin Feng in a warm and gentle way and said, “You’re the first one to arrive here so I will grant you a wish, don’t be shy.”

“Anything? I can ask for anything?” said Lin Feng sounding a bit suspicious.

“Indeed, anything.” replied the old man.

“Are you sure that you can grant any wish?” said Lin Feng.

“Trust me.” said the old man in a warm and gentle way, smiling warmly. Lin Feng nodded indifferently, walked next to the old man, and smiled resplendently.

“Are you done thinking?” asked the old man in a gentle voice.

“My request is.... Piss off!” said Lin Feng with the same smile on his face. He then turned into a terrifying sharp sword and attacked the old man.

The old man was surprised. Now he looked like an illusion even more. Then he slowly disappeared.

Lin Feng looked behind him and then continued running forwards. He had only one thought, move forwards.

Lin Feng didn't believe that there were celestial beings who could grant people any wish. The only thing people could realize were those with which strength and cultivation enabled them to do. Being able to grant any wish was just ridiculous... Who could do that? If Lin Feng had said that he wanted to become the strongest cultivator of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, what would the old man have done?! Nothing!

On the path of cultivation, there were some miracles but no miracle could enable you to make gigantic progresses in the blink of an eye! That was simply impossible. Therefore, Lin Feng had immediately attacked him with his sword-like body.

He had already crossed two water valves and now all Lin Feng wanted was to obtain the jade medal, nothing else. He wanted to be able to choose his opponent for the upcoming battles!

“Now, nobody can be faster than me.” thought Lin Feng convinced. He hadn’t seen anyone in that maze before, which meant that they hadn’t arrived yet!

Finally, Lin Feng stopped after running for a while. In front of him was a gigantic flood dragon illusion... It opened its mouth and inside was a bridge. It seemed like it was becoming more and more narrow as you went down.

“That is the other side of the Flood Dragon Cave....!” thought Lin Feng, raising his head. He could see something on the other side but he wasn’t sure because there were still many other tunnels. Those might be where the previous tunnels lead.

He looked pensive for a few seconds and then immediately continued running forwards.

On the bridge, nine silhouettes appeared. They were all wearing flood dragon gowns and had their hands behind their back. They looked fake and real at the same time.

Lin Feng stopped and inspected them. Their eyes were all closed and they weren’t looking at Lin Feng at all.

The fifth one abruptly opened his eyes, cold lights were twinkling in them. He was fixated on Lin Feng. They were obstructing Lin Feng’s way on the bridge.

Lin Feng continued running faster and faster. On his body

appeared a terrifying, whistling sword energy. His entire body was surrounded by a sword light.

The fifth person frowned when he saw Lin Feng's sword Qi. They then also released some monstrously powerful Qi. That person had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer.

“Get lost!” shouted Lin Feng and his terrifying sword Qi dashed to the skies and enveloped the enemy's body.

“Boom!” The sharp sword Qi crashed onto the enemy, and the fifth person disappeared.

“As expected, they're fake.” thought Lin Feng but he still looked calm and vigilant. “Die!” Lin Feng's sword energy kept shooting upwards. He arrived in front of the sixth person but didn't stop. The sixth one had the strength of the sixth Xuan Qi layer, but just as quickly, they disappeared

Chapter 631: The Ninth Person

The sixth person disappeared but Lin Feng didn't look so happy. He looked solemn. The seventh silhouette had the strength of the seventh Xuan Qi layer...

There were still the eighth and ninth ones... Their respective strengths were of the eighth and ninth Xuan Qi layers surely...

"As expected, the last thing that matters here is strength." thought Lin Feng, releasing even more sword Qi and attacking the seventh person. The seventh person was staring at Lin Feng and looked surprised, just like a real human being!

Lin Feng had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer and already possessed such a monstrous sword intent and energy...

"Crrrr.... Crrrr...." Lin Feng's body was spitting out monstrous sword light. It looked tangibly sharp, like it could cut through anything in the world.

Sword intent kept emerging.

In Lin Feng's hand appeared a whistling sword.

"Level three sword determination, lacerate!" shouted Lin Feng. He rose up into the air and his sword streaked through the air, separating the sky. Under that energy the seventh person turned into an illusion and became seemingly ghost-like.

“Boom!!!” the seventh person disappeared.

Lin Feng landed on the floor and continued running towards the eighth person. But he finally stopped and took a deep breath.

The two remaining had the strength of the eighth and ninth Xuan Qi layer respectively. They would be hard to defeat...

“How strong...” said the eighth person. “You are so young. If the Great Competition of Xue Yu had been a few years later, you definitely would have been the most dazzling young genius. Unfortunately, you were born a few years too late....”

Lin Feng had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer and had managed to make it there. He had already crushed the first several people while running across the bridge. He defeated the fifth, sixth and seventh ones with a single sword attack.

Lin Feng could be proud of himself!

“If you were a little stronger, you would be able to defeat me. Then you would obtain the eleventh jade medal because you’re the first one to arrive here. If you were even stronger and managed to defeat the ninth person on the bridge you would obtain the first jade medal likewise. However, you have already reached your limits because you cannot defeat the one after me. At best you will only be able to obtain the eleventh jade medal!” explained the eighth person, Lin Feng was shocked.

As expected, strength had always been a limit... He was the first to arrive. If he managed to defeat the eighth person, he would obtain the eleventh medal. Defeating the seventh one would have enabled him to obtain the twenty-first jade medal. If he had been even weaker and had only managed to defeat the sixth one, he would have ended up getting the thirty-first jade medal. Even if he had arrived first!

That Flood Dragon Cave challenge was extremely difficult.

With his incredible natural abilities and determination, Lin Feng had managed to make it there. But in the end, he might move further! All he needed was more strength!

“Now, give up. If other people arrive things will become difficult for you. Getting the eleventh jade medal is not bad already.” said the eighth person. Lin Feng’s eyes were twinkling, his mouth moved as he asked, “I just need to pass behind you, right? I don’t need to kill you, right?”

“Indeed, even if you pass next to me and manage to move further, that’s enough. You don’t need to kill me.” said the eighth person nodding. “However, even if you manage to run further, you will only get the eleventh jade medal.”

“Alright.” said Lin Feng nodding. He looked calm and solemn. His lips shivered as he chanted a mantra in Sanskrit. Small, dazzling, golden Sanskrit letters were moving out of his mouth.

Lin Feng's body started shining, there was a golden aura around his body. A moment later, Lin Feng's body was completely golden and dazzling, just like a Shakyamuni Buddha.

“Huh?” the eighth person frowned, he hadn't thought that Lin Feng could do such a thing. Lin Feng's corporeal body had the strength of the seventh Xuan Qi layer now.

“Thousand Buddha Hands!” shouted Lin Feng in sanskrit. A thousand golden hands emerged and darted towards the eighth person.

He raised his head and released some monstrous pure Qi in front of him, which turned into a wall.

“Boom boom boom!” The golden hands bombarded the pure Qi wall, over and over again. The space was shaking unceasingly.

It was then that Lin Feng began moving forwards towards the eighth person. His lips kept moving as he continued chanting mantras in sanskrit. It seemed like he was never going to stop.

Lin Feng was getting closer and closer to the eighth person, though he wasn't scared. He jumped forwards and released some physical strength which aimed at Lin Feng. “Go!” The eighth person bent the air with his hand and a terrifying transparent wall moved towards Lin Feng. He started feeling very oppressed.

“Fury!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. Lin Feng joined his hands

together and gigantic golden hands continued bombarding the transparent wall. Lin Feng's body was trembling from the effort.

The pressure was even worse because the bridge was narrowing. The narrow bridge was the only thing that could stop Lin Feng from moving further. The angle to pass and dodge the eighth person was too tight.

Besides, the cultivator of the eighth Xuan Qi layer was extremely strong.

“Kacha!” small fissures were appearing on Lin Feng's golden body. He began chanting mantras faster and faster, and his body became even stronger. His entire body was covered an incredible golden light.

“Get lost!!!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. Terrifying golden sanskrit letters kept flowing in the air. At the same time, he was making the strength of the Heruka rotate in his body.

Then, Lin Feng's body turned into a beam of light as he moved forward like an arrow.

“You shall not pass!” shouted the eighth person as he attacked. Lin Feng's golden body started cracking under the pressure but he ignored it. He opened his mouth and spat out some terrifying sword Qi, catching the eighth person off guard. Some terrifying pure Qi enveloped his head but the sword Qi pierced through it. Subtle sounds spread in the air. (editor's note: I slightly tweaked that first sentence. I hope it raised no offense)

“Burn!” shouted Lin Feng when suddenly fireballs emerged out of his mouth and enveloped the pure Qi surrounding that person’s head.

There was no way the eighth person could have been ready for that.

“It’s time now!!!” shouted Lin Feng. He suddenly moved like the wind above the eighth person and landed behind him!

The eighth person turned around and looked at Lin Feng while smiling, “Congratulations... You did it... Now you can obtain the eleventh jade medal.”

“No it’s not enough!!!” said Lin Feng looking determined. He didn’t want the eleventh jade medal, especially seeing how others could choose him as an opponent. Xue Sha and Yu Mo wanted to kill him, those two would obtain one of the first ten jade medals, so they would be able to challenge him. They would kill him outright!

Therefore, Lin Feng needed a better medal than that. Now, he had to fight against the ninth person!

The eighth person was at first speechless. But then replied, “I wish you good luck.”

Lin Feng slowly turned around and walked towards the ninth person. Defeating him or crossing that barrage wouldn’t be easy.

But he would be able to obtain the first jade medal if he did. He'd practically be guaranteed to finish amongst the best ones in the end then!

Lin Feng needed to keep everything under control if he wanted to finish in the top nine at the Great Competition of Xue Yu!

The last one was of the ninth Xuan Qi layer! How strong!

That ninth person sensed Lin Feng approaching. He slowly opened his eyes and extremely sharp lights twinkled in his eyes. They penetrated into Lin Feng's heart.

In Xue Yue, the ninth Xuan Qi layer was already incredible. Such cultivators were considered as monstrously strong. Only past that was there the Tian Qi layer.... "Go!" said Lin Feng looking ferociously fierce. Lin Feng would have to fight against other cultivators of the ninth Xuan Qi layer later during the competition. So he had to see how strong they really were first to find a way to defeat them!

Chapter 632: The First Jade Medal

Outside of the Flood Dragon Cave, everyone was still waiting.

Nobody had come out yet, so who would be the first one?

They were all so impatient with their eyes were twinkling.

“Let’s not talk about the first one, let’s talk about the first five ones! Who will they be?” said someone suddenly.

“It’s not easy to guess but Di Ling, Duan Wu Dao, and Xue Sha will probably be the three first ones.”

“I don’t think so at all. I think that Jun Mo Xi will be one of them. He’s going to give his best so he should be one of the first three.” said someone else. However, everybody in the crowd was convinced that the first ones would be some of the eight most outstanding geniuses. They weren’t considering the other cultivators at all.

Xue Wu Chang was standing on the fighting stage, facing opposite to the exit of the cave. He looked calm and serene. He was just as impatient to see who the first one would be!

Di Long was good, Duan Wu Dao was also extremely strong, Jun Mo Xi was enigmatic. Then there were the five others... They were all extremely strong.

Apart from those eight there were other extremely strong geniuses. Each time during the Great Competition of Xue Yu, there were some exceptions, some unexpected winners... This time probably wouldn't be an exception.

Until the very last battle, nothing was sure. Xue Wu Chang knew that there were some variables which always affected the final rankings, astonishing everyone.

In fact, Xue Wu Chang was delighted to be in charge of the Great Competition of Xue Yu this time. To see such amazingly talented young cultivators was inspiring.

Not far from the exit, Lin Feng was inside of the Flood Dragon Cave on a bridge. He was facing the ninth person with his bloodthirsty sword held firmly between his hands. A red, dazzling light was illuminating the atmosphere.

"I couldn't believe that when you fought against me that you didn't use your full strength..." said the eight person behind, watching Lin Feng. He was excited, Lin Feng's real strength was unfathomable.

Pure Qi whistled as it penetrated into the bloodthirsty sword. It was becoming more and more dazzling as it was releasing a terrifying blood energy. In that blood Qi, there was also some sword energy.

Lin Feng slowly walked towards the ninth person with his sword held obliquely.

“Die!” Lin Feng jumped and released some sword intent. A terrifying red light twinkled like thunder and in a flash-rain as he arrived in front of the ninth person.

The ninth person looked perfectly calm and serene. He raised his hand and released some pure Qi which turned into a wall. It then slowly engulfed the blood-red light which quickly disappeared.

Lin Feng knew that his only chance to defeat that cultivator of the ninth Xuan Qi layer would be with that sword... He jumped again and moved closer to the ninth person, attacking with his sword again.

The ninth person just slightly pulled in his stomach and Lin Feng’s sword couldn’t reach him.

But when the bloodthirsty sword passed by, Lin Feng suddenly made it rotate and move back. It was a perfect change of trajectory, a weak opponent would have never been able to dodge it.

Some wind blew and the ninth person moved backwards.

“Third sword!” Lin Feng moved like the wind and his red sword twinkled again.

“Destroy!” said the ninth person who was angry. He was pushed back because of Lin Feng’s trick, obviously he wasn’t happy. He released some terrifying pure Qi and destroyed that sword light.

He didn't want to move backwards again. A terrifying strength then oppressed Lin Feng's body, leaving him dazed.

"Die!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. His sword streaked through the atmosphere horizontally, the entire atmosphere was filled with the red light of his sword. In the air appeared a word, "Blood".

That was the seventh sword attack. Lin Feng was moving his sword at full speed, just like lightning. All his sword attacks were monstrously powerful.

"What nice sword play!" the eighth person was astonished. Lin Feng's sword attacks were perfect, he showed no flaw with any movement. Each of his sword attacks were extremely dangerous. Unfortunately, it wouldn't be enough to defeat the ninth person.

"Eleventh sword! Die!" shouted Lin Feng furiously. The gigantic word "blood" turned into a blood cage. It was filled with an infinite quantity of sword energy as it moved towards the ninth person.

The ninth person immediately moved backwards with his pure Qi whistling in the air. On his clothes appeared the word "blood" as well. Lin Feng had just attacked him for seventh time and all of them had reached him.

"Get lost!!!" The ninth person released a monstrous quantity of pure Qi which launched towards Lin Feng. Some rumbling sounds spread in the air as his pure Qi attacked the "blood" word, the pure Qi kept being destroyed by the blood energy.

However, the pure Qi finally managed to make the “blood” word disappear in the end.

“Huh?” The ninth person raised his head and saw Lin Feng in the air. His bloodthirsty sword was diffusing an extremely bright red light.

“Lacerate!” Lin Feng seemed like he was in fusion with his bloodthirsty sword. That was Lin Feng’s twelfth attack, with his bloodthirsty sword he had a special attack which consisted of thirteen strikes.

“Crrrrr.....” The sword seemed like it could annihilate anything, it passed through the ninth person’s pure Qi. Sword light surrounded him as Lin Feng’s sword started falling down, on top of that person’s head.

“How terrifying.” The eighth person’s heart was pounding, he was speechless. A group of people were arriving. There was an extremely beautiful woman in the group, she was stunning.

“Apart from her, there was another man closely following her.

“They’re coming...” The eighth person wasn’t ready. The seventh person couldn’t stop them and was immediately destroyed. The illusions were appearing and getting destroyed immediately each time.

“Boom! The eighth person suddenly couldn’t see anything anymore, only blackness. It was as if he had turned blind! Then several silhouettes passed him.

“Get lost!” shouted the ninth person furiously, he used all his strength to project Lin Feng backwards.

But while Lin Feng was being projected backwards, he abruptly stopped. He had crashed against someone behind him. They surprisingly had a soft chest. Lin Feng turned his head around and saw Tang You You.

Tang You You had arrived second and just in time.

Her beautiful eyes twinkled, she looked surprised. But then she said, “Let’s go, quickly!”

Then her body shook and a group of shadows appeared and attacked the ninth person. It didn’t take long for him to be buried under those silhouettes.

“I forgot that she had the thousand shadows technique.” thought Lin Feng. It wasn’t surprising that she was the second one, with her thousand clones she was obviously faster!

“Where are you going?” There was something even more terrifying than the ninth person at that moment... Lin Feng turned his head and saw Duan Wu Dao and Di Ling. Tang You You was trying to make them lose time.

The ninth person was constricted by the silhouettes, Lin Feng and Tang You You rushed forwards and ran towards the exit. They were using all their strength for this final dash.

“Boom boom!” Tang You You’s clones disappeared and some terrifying Qi emerged in the air. Lin Feng could sense that Qi, it came from Duan Wu Dao and Di Ling.

“Another hundred meters!” shouted Tang You You. They still had to run for a hundred meters, were they going to fail at the very last minute?

“Thousand clones!” shouted Tang You You furiously. Blood splashed out of her mouth as she increased her speed. Her clones were moving backwards to obstruct the way.

“Boom!” Her thousand clones were destroyed in a flash but that short time had been enough for Lin Feng and Tang You You to reach the exit.

In front of them there was a jade medal labeled from one to sixty-eight.

“TAKE THE FIRST ONE!” shouted Tang You You. Lin Feng didn’t have time to hesitate. He immediately grabbed the very first jade medal and left the Flood Dragon Cave!

Chapter 633: Drinking Alcohol Onstage

The crowd outside the Flood Dragon Cave was still waiting for someone to appear. And finally, a silhouette appeared. He jumped and immediately landed on the fighting stage outside the cave.

“Who??” People were staring at the silhouette. Who was the first one?

What they saw was a sick-looking person who was rather worn-out at the moment.

“Huh?” People were astonished. They had never thought that the first person wouldn’t be one of the eight. It wasn’t Di Ling, it wasn’t Duan Wu Dao, it wasn’t Jun Mo Xi... And it wasn’t Xue Sha either. They actually weren’t any of the eight most outstanding disciples! Surprisingly, it was Lin Feng, a cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer!

“How’s that possible?? How could he be the first one?”

The crowd was astonished, that was way too strange! Xue Wu Chang was astonished too! Even if Lin Feng had managed to pass all the tests, at best he should have finished eleventh or maybe even thirty-first... But in the end, he had come out first! It meant that he had arrived first on the bridge.

The first to come out was usually the one with the first jade medal, but Lin Feng should have the eleventh or even the thirty-

first jade medal. It was impossible for him to have the first jade medal.

“Pfeww...” The crowd saw another silhouette appear and they were astonished again.

People were constantly surprised. That competition was insane! The second person wasn't one of the people they had expected to see either. It was a beautiful girl, however, she was much stronger than Lin Feng. Even though they were surprised, they were still less surprised than when they saw Lin Feng come out!

“Are you alright??” asked Lin Feng to Tang You You. He didn't pay attention to anyone else. At that moment, he only cared about Tang You You who was looking pale with blood flowing out of her mouth. She had used the thousand clones too much and was suffering the kick-back.

“I'm alright, it was worth it anyways.” said Tang You You while smiling. She raised the second jade medal. Lin Feng had arrived first and Tang You You had arrived second... Those two would be able to select their opponents.

“You made great efforts.” said Lin Feng to Tang You You, his heart felt warm. If Tang You You hadn't been there he wouldn't have been able to pass through the ninth person's barrage. But Tang You You had been able to block him. And even worse, Lin Feng wouldn't have been able to compete with Duan Wu Dao or Di Ling in the passageway. He wouldn't have finished at all without her.

After all that, Tang You You still gave him the first medal... Even though the first and the second jade medals were the same in terms of advantages, the meaning was different.

“Boom boom!” Some terrifying Qi spread in the air and the crowd looked at the exit again. This time, finally, some people they had expected came out: Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao.

Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao looked furious. They glanced at Lin Feng and Tang You You coldly. They had stolen the first and second jade medals!

But immediately after, they relaxed again. They both walked towards the edge of the area and sat down cross-legged, as if the outside world had nothing to do with them.

In the end, they had also won. Even if Tang You You and Lin Feng had arrived first and second, strength was the most important thing now. They weren't going to drive themselves crazy for such a futile prize. Nobody could defeat them and nobody dared to try.

Xue Wu Chang was extremely curious, he looked at Lin Feng and asked, “Is your jade medal the twenty-first or the thirty-first?”

Lin Feng was stupefied, he looked surprised. Twenty-first? Thirty-first??

Even without Tang You You, he had managed to defeat eight people and could have finished eleventh... Of course, Xue Wu Chang didn't know about that. So the fact that he was asking was normal.

When the crowd heard him, they were confused! Was there a rule that they couldn't understand?

“You probably abandoned after the sixth or seventh person right? Or did you get the eleventh jade medal...??” asked Xue Wu Chang again, when he saw that Lin Feng wasn't saying anything.

“Abandoned after the sixth or seventh person...?” The crowd was astonished again. Lin Feng had come out first but he wasn't necessarily the first one?? How come?

Lin Feng and Tang You You glanced at each other and laughed. Tang You You looked amused. They looked like they were close friends. Lin Feng looked at Xue Wu Chang, raised his hand, and slowly opened his hand in which appeared a jade medal... On that shiny jade medal, there was one number.... ONE!

“FIRST????” Xue Wu Chang was absolutely astonished. He was staring at Lin Feng's jade medal. Lin Feng hadn't arrived twenty-first or thirty-first... Not even eleventh...

Lin Feng had taken the first medal...

The crowd felt normal again. Indeed, he was the first one to come

out and had taken the first medal.

“I knew it!” said Xiao Ya in the crowd while giggling. Po Jun and Han Man clenched their fists, he was the first one... Lin Feng was astonishing. Even though it was only the second round, Lin Feng could really be proud of himself!

“Interesting.” thought Yue Qing Shan while looking at that strange and mysterious young man who had said he was from Xue Yue... Surprisingly, he had finished first... Everybody remained surprised.

“I wonder where Yue Tian Ming is and which medal he will get.” thought Yue Qing Shan at that moment.

Besides, Yu Liu Shui and the people from Tian Feng were upset, they were furious. That Lin Feng was too lucky, after the competition they would strip him of his luck!

“Your name is Lin Feng, right?” asked Xue Wu Chang. Lin Feng nodded. He was surprised that the old man knew his name...

“Lin Feng, that jade key is extremely useful. You have to onto it dearly.” said Xue Wu Chang. Lin Feng realized something, that jade medal had incredible advantages?

Could it be used for anything else?

Xue Wu Chang was, on top of that, talking about a jade key now.

But before the second round, he had talked about jade medals and not jade keys...

A key...?

Those were keys?! Actually, they did have the shape of keys.

“I will.” said Lin Feng nodding. Xue Wu Chang didn’t add anything else.

Lin Feng glanced at Tang You You and they both moved aside.

“Will your injury affect your fighting abilities?” asked Lin Feng to Tang You You. She looked calm and serene. From outside, one couldn’t see that she was severely injured...

“I’m a member of the Tang Clan, do you remember?” said Tang You You smiling resplendently. Lin Feng was surprised and smiled. Indeed, he had forgotten, Tang You You was a lady from an incredible clan.

A few bottles of alcohol suddenly appeared.

“Do you like drinking Hot Unit?” asked Lin Feng, with a devilish smile. He then opened and chugged some Hot Unit.

Very quickly his pure Qi started flowing at full speed in his body. He was moaning with pleasure. The Hot Unit was flowing in his

body and increasing his body temperature. He felt great as his face turned red.

“How comfortable and pleasant!” said Lin Feng, breathing heavily. His Qi felt like it was burning.

“Is it that good?” said Tang You You in a low voice. She opened one too and immediately drank a bottle. Her face turned red as well.

“Cough cough!!!” Tang You You coughed while staring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was speechless, he hadn’t forced her to drink.

Hot Unit was good for him but it didn’t seem as good for Tang You You. If it had been good for her, the Tang Clan would have made her drink it before!

Chapter 634: The Eleven Best!

“Hot Unit is for men...” said Lin Feng when he saw that Tang You You’s face was red. He found her very beautiful at this moment and his heart started beating faster. He was starting to have some feelings for her.

“Maybe.” replied Tang You You, lowering her head.

The crowd looked at them both speechless. They looked really relaxed. Some of the most important and decisive battles of the Great Competition of Xue Yu were about to start and they were just sitting together and drinking alcohol.

However, Lin Feng and Tang You You had finished first and second. They had much less pressure now that they could choose their opponents instead of being targeted.

That way, with her strength, Tang You You might finish amongst the ten best ones.... However, Lin Feng’s cultivation level was too low... He had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer. Weak cultivators wouldn’t be able finish high up in the rankings against cultivators of the eighth and ninth layers. Lin Feng had the possibility to choose his opponent but they were going to be stronger and stronger during the competition. Eventually being able to choose his opponent would be useless.... At that point no matter who he chose he would lose to.

Of course, if people had seen Lin Feng in the evil area and then on the bridge in the Flood Dragon Cave.. Then they wouldn’t have

thought the same way about him.

Even though Lin Feng had been lucky in the Flood Dragon Cave, would someone so weak have been able to arrive first on the bridge? Besides, he had also managed to defeat the first eight cultivators on the bridge and move on to the ninth person.

Although Tang You You had helped him at the very end, the rest of the challenges were passed by himself and only himself.

“You are drinking alcohol and not inviting me?!” said a voice in the distance. Lin Feng who was drinking a cup raised his head and saw Jun Mo Xi slowly walking towards them.

Jun Mo Xi had come out fifth and had obtained the fifth jade key. He was very surprised to see that Lin Feng and Tang You You had managed to finish in the top five! Amongst the five best, there were Lin Feng, Tang You You, Duan Wu Dao and Jun Mo Xi himself. He was very happy to see that Dragon Mountain was dazzling this time.

“Just invite yourself, haha!” Lin Feng said while laughing. Jun Mo Xi sat down with them, grabbed a flask of Hot Unit and started drinking.

“Boom!” A terrifying Qi emerged in the air. It was Xue Sha.

Xue Sha was the sixth one but he was releasing some terrifying Qi and was glaring at Jun Mo Xi.

“Huh?” The crowd was confused when they saw Xue Sha stare at Jun Mo Xi that way. It didn’t seem like he was joking, it seemed like something had just happened.

“It seems like Xue Sha is angry at Jun Mo Xi...” thought the crowd. Jun Mo Xi looked unperturbed and serene, he didn’t look surprised either when Xue Sha came out looking furious and ice-cold. His hair looked extremely messy and his pale face particularly cold.

It seemed like Jun Mo Xi made him angry... But the crowd had a strange feeling.

Jun Mo Xi wasn’t weak and gave people an enigmatic feeling. He didn’t look arrogant or conceited. He was always free and unrestrained, walking around as if he had been having a leisure walk.

“What did you do to him?” asked Lin Feng looking amused. He was very curious.

“I attacked him and Yu Mo by surprise.” said Jun Mo Xi while laughing. As expected, Yu Mo then came out too and he looked furious, he also glared down Jun Mo Xi. He had obtained the seventh jade key.

“Ehh....” When Lin Feng heard Jun Mo Xi, he was speechless. The crowd was also astonished. He had attacked them by surprise

“That guy.....” Jun Mo Xi was openly admitting such a thing. The crowd was in disbelief, Jun Mo Xi was really a strange person.

“You did what I wish I could do, let’s toast to your good health!” said Lin Feng while laughing wholeheartedly. Xue Sha and Yu Mo were astonished as they watched Lin Feng, what was going on?

Lin Feng had come out before them?

“He got one of the last jade medals though, right?” asked Xue Sha while looking at Xue Wu Chang.

“He got the very first one.” replied Xue Wu Chang. Xue Sha’s face suddenly drastically changed.

Lin Feng had obtained the very first jade medal??

Xue Sha and Yu Mo were astonished. He would be able to choose his opponents which meant that Lin Feng wasn’t going to fight against them... They wouldn’t be able to kill him at that stage of the competition.

“If not now, we will get him later...” Both Xue Sha and Yu Mo didn’t understand how Lin Feng had obtained the first jade key....

“I hope you won’t run into me later on.” said Xue Sha again, coldly. He then moved aside and sat down. Yu Mo did the same.

“It’s so boring to wait, we’re lucky to have some drinks!” said Jun Mo Xi smiling. Lin Feng and Jun Mo Xi seemed to be even closer than before. Perhaps it had to do with the results of the race.

In Dragon Mountain, Jun Mo Xi was the most outstanding young man of the country. He didn’t stay with the masses but now he was always with Tang You You and Lin Feng, and they even seemed to be very good friends. It’s true that he is more open to other people than most, but he didn’t need to think meticulously about his behavior when he could do as he wished.

“Unfortunately, we don’t have enough drinks.” whispered Lin Feng as if he had been talking to himself.

Tang You You turned her head and glanced at Lin Feng, she then threw her ring at him and said, “There are all sorts of liquors inside. Just help yourself.”

“Hehe.” Lin Feng scratched his head and smiled looking embarrassed. That alcohol was expensive, he was feeling a bit embarrassed.

Jun Mo Xi glanced at Lin Feng, he found him funny.

In a flash, many bottles appeared making people drool. That alcohol smelt invigorating.

“Lin Feng, try and guess who the eighth one will be.” said Jun

Mo Xi at that moment, drinking more alcohol.

“I guess Qi Qing Ling Xiao.”

“Why?”

“Just a feeling, it won’t necessarily be him though. I’m not really sure.” said Lin Feng and then drank another sip.

“Maybe.” said Jun Mo Xi before adding, “It doesn’t depend on strength anyways. Everyone has their own strengths. For example, Qi Qing Ling Xiao is an expert at using swords. Even though I came out before him, he might still be stronger than me and could defeat me.”

“You came out after Di Ling but maybe he’s not stronger than you either.” said Lin Feng which surprised Jun Mo Xi and then they laughed together.

At that moment, an extremely sharp Qi emerged in the air. The crowd saw two silhouettes come out of the Flood Dragon Cave. Just like Lin Feng had guessed, one of them was Qi Qing Ling Xiao and the other one was Liu Yu Qin Yu Xiao Xiao.

“Are they lovers?” asked Lin Feng.

“It is said that Qi Qing Jian Ling Xiao is interested in Yu Xiao Xiao but that Yu Xiao Xiao is ice-cold and expressionless. Of course, I don’t know the precise details.” replied Jun Mo Xi.

“Oh.” Lin Feng nodded. Qi Qing Jian Ling Xiao had obtained the eighth jade key and Yu Xiao Xiao the ninth one.

Very quickly, the top ten appeared. Ku Yao Tong the Dead Tree was the tenth one out. The eight most outstanding geniuses of Xue Yu had all come out but they were not first or second.

The first and the second had been really unexpected, Lin Feng and Tang You You.

“The next one will be from Dragon Mountain.” said Jun Mo Xi confidently. Lin Feng was surprised. He then watched the entrance to check if Jun Mo Xi’s guess was right. After a short time a person with a magnificent smile appeared, it was Qing Meng Xin. She looked beautiful as she could make men’s hearts shake.

Chapter 635: The End of the Second Round

Lin Feng was surprised. Jun Mo Xi had guessed right for the eleventh person, it was Qing Meng Xing.

“How could you be so sure?” asked Lin Feng.

“Because Qing Meng Xin is like me, she knows the thousand dream shadows. So with her strength I was convinced she would come out now.” said Tang You You not giving time for Jun Mo Xi to reply.

“The thousand dream shadows...” Lin Feng was surprised. Indeed, in Celestial River he had already seen a woman use it that used to stay with Lan Jiao. That attack not only belonged to the Tang Clan but the Cosmic Pavilion as well.

“Are the thousand shadows technique and the thousand dream shadows different?” asked Lin Feng. Generally speaking, asking other people about their skills and techniques was impolite, especially during the Great Competition of Xue Yu.... Tang You You and him might end up as opponents at some point. Lin Feng knew her and was making friends but he didn't know much about her. However, Lin Feng was still asking that question. That was a bit audacious and rude, however, he didn't seem to realize that his question was impolite, He was the type of person that didn't care about formalities.

Of course, not caring about those things meant that he considered her as a good friend, and that he trusted her.

“The thousand dream shadows creates illusions which invade the atmosphere, you don’t know which ones are true and which ones are fake. The thousand shadows creates clones with real bodies, it uses the power of the soul and belongs to my clan, the Tang Clan. You need to have the blood of the Tang Clan to be able to use it.” explained Tang You You, she wasn’t hiding anything from Lin Feng. However, he felt extremely sad for her.

“What you mean is that when you use it, if your clones get destroyed, you get injured?” whispered Lin Feng. A moment before, Tang You You had used her clones to open the way on the bridge and she had done Lin Feng could pass. She even used the attack twice! They had all been destroyed so Tang You You must be injured.

Tang You You didn’t reply, that silence was proving that Lin Feng was right.

“And then you say you’re fine... Your soul got injured, your alcohol won’t be enough to cure you!” said Lin Feng blaming her for telling him that she was fine.

Jun Mo Xi was looking at them and asked, “Are you guys dating?”

“Ehhh...” Lin Feng was speechless... That guy thought he was funny.

“Blood soul grass! Lin Feng suddenly remembered something

when he looked at Jun Mo Xi. He then shook his hand and some red and shiny grass appeared. That was very beneficial for people's souls.

“Huh?” Jun Mo Xi looked at Lin Feng and was stupefied. The first time he had seen Lin Feng, Jun Mo Xi's servant had fought against him over that grass.

Many people looked over at them, Lin Feng had some blood soul grass.... That stuff was extremely precious and it was very beneficial for people's souls. A lot of people around Lin Feng looked greedy all of a sudden.

“What are you doing?” said Tang You You. She obviously knew what Lin Feng was holding.

“It will make you feel better.” S=said Lin Feng while giving it to her. “I still need some so I can only give you half of it. Have a try.”

Tang You You's eyes were twinkling, she remained silent but then Jun Mo Xi said, “He's giving it to you, just take it.”

She stretched her beautiful, slim hand and took the grass. Her beautiful eyes were twinkling, she then put the grass in her mouth, chewed and swallowed it. Immediately her soul felt better. That grass was indeed very useful for people's souls.

“You really obtained some?” said Qing Meng Xin at that moment while walking towards them. Last time, she was the one who had

told Lin Feng to go to the Cosmic Market to get some.

Qing Meng Xin's sentence also proved something else. She was telling Lin Feng that she knew his secret, that he was the real Lin Feng.

"Indeed, thank you again." said Lin Feng, smiling again. Tang You You and Qing Meng Xin were really nice.

"You surprisingly gave her some of the most important ingredient of the pills you want to concoct, I am jealous." said Qing Meng Xin jokingly. When Tang You You heard her, she looked at Lin Feng and asked, "What pills do you want to concoct?"

"Divine water pills. I need to save one for my friend. Don't worry, I gave you half of the grass so I still have enough for my pills, no problem." explained Lin Feng while shaking his head.

"Divine water pills to save someone!" Tang You You was stupefied. Lin Feng wanted to concoct some pills to save someone's life and she had eaten one of the main ingredients.

She lowered her head and remained silent.

Qing Meng Xin sat down with them and asked, "What jade keys did you guys get?"

Lin Feng opened his hand and Qing Meng Xin was flabbergasted, the first jade key!

“It actually belongs to Tang You You but she gave it to me, she took the second one instead.” said Lin Feng. Qing Meng Xin was even more astonished.

Lin Feng had taken the first and Tang You You the second one??

She was extremely surprised by the results of the race.

“As expected, the thousand shadows of the Tang Clan is monstrously powerful...” whispered Qing Meng Xin and then she looked at Jun Mo Xi.

“I got the fifth one...” said Jun Mo Xi smiling. Qing Meng Xin was more and more surprised. The first, the second, the fifth... Duan Wu Dao had also finished in the first ones, the results of the race were great.

“Don’t choose me as your opponent guys!” joked Qing Meng Xin, she looked so beautiful.

She didn’t want to fight against the eight most dazzling geniuses, and especially not against Lin Feng or Tang You You. But she was very surprised by the results. The first time she had seen Lin Feng she hadn’t thought that he was that strong but here he is holding the first key.

She didn’t think that Lin Feng had been lucky though. Luck might have played a certain role during the second round but that

key also required strength. Lin Feng wouldn't have been able to obtain the first key only relying on luck.

“Maybe Lin Feng will surprise us even more later on...” thought Qing Meng Xin. The Great Competition of Xue Yu was always full of surprises. This time, Lin Feng might become an unexpected winner...

Therefore, she didn't want to fight against him, especially that early.

Time was passing slowly as more people finished. The first thing people were wondering when they came out was that they would have to be careful. So many others had come out before them so they would end up being chosen by strong cultivators.

Lin Feng also paid attention to the people who were coming out. Yue Tian Ming had finished twenty-first, Nie Yun from Tian Feng had finished eighteenth, and the two other people from Tian Feng had finished fortieth and fiftieth. Lin Feng wouldn't care about those two.

Jian Chen had finished twenty-fourth.

Lin Feng was astonished by Yun Fei Yang though... After the fiftieth came out, Yun Fei Yang walked out of the cave slowly. He didn't look ashamed at all as he walked towards them, sat down and drank alcohol. He looked natural, free and unrestrained. Lin Feng was speechless.

Finally, after the sixty-fourth candidate finished, nobody else came out.

The four others would never come out, they had died in the Flood Dragon Cave. Since the beginning, eighty people had died already.

Some people were sad about that, of course. But their sadness was mixed with excitement, the second round was over. This time, the third round would be different from the two previous ones, this time strength mattered most!

Chapter 636: Immobile Like A Mountain

Xue Wu Chang looked at the group of geniuses, there were sixty-four all standing on the fighting stage. Some stood alone while others had joined groups.

Surprisingly, the biggest group was the one composed of Lin Feng and his friends. There were five people drinking and chatting. The others were different, they looked serious and solemn. They weren't as relaxed as Lin Feng and his friends.

“Congratulations on making it so far.” said Xue Wu Chang. In a flash, everybody's attention was on Xue Wu Chang, even those who were usually sluggish and negligent.

The last round of the Great Competition of Xue Yu is about to start... Real battles...

“Now everybody, let's climb out Flood Dragon Cave.” said Xue Wu Chang while pointing at the exit. Even though there was only one exit, at the top of it, there was enough space to accommodate sixty-four people.

Silhouettes flickered and they all climbed onto the tail of the Flood Dragon Cave. Then they sat down cross-legged.

“Let's go,” said Jun Mo Xi to Lin Feng and their other friends. Lin Feng downed a flask of Hot Unit and sharp lights twinkled in his eyes.

The last round of the Great Competition of Xue Yu was about to start.

Lin Feng shook his arm and the bottles of alcohol on the floor disappeared. Lin Feng and his friends stood up and jumped onto the Flood Dragon. They were waiting for Xue Wu Chang.

“Now, show your keys so that everyone can see them.” said Xue Wu Chang, and everybody obeyed. Xue Wu Chang wanted to see the numbers at first glance. Even though those numbers didn’t reflect people’s strength, it still gave everybody an indication about their potential.

“Who’s the first one?” Many people who had come out after didn’t know who the first one was. They were curious to find out who it was.

“Huh?” several people frowned. They first looked at Di Ling but it wasn’t him. Then they looked at Duan Wu Dao, Jun Mo Xi... They were third, fourth and fifth...

“Where are the first and the second??” some of them asked getting impatient.

“There!” someone shouted as they found Lin Feng, they were astonished. Everyone looked at the key and then raised their heads to look at the face of the person holding it. Most were astonished but some looked particularly excited though.

“Lin Feng?”

Lin Feng was full of vitality but had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer.

When the crowd saw that people were looking at Lin Feng mockingly, they also burst into laughter. How could they not be amused?

“What a lucky guy! Such a piece of trash surprisingly managed to obtain the key!” said someone who was laughing mockingly. Lin Feng turned his head and saw one of the seven envoys, he had the fifty-eighth key in his hand... But he was still making fun of Lin Feng because of his cultivation level. He was trying to make himself look better by making fun of the first place to make up for his near-last place key.

“End of the rankings... Sixth one from the bottom.” said Lin Feng indifferently, and then he didn’t pay attention to that person anymore. People from Tian Feng were astonished, especially the third envoy. Lin Feng had just humiliated them!

“Piece of trash! If you’re brave, choose me then!” said the third envoy from Tian Feng coldly. He was the sixth one from the end but he wanted to prove to everyone that he was strong. Lin Feng was the first one, so if he killed Lin Feng he would prove to everyone that he was strong.

But Lin Feng ignored him, he despised him.

After the crowd got over their surprise that Lin Feng had obtained the first key, they looked for the second one. There was a beautiful woman on his side, Tang You You. People were astonished again. Surprisingly, the first and second positions weren't held by the eight most outstanding geniuses of the competition...

“Alright. Let's start the third round. I would like to remind you that it is here where you will be able to dazzle. Even if you didn't get a good key, you can still finish as a dazzling participant. You will also be able to obtain some treasures from Shen Gong if you live. If you die... then you won't obtain anything.” said Xue Wu Chang slowly. Everyone looked even more impatient. Indeed, being able to be on the fighting stage at the Great Competition of Xue Yu was an honor, a glorious moment. But knowing that they would also obtain some kind of treasure from it.. Shen Gong would be good to them.

“If you finish higher up in the rankings you will obtain even more amazing treasures.” added Xue Wu Chang, making everybody feel even more determined.

“Alright, let's start now! Lin Feng, you're first!” said Xue Wu Chang, nodding at Lin Feng. In a flash, Lin Feng jumped in the middle of the stage.

“Lin Feng, you obtained the first key so you are the first one to choose. You can challenge anyone except for those that finished in the top ten.”

The crowd was focused on Lin Feng. They were impatient to see who he was going to choose. With his strength, he was probably going to choose one of the worst ones.

Lin Feng glanced at the crowd, there weren't many people who were afraid of him. Actually, many people hoped to be chosen, they all wanted to defeat the one who had obtained the first key. That would be a prestigious victory.

Finally, Lin Feng looked at the third envoy who was also staring him down. The third envoy wasn't weak at all, and he took the initiative to stand up. He was smiling coldly. He was already getting ready to fight.

"So many people want to fight against me because I have the first key right?" said Lin Feng upset. He then looked at the third envoy and said, "Since you really want to fight, just come over then."

The third envoy smiled and jumped forwards, he would face Lin Feng.

"You piece of shit. You're really a piece of trash. I will show you how a real man fights!" said the third envoy coldly. Lin Feng slowly raised his head and looked at Xue Wu Chang, "Mister, can we start fighting?"

"No need to look at me. You are on the stage, just start." said Xue Wu Chang.

Lin Feng slightly nodded, the third envoy looked prouder and prouder each second.

The third envoy immediately jumped into the air and threw himself at Lin Feng. There was an illusion around his body that looked like an elephant. That third envoy was a member of the Wan Xiang Sect.

He had the ten thousand elephants skill as well and was releasing a monstrous amount of wild energy. He looked furious, staring at Lin Feng in a bestial way.

“You will not withstand a single attack, the strength of my ten thousand elephants will crush you! First one? Ridiculous, you piece of shit!” A terrifying energy flowed out of his mouth. He was moving towards Lin Feng with the appearance of an elephant. Around him were strong winds making Lin Feng’s clothes flutter in the wind. Lin Feng looked like a leaf about to move in the wind.

“DIE!!!”

“BOOM!” The strength of ten thousand elephants crashed onto Lin Feng’s body. A monstrous wind invaded the entire atmosphere, the crowd already had the impression that they could see Lin Feng crushed under that strength.

However, a monstrously loud buzzing sound spread in the air suddenly. The third envoy’s body abruptly stopped when it collided against Lin Feng.

The strong winds were emitting whistling sounds but Lin Feng was absolutely immobile, like a mountain. He looked calm and serene looking at the elephant-like third envoy.

“Boom!”

The crowd was astonished, especially the middle-aged man of the Wan Xiang Sect who immediately stood up. His heart was pounding while he watched Lin Feng. What was going on?

“Huh?” The third envoy looked stunned too. He slowly raised his head and looked at Lin Feng. His fists landed on Lin Feng’s chest but Lin Feng was still standing there. Looking calm, serene, and peaceful, like a deity.

That move made the third envoy’s heart palpitate violently. He then started quivering with fear. His ten thousand elephants attack seemed like it had been useless!

His heart felt like it was melting at that moment, he was terrified.

Chapter 637: One Death And One Coward

“How’s that possible?” thought the third envoy, he didn’t understand what was going on.

Lin Feng had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer but his corporeal body was already so strong. However, the third envoy had broken through to the sixth Xuan Qi layer performed an amazing attack. Even someone of the seventh or eighth Xuan Qi layer would find it difficult to resist his ten thousand elephants attack. Some have already died by that attack.

But Lin Feng resisted, not moving a single iota. Like a mountain, he was extremely calm and serene. His corporeal body was way too strong.

Lin Feng’s strength of the Heruka could rotate six thousand times. With his body of the Heruka now and his indestructible golden body skill. Besides, he had other powerful skills too. Lin Feng’s body was monstrously resistant and solid.

He didn’t know how strong he was himself but what he knew was that the third envoy was extremely weak.

“You are so weak.” said Lin Feng calmly while looking at the third envoy. Weak?

“If I’m a piece of shit, what are you?” asked Lin Feng to the third envoy who was speechless. He had thought that with his ten thousand elephants skills, he would manage to crush Lin Feng

instantly. What would he do now?

Lin Feng was a piece of shit, a piece of trash? What about him then? Lin Feng hadn't moved of a single iota after his strongest attack.

“Being able to participate at the Great Competition of Xue Yu is an honor, a privilege. Besides, we have the opportunity to receive some treasures from Shen Gong which will help us improve our understanding of cultivation and thus our strength.” explained Lin Feng slowly, which puzzled the third envoy. Why was Lin Feng telling him that?

“Unfortunately, you will not have have the chance to enjoy that glory and those privileges. You are too weak and now so I will kill you.” continued Lin Feng slowly which made the third envoy's heart start pounding violently. Lin Feng was going to kill him!!

Lin Feng put his hand on the third envoy's shoulder. He wouldn't be able to escape, that hand was way too powerful.

Lin Feng's hand became extremely hot as several flames appeared on it. Quickly the third envoy looked terrified as a gigantic fire appeared all around his body. He started burning alive.

“I will burn you to death, that is what someone with an ice-cold heart like yours deserves.” said Lin Feng while slowly pulling his hand away from him. The third envoy started shouting bloodcurdling shrieks. He was going to burn to death. He wanted to extinguish the fire but it didn't work, that fire seemed like it had

become a part of his body. It continued burning without interruption. Then, he turned into ashes and disappeared with the wind.

Lin Feng had killed him! The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng had burnt the third envoy to death. That battle had been amazing!

“Boom!” A terrifying energy surrounded Lin Feng’s body. He slowly turned around and looked at the crowd, more precisely at the middle-aged man from Tian Feng.

“You dared kill him!”

“Moron.” said Lin Feng, then he turned around and ignored him. He went back to his seat.

People from Tian Feng wanted to kill him but it wasn’t so easy. Previously, the strong cultivators from Tian Feng had almost killed him. After that, Lin Feng had promised himself that those people were the first ones he would kill. Now he was just keeping promises.

Now that middle-aged man dared get angry at Lin Feng for having killed the third envoy. What a moron.

Moron?

The strong cultivator of the Wan Xiang Sect was astonished, he wanted to slaughter Lin Feng.

“Alright. Get ready for the second battle.” said Xue Wu Chang, pointing at Tang You You.

Tang You You jumped forwards and without hesitation, she pointed at the second envoy from Tian Feng. He had the forty-third key.

“You.” said Tang You You, he was astonished and pulled a long face.

Tang You You was helping Lin Feng once again. She wanted to kill him.

Tang You You wasn't like Lin Feng, even though she had obtained the second jade key, nobody was surprised because she had broken through to the very top of the seventh Xuan Qi layer. The second envoy or even Nie Yun would have no chance against her.

The middle-aged man of Tian Feng was speechless and furious, the second envoy was going to die.

It was that simple...

From the seven envoys, only one would be left...? Nie Yun? Tang You You was Lin Feng's friend so she wouldn't let them off.

“Are you proud?” said Lin Feng while looking at the middle-aged man. Lin Feng found Tang You You adorable.

“If you are scared, you can give up but you must give up all the treasures.” said Xue Wu Chang when he saw that the second envoy was terrified.

If he fought, he would lose everything and he would be humiliated.

But if Tang You You wanted to kill him, he would probably die there.

His thoughts were chaotic at that moment and after a while he decided, “I give up.”

He looked extremely weak and terrified.

Being able to participate at the Great Competition of Xue Yu was an honor. It would have been prestigious to go back to Tian Feng and brag about it but now he had given up. He wouldn't be able to tell anyone about the battles of the competition... Because he had been too scared and had given up.

He wouldn't enjoy the glory of having participated.

“Coward, piss off then.” said Xue Wu Chang despisingly. He had managed to make it so far and was now giving up, such people were cowards.

When the second envoy heard Xue Wu Chang, he was astonished. The old man despised him... And everybody else did. What a horrible humiliation!

He then started walking away and left.

Lin Feng looked at the second envoy in a calm and serene way. The second envoy had acted so aggressively and arrogantly before, but now he was giving up so easily...

Tang You You moved back next to Lin Feng.

During the first battle, one of them had died.

...and the second battle had never taken place because a coward had given up.

People were really surprised.

The third battle was extremely fast, Di Ling had crushed his opponent in one punch.

All the battles of the eight most outstanding geniuses of Xue Yu were that way. They could easily crush the weakest ones.

Lin Feng paid particular attention to Yue Tian Ming and Wu Qing who won though.

Those two people had broken through to the very top of the sixth Xuan Qi layer and were about to break through to the seventh. They had all become much stronger since they left for Dragon Mountain. Yu Qing Shan and Teng Wu Yao felt gratified and were smiling resplendently. Once in awhile, they were glancing back to the other as if they had been battling too.

Yue Qing Shan was finally convinced that Yue Tian Ming was stronger than Wu Qing. His grandson would also surpass him, he would only need a few years.

But Teng Wu Qing was also convinced that Wu Qing was as strong as Yue Tian Ming and would soon become stronger than him.

Lin Feng didn't care about those things, he knew that Yue Tian Ming and Wu Qing would lose against him at some point.

The one who had obtained the twenty-eighth jade key challenged Yun Fei Yang.

Lin Feng glanced at him, the one who had the twenty-eighth jade key had broken through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer. Many people had died during the first rounds but he had survived. In Xue Yue, a cultivator of the seventh Xuan Qi layer was already considered strong. However, at the competition, he had only managed to obtain the twenty-eighth key and everybody was extremely young here.

Yun Fei Yang had broken through to the sixth Xuan Qi layer after the first round in the evil area. He had probably obtained some incredible treasure that had helped him.

Yun Fei Yang might surprise everyone once again.

He took out a flask of alcohol and downed it. Then he walked towards the middle of the fighting stage sluggishly.

Yun Fei Yang didn't look scared at all.

Chapter 638: Cosmic Force

The opponent was surprised when he saw how sluggish Yun Fei Yang looked. It seemed like Yun Fei Yang was acting different.

He wasn't like those who had obtained the last jade keys, they usually looked weak and scared. They lacked self-confidence.

However, Yun Fei Yang was different. His eyes were twinkling, he looked calm and unperturbed, almost peaceful.

He had ranked fiftieth this time and didn't look scared at all, he just looked calm and unrestrained.

The opponent looked at Yun Fei Yang in a strange way and said, "I am stronger than you by one cultivation layer and during the second round I finished twenty-eighth. You will not have a single chance of touching me if we fight. I suggest you give up."

The opponent was trying to discourage him, he didn't want to fight.

The Great Competition of Xue Yu was getting more and more complicated so not fighting was a good way of reserving strength and energy.

"Why are you not giving up then?" asked Yun Fei Yang. The other was stupefied, "My cultivation level is higher than yours, why would I give up?"

“The cultivation level doesn’t necessarily mean everything.” said Yun Fei Yang indifferently. Immediately after, he jumped forwards and the atmosphere started shaking.

“What’s going on?” The crowd was astonished. Their hearts started palpitating, things looked dangerous.

Yun Fei Yang’s opponent was astonished too, his heart was shaking at the same pace as Yun Fei Yang’s steps. The sensation was becoming more and more intense.

“The cultivation level is only one aspect of your actual strength, physical strength is also important.” said Yun Fei Yang. Then he started running, his feet were bombarding the floor of the fighting stage. Some Qi emerged out of his body, it seemed like lights were appearing all around.

At the same time, some Qi moved towards his opponent.

“The force of the planet is amazing. When practicing cultivation you can condense force, borrow it from the earth to perform energy attacks. Your kind of force is only a little help.” said Yun Fei Yang slowly. He then slowed down too. He was using his feet and force to make the opponent’s entire body shake violently. The opponent felt extremely oppressed.

Yun Fei Yang’s voice was resonating in people’s brains and hearts. Everybody’s hearts were beating faster and faster. Yun Fei Yang’s Qi was gaining in intensity, there were massive amounts of

forces all around him.

Lin Feng was watching Yun Fei Yang, now he looked much stronger than the last time in Dragon Mountain.

Yun Fei Yang's Qi was becoming terrifying, it seemed like it was becoming a person in itself.

"Force can be very beneficial, enough so to make the difference." said Yun Fei Yang. He had a very deep understanding of cultivation!

Yun Fei Yang was facing an extremely strong cultivator, that opponent didn't feel like fighting anymore... It seemed like his confidence and determination had been crushed.

His heart kept pounding, so loudly that he could even hear his own heartbeat mixed in with Yun Fei Yang's voice.

"Force is an aspect of cultivation, it belongs to the planet. One's own body, strength, etc. can become force, and then it can turn into the abstruse significance." continued Yun Fei Yang. The abstruse significance was the step after level nine intent. Everybody knew about that.

Yun Fei Yang was able to explain intent and the abstruse significance quite well.

Xue Wu Chang looked surprised, sharp lights were twinkling in

his eyes. He was fixated on Yun Fei Yang.

“What a real genius.” thought Xue Wu Chang at that moment. Yun Fei Yang was surprising. Yun Fei Yang’s words helped everybody understand those concepts better, however, they knew that being able to walk in perfect cadence with those forces was extremely hard. It was terrifying. He was in perfect harmony with cosmic waves.

Yun Fei Yang had reached such a deep level of understanding, he was indeed very talented.

“As expected, there are real geniuses here.” thought Xue Wu Chang, smiling. Yun Fei Yang had to keep living, people like him were extremely rare.

Everyone’s opinions were changing. They didn’t think that Yun Fei Yang was going to lose anymore, he looked like a winner. Even if his cultivation level was lower than that of his opponent.

“Of course, force has limits and people’s strength too. However, on the great path of cultivation, there are might not be limits.”

“Boom!” Yun Fei Yang’s step made the entire atmosphere and everyone’s hearts shak. Even though Yun Fei Yang had only stepped on the floor very lightly..

Each time Yun Fei Yang walks, there is force. He tries to understand it better with each step.

At that moment, his force was becoming more and more intense. There were even some strong winds surrounding around him. Yun Fei Yang's opponent was already in the middle of those winds.

"Therefore, strength is good but it doesn't mean everything. Some other factors can influence your cultivation." finished Yun Fei Yang. The cadence of his steps was becoming more and more intense.

"Boom!" Everyone was hypnotized by Yun Fei Yang's steps. Each time he walked, their body would start shaking.

This time, Yun Fei Yang didn't stop. The atmosphere was shaking more and more violently, it seemed like it was going to explode. Everywhere, there was only his force.

Suddenly, the cultivator of the seventh Xuan Qi layer was projected away in the air. Blood was splashing out of his mouth.

He then crashed onto the ground with a muffled sound. The crowd was fixedly staring at that cultivator of the seventh Xuan Qi layer, he had lost.

Yun Fei Yang had broken through to the sixth Xuan Qi layer, but with those steps he made his opponent fly away in defeat.

He had only needed a few, very simple steps to make everybody's hearts pound, nothing else. Nobody would ever forget Yun Fei

Yang.

That move had been too astonishing.

Yun Fei Yang looked calm and serene, just like a moment before. Nobody knew what he was thinking but he didn't look arrogant at all.

He didn't try to humiliate his opponent or anything, he just asked, "Do you want to continue the battle?"

That person was crawling on the floor, with his blood flowing out of his mouth. He shook his head and said, "No need, you won. That was a very good battle and a great victory for you, I really need to practice more. Thank you for what you taught me."

"Don't worry. I'm off." said Yun Fei Yang, nodding and then moving back to his original place.

"What a mysterious and enigmatic guy." said Lin Feng while smiling. He was really astonished. Lin Feng also wanted to understand the concept of force even more.

Lin Feng wanted to understand that cadence and harmony between Yun Fei Yang's steps and the cosmic waves. Everybody was staring at Yun Fei Yang in a different way. That guy was an authentic genius!

"Am I mysterious?" said Yun Fei Yang while shrugging and

smiling. Yun Fei Yang had won the battle, even though his key was one of the last ones he had proved to everybody that it didn't mean anything. His victory had been dazzling!

Chapter 639: Astonishing Choice

Against all expectations, the following battles were extremely equitable because they were in the middle of the rankings. The battles were very interesting to watch.

All sorts of people were winning and losing, from the middle of the rankings as well as from the bottom. In the end, thirty-two battles finished.

Sixty-four people had fought, thirty-two had been eliminated.

Those who had been eliminated were extremely disappointed but they knew that it was because they weren't strong enough.

Of course, they were still alive so there was still some hope. Amongst the thirty-two people who had been eliminated, two had died and one had escaped. There was no hope for them anymore. Fighting had taught the losers a lot, they had understood why strong cultivators were strong, what made them strong. They had lost but Shen Gong would still honor their presence.

That mysterious Shen Gong would probably grant people with incredible treasures which would help them increase their cultivation level.

That's what the losers were hoping for. Of course, thinking that way was also a way of comforting themselves for having lost. After all, they had already been eliminated... Their dream of making it to the last battles had disappeared.

Xue Wu Chang looked at the geniuses, slightly smiled and said, “Have a rest for twelve hours and get ready for the next series of battles.”

The second series of battles would be everybody’s second.

Most people in the crowd closed their eyes or practiced some skills when they heard him. They either practiced cultivation, or were waiting for their pure Qi stocks to be filled up again.

Other’s silhouettes flickered and they landed in the middle of the common crowd to talk to people from their clans or sects. They were consulting their relatives to seek advice about who they should challenge for the next battle.

Lin Feng and his friends surprisingly sat down and kept drinking, they looked quite relaxed.

Lin Feng looked at Yun Fei Yang, smiled and said, “Yun Fei Yang, tell me, are you not hiding your real cultivation level?”

Yun Fei Yang seemed like he had some secrets. The first time Lin Feng had met him, he had only broken through to the fourth Xuan Qi layer. But then he had very quickly broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer.

However, during the first round in the evil area, he had already broken through to the sixth Xuan Qi layer... He was becoming

stronger and stronger extremely fast, too fast to be true.

Lin Feng was even more intrigued because Yun Fei Yang had an extremely high power of understanding and monstrous strength, but he had ranked fiftieth during the second round.... How strange! He only obtained the fiftieth key.

Lin Feng didn't believe that Yun Fei Yang had only broken through to the sixth Xuan Qi layer... He believed that his cultivation level was even higher than that?!

“Guess.” Said Yun Fei Yang.

“I can't see it but I have the feeling that you're much stronger.” said Lin Feng, looking over to Jun Mo Xi and Tang You You.

“I don't know.” said Tang You You.

Jun Mo Xi's eyes were twinkling, he was looking at Yun Fei Yang in a strange way. Yun Fei Yang and Lin Feng were very similar, they looked insignificant, calm, not arrogant, serene. They didn't draw people's attention too much, but in fact, each time they fought they were astonishing.

“You are both so evil!” joked Jun Mo Xi. It seemed like he agreed with Lin Feng about Yun Fei Yang, however, Jun Mo Xi also had doubts when it came to Lin Feng. He doubted that Lin Feng was showing his full strength.

“What does that have to do with me?” teased Lin Feng.

“Indeed, it has nothing to do with you. You’ve only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer but you obtained the first jade key. You finished even before those cultivators of the eighth and ninth Xuan Qi layer!” whispered Jun Mo Xi. Lin Feng smiled from the corner of his mouth, he liked to tease his friends too.

Half a day passed very quickly.

“Alright. It’s time to continue.” said Xue Wu Chang. Everybody suddenly looked solemn and serious. They all moved to the Flood Dragon Statue again, they were psychologically preparing themselves. It was about to start again... From those thirty-two people, only sixteen would be left after this series of battles.

Those sixteen people would be able to continue...

After those sixteen people’s battles, there would only be eight left. Then the top ten would appear, and more particularly the top eight.

The most dazzling young people of the Great Competition of Xue Yu would finally be recognized. Being one of the eight most dazzling cultivators of the competition would be an extreme glory and honor for them. They would go back to their country, one of the thirteen countries of Xue Yu, and would be recognized as incredible cultivators. At the same time, the competition was a great way to become stronger. After competing their cultivation level would be much higher. It would increase their self-

confidence, determination and willpower.

Of course, it wasn't over yet so it was useless to dream about those things. First they had to win their next two battles, which wouldn't be that easy at all.

Apart from Lin Feng and Yun Fei Yang and another cultivator of the sixth Xuan Qi layer, all the others had broken at least through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer, at least.

Apart from strength and abilities, luck also played a role. For some people, being able to choose their opponents was really a great luck.

“Lin Feng, it's your turn.” said Xue Wu Chang. Lin Feng was, after all, the “first” of them.

Lin Feng slightly nodded and jumped forwards. He was facing thirty-one extremely strong cultivators.

Who was he going to choose this time?

Yun Fei Yang was the weakest of all but he was monstrously strong. On top of that he was Lin Feng's good friend so they couldn't choose each other!

Apart from Yun Fei Yang, there was only one other person of the sixth Xuan Qi layer.

Everybody looked at that person. Lin Feng had to choose him if he wanted to win...

That cultivator felt tense when he sensed that everybody was looking at him. He had lots of pressure at that moment.

“Well, fighting against him would be my best option...” thought that person. Apart from Lin Feng, the next ones would all be terrifying. Maybe the best option was to be chosen by Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at him too, his eyes were twinkling. That person then said, “Let’s fight.”

A terrifying battle energy then rose up in the air.

However, what astonished him was that Lin Feng wasn’t looking at him anymore! Lin Feng wasn’t going to choose him??

That person of the sixth Xuan Qi layer was scared again. If Lin Feng didn’t choose him, that person would lose for sure.

He felt like he had been eliminated already, completely dispirited.

The crowd was also astonished to see that Lin Feng wasn’t choosing him. He had broken through to the sixth Xuan Qi layer so he was the best choice. Lin Feng was the first one to choose so that

was also a great opportunity for him, but it seemed like he wasn't going to use it.

Lin Feng then slowly turned his head and looked at Nie Yun, then at Wu Qing... Lin Feng looked hesitant.

"Is Lin Feng scared to fight?" thought the crowd. Lin Feng seemed so irresolute.

"Some things need to be sorted." thought Lin Feng. Immediately after, he looked at Yue Tian Ming.

Yue Tian Ming was speechless when he saw that Lin Feng was looking at him. Was he going to choose him??

Lin Feng had no reason to choose him though!

"Come here." said Lin Feng indifferently. Yue Tian Ming was astonished, Lin Feng was really looking at him and was really choosing him. He didn't understand why though. He had broken through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer and there were others that were much weaker than him. He had never had a conflict with him, why was he choosing him??

Yue Tian Ming wasn't the only one who was astonished. Everybody else was, including Yue Qing Shan. Why was that Lin Feng challenging Yue Tian Ming?

Chapter 640: Insect

Yue Tian Ming didn't understand, Yue Qing Shan and the crowd were puzzled.

But since Lin Feng had chosen him, Yue Tian Ming had no choice.

Yue Tian Ming then jumped forwards and landed in the middle of the fighting stage. Yue Tian Ming was convinced that he was going to win the battle. He would then be part of the sixteen best and would obtain some incredible treasures from Shen Gong. He would go back to Xue Yue as a glorious hero.

He had no reason to forfeit, he could easily defeat Lin Feng.

The two silhouettes were facing each other, Yue Tian Ming released some monstrous swift and fierce Qi. He still didn't understand Lin Feng's choice though.

During the last battle, with his strength of the fifth Xuan Qi layer, Lin Feng had remained immobile like a mountain under the ten thousand elephants attack of the Wan Xiang Sect. His body was extremely solid, but Yue Tian Ming was going to be very careful for precisely that reason.

But Yue Tian Ming still remained confident, without self-confidence, how would he win? Besides, Lin Feng's cultivation level was also quite low, there was no reason for Yue Tian Ming not to win.

“I’m telling you, choosing me was your biggest mistake during the Great Competition of Xue Yu.” said Yue Tian Ming. The he continued with an ice-cold voice, “You will regret that choice, and the price for it will be a heavy.”

Lin Feng looked at Yue Tian Ming and said, shaking his head: “Since it’s my choice, I bear the responsibility for it and will not regret anything. I chose you and now that can’t be changed, so there is no need to talk nonsense. Let’s fight and see whom will regret. Show me your real strength and prove to me that I was wrong.”

“Show me your real strength and prove me that I was wrong...” Lin Feng’s words were resonating in Yue Tian Ming’s head. He suddenly looked calm and solemn as he released some terrifying energy. Pure Qi was whistling in the air and enveloped Lin Feng’s body, the pressure was strong. Yue Qing Shan’s white hair, was fluttering in the crowd. He looked proud.

Yue Tian Ming was starting the battle. Considering the opponent, he had to win.

“Tian Ming, use him as your stepping stone on the path of cultivation, you will reach the clouds...” whispered Yue Qing Shan.

“He will lose.” said someone not far from him though, it was Xiao Ya.

Xiao Ya looked convinced and she was smiling confidently.

“My brother will not lose, it’s impossible.” said Xiao Ya with a resplendent smile on her face. Yue Qing Shan was furious, how could she be so convinced.

“Indeed, our brother cannot lose!” said Han Man, clenching his fists. He was also convinced by Lin Feng’s abilities. Lin Feng had to win.

“Let’s see.” said Yue Qing Shan with a smile on his face. But in his heart, he didn’t feel calm and serene at all. Yue Tian Ming had gone through so many hardships, and suffered through many difficulties. Losing now would mean the end of his dazzling cultivation career...

“Let’s fight.” shouted Yue Tian Ming furiously. He then released some monstrous pure Qi. He was using all the strength of the seventh Xuan Qi layer without controlling himself. He was using all his strength!

“Boom!” His pure Qi seemed like it was going to explode. Yue Tian Ming’s hands were emitting whistling sounds and moving towards Lin Feng at full speed.

But at that moment, Lin Feng looked calm and serene. He just moved like the wind, looking natural, free and unperturbed.

Lin Feng opened his mouth and started chanting some mantra in Sanskrit. It seemed like his mantras were thousands of years old. Magnificent golden sanskrit letters appeared in the air after each

word. There was a golden aura around Lin Feng's body.

That golden aura was dazzling. He looked like a Shakyamuni Buddha, pure and holy, illuminating the world with his wisdom.

“What's that skill?” the crowd wondered, watch Lin Feng. He was finally using a real skill.

Lin Feng then abruptly stopped, he looked like a statue.

“Bzzzzzzzz!” Yue Tian Ming's hands landed on Lin Feng and the sound of a bell spread in the air. Lin Feng, with his indestructible golden body, hadn't moved of a single iota, just like a mountain.

“That's Lin Feng's authentic strength...” The crowd was shivering. His Shakyamuni body was incredible. His body had turned into a real Buddha statue. Yue Tian Ming had broken through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer, but just like Lin Feng's previous battle, he hadn't moved a single iota.

Yue Tian Ming was astonished, he had the feeling that his hands had crashed onto an indestructible statue.

Yue Qing Shan was astonished. Was that Lin Feng?

That cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer had turned into a Buddha statue and had felt nothing from Yue Tian Ming's attack...

“Die.” Yue Tian Ming released some more pure Qi and continued bombarding Lin Feng’s body.

The golden light was breaking apart, bit by bit. But would it break? Lin Feng was looking at Yue Tian Ming unperturbed. He then said, “You will have no opportunity to hurt me. In front of me, you are a tiny little insect, you are a coward, you are absolutely incompetent. You can only look up at me.” said Lin Feng calmly. Yue Tian Ming was astonished, he had very high natural abilities and had put so much effort into his cultivation... He had never stopped becoming stronger because he had always hoped to become one of the four best cultivators of Xue Yue. He wanted to dazzle.

Yue Tian Ming had managed to become one of the eight high-officials of Xue Yue. He was respected and admired by everyone. For the Yue Clan, Yue Tian Ming was a treasure.

Now, he was standing on the fighting stage at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. He wanted to go back to Xue Yue as a glorious cultivator. He wanted to show to his aunt that apart from her, there was another genius in the Yue Clan.

But Lin Feng, with his Buddha body, was despising him and calling him an insect.

Yue Tian Ming didn’t want to admit it but his pure Qi had reached its limits. He couldn’t do anything against Lin Feng, he couldn’t injure him... Therefore Yue Tian Ming realized that even with his best skills, all he would be able to do would be to make Lin Feng’s body shake a little bit. Breaking Lin Feng’s body would be

too difficult.

Yue Tian Ming couldn't break Lin Feng's body so how would he be able to defeat him? He started to get dispirited... His self-confidence was disappearing.

"Tian Ming, don't give up!!!" shouted Yue Qing Shan furiously when he saw that Yue Tian Ming was starting to look dispirited. Yue Tian Ming shivered and raised his head. He suddenly looked furious and tough again.

"AARRRGHHHHH!"

In Yue Tian Ming's back appeared his celestial fangs spirit! There were six dragon heads on it, and those heads were looking at Lin Feng in a despising manner.

"Die!" shouted Yue Tian Ming furiously. The six heads showed their teeth and moved towards Lin Feng.

"Golden hands." Lin Feng's golden sanskrit letters turned into a gigantic hand and moved towards the dragon, bombarding the atmosphere.

"Roaaarr....." The celestial fangs spirit roared and was projected backwards. Lin Feng looked at Yue Tian Ming again. In the same despising way he said, "I told you, you are a tiny little insect in front of me, nothing more. You have no chance to win."

The crowd was shaking, Lin Feng was really terrifying. Yue Tian Ming had broken through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer but couldn't do anything against him... Lin Feng had obtained the first jade key, was it really only due to luck?

Besides, Lin Feng was deliberately playing around with Yue Tian Ming, trying to crush his self-confidence.

Yue Tian Ming was going crazy, was he really only a little insect?

He had managed to make it to the Great Competition of Xue Yu. That was an incredible honor, a glorious thing. But now Lin Feng was going to crush him, his heart, and his self-confidence!

Chapter 641: Prove What?

Yue Tian Ming hadn't used his entire strength yet but he didn't feel like using it anymore.

Since the beginning of the battle, Lin Feng had been crushing his mood. All of his attacks were useless. Lin Feng was just staring at him, humiliating him, making fun of him.

“Tian Ming, don't give up! You have to stay proud even if you lose! You are at the Great Competition of Xue Yu, losing a fight is not a disaster, it's normal!” shouted Yue Qing Shan. He knew what Lin Feng was doing, he could see everything. For a cultivator, losing one's courage, honor and dignity were the worst things. If a cultivator's heart was destroyed, he wouldn't be able to continue becoming stronger. Why was Lin Feng doing that? Did he hate Yue Tian Ming? Why was he so cruel to him?

Yue Qing Shan didn't understand, his thoughts were chaotic. It was the first time that he felt so confused, even though he was quite old.

Yue Tian Ming was the treasure of the Yue Clan, Yue Qing Shan had faith in him. With all the efforts Yue Tian Ming had made in the past, he couldn't lose his motivation...

Yue Qing Shan's voice resonated and detonated in Yue Tian Ming's brain. He immediately roared violently and his terrifying celestial fangs spirit appeared again.

Yue Tian Ming's blood seemed like it was boiling. He couldn't submit himself, he had thrive for victory!

The strength of his blood spirit kept flowing at full speed. Yue Tian Ming was roaring like an animal, his hair was violently fluttering in the wind. He grabbed Lin Feng's body and created fissures in the statue. Yue Tian Ming was finally managing to break Lin Feng's body.

"Break!" Yue Tian Ming was surprised and immediately delighted, finally!

But Lin Feng said something else at that moment.

"The only way for you to crack my golden body is to use your full strength... For the first disciple of the Yue Clan and second high-official of Xue Yue, that's ridiculous... You're a real piece of trash." joked Lin Feng. Yue Tian Ming couldn't do anything against Lin Feng who was unknown, ridiculous.

"It's only a fissure... Why are you so happy? Do you think that's enough to defeat me? Do you think you can be proud of yourself now...? You're less than trash." said Lin Feng. Finally, Lin Feng attacked and his golden hand crashed onto Yue Tian Ming's body. It seemed like it was going to crush him, blood splashed and Yue Tian Ming's body flew away.

"He couldn't even withstand a single attack." Lin Feng jumped and landed in front of Yue Tian Ming. He looked down at him and said indifferently, "Do you feel proud?"

“Boom!” Another golden hand appeared, Yue Tian Ming raised his hand and just heard his bones break, crackling sounds could be heard by the audience. Yue Tian Ming couldn’t stand up, he was left on the ground.

Yue Tian Ming raised his head, his eyes were bloodshot. He was fixated on Lin Feng, he had the impression that he was going to go crazy...

“And now? Are you still proud to be the second high-official of Xue Yue?” said Lin Feng. Yue Tian Ming looked furious, his hair was extremely messy.

“That’s enough. Why do you hate him so much and have to be that cruel???” Shouted Yue Qing Shan furiously. Yue Qing Shan was glaring at Lin Feng. They didn’t know each other and initially Lin Feng even looked warm and gentle. Why was he so cruel at that moment? Why was he humiliating him so much?

Lin Feng turned around and looked at Yue Qing Shan with a cold smile on his face.

“Why? Because of you, Yue Qing Shan.”

“Me?” Yue Qing Shan was astonished. “I don’t understand, how did I offend you?”

“Oh I see...” said Lin Feng smiling, but it wasn’t a happy smile, it

wasn't pride either. It was a mockery, the situation was ridiculous.

“When you confronted your grandson, were you sad? What about my mother? What about my father? And what about me? Grandpa!”

“Grandpa!” Lin Feng had called him grandpa, Yue Qing Shan's heart pounded violently. Yue Qing Shan wasn't the only one... Yue Tian Ming was also shaken. Lin Feng was calling him grandpa!

The crowd was also astonished, that old man was his grandpa!

“Lin.... Feng!” Yue Qing Shan was astonished, it was really him, it was the real Lin Feng.

Unfortunately, his grandson was proudly standing on the fighting stage at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. He had obtained the first jade key, but his grandfather didn't benefit from that glory! He was just astonished... Words couldn't describe those feelings.

It was Lin Feng... The real Lin Feng...

Yue Qing Shan looked extremely sad...

“So it was you...”

“It's me.” said Lin Feng nodding. Some flames were burning in

his eyes. In a flash, his face changed.

He didn't look sick anymore, but his eyes looked just as resplendent as before. He was an outstanding young man.

Lin Feng looked even younger than the sick Lin Feng, he had just been wearing a mask.

At that moment, many silhouettes stood up. The people from Tian Feng, from the Wan Shou Sect, from the Yu Clan, they all stood up. They were staring at him... They were starting to understand the situation a little better.

The Yu Clan understood why Lin Feng had killed Yu Jian and Yu Qin, the people from Tian Feng also knew why Lin Feng had been killing them one after the other. Lin Feng hadn't died, he was still alive!

"It's him..." Wu Qing couldn't take his eyes away from Lin Feng. Lin Feng had become so strong, Wu Qing was starting to get scared...

Besides, Lin Feng would try to exterminate the Wan Shou Sect if he remained alive. Wu Qing's heart started pounding... He felt terrified... If Lin Feng became stronger, he would kill them all...

"It's him..." The people from Dragon Mountain were astonished too... Lin Feng hadn't died, he had disappeared but reappeared with a new face...

Yue Qing Shan was looking at the young man, he looked dazzling, clean, handsome... He didn't look furious, he just looked alive.

Was everything Yue Qing Shan's fault?

He had always taken care of Yue Tian Ming and had hoped that Yue Tian Ming would become a dragon amongst people. But he had expelled his own daughter from the clan, and her husband and her son... Lin Feng and his father hadn't been able to live or come back to the Imperial City... They had had to live in a small town. Lin Feng had come back to Xue Yue and Yue Qing Shan had hoped that Yue Tian Ming would crush Lin Feng.

He had even tried to make Yue Tian Ming steal Lin Feng's girlfriend, Duan Xin Ye. He had told Yue Tian Ming to attack Lin Feng in front of everybody.

Only a part of his dream was realized, Yue Tian Ming and Lin Feng were fighting during the competition. But the problem was the winner wasn't Lin Feng.... The result was astonishing.

His grandson, Yue Tian Ming, had been humiliated and crushed by Lin Feng who only counted on himself... Lin Feng could easily kill Yue Tian Ming if he wished. For him, Yue Tian Ming really was a tiny little insect.

Ridiculous, sad, tragic... That was only the beginning.

“Why are you doing that?” asked Yue Qing Shan.

“To prove something to everybody. You said in the past that you hoped that Yue Tian Ming would defeat me in front of everybody at the competition. Now I have proven that my determination was stronger, I proved you that your grandson is not extraordinary. That your other grandson, who’s your daughter’s son, can accomplish great things. I want to be a source of pride for my mother, and I want to prove to everyone that she didn’t make a mistake when she left the Yue Clan.” said Lin Feng slowly. His speech had made= Yue Qing Shan’s heart twitch!

Chapter 642: One Attack

“To prove in front of everyone, that Yue Qing Shan was wrong. To prove that my mother, Yue Meng He, was right!”

Yue Qing Shan was speechless... Was Lin Feng wrong?

He was right, Lin Feng was entirely right. Everything was Yue Qing Shan's fault. He had supported Yue Tian Ming to put pressure on Lin Feng. He had even encouraged him to attack and offend Lin Feng. Yue Qing Shan had done that even though Yue Tian Ming and Lin Feng should have been raised like brothers.

Lin Feng and Yue Tian Ming were both extremely gifted. They could have been much stronger if they had grown up together. They could have supported each other on the path of cultivation. But in the end, nothing had happened that way because of Yue Qing Shan.

Yue Qing Shan closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He had really made a lot of mistakes.

“Kill me.” said Yue Tian Ming, he was lying on the ground. He felt desperate and hopeless, Lin Feng had just crushed his entire life. He had always dreamt of defeating Lin Feng and in the end, Lin Feng had stepped on and crushed his integrity.

Lin Feng lowered his head and looked at Yue Tian Ming indifferently. Kill him?

“We have the same blood. Even though I don’t consider you as a brother, I cannot violate that blood relation. I have to respect your parents and my parents, so I will not kill you.” said Lin Feng indifferently. Yue Tian Ming would live on despite the anger. That was also an endless humiliation for Yue Tian Ming because it meant that Lin Feng controlled his entire life, only because of a blood relation.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at Wu Qing.

“Coward. You won’t live much longer. If you don’t die this turn, you will be my next opponent and your life will be mine.” said Lin Feng indifferently. Wu Qing was scared. Lin Feng was going to kill him...

Besides, Lin Feng could really kill him now, he was strong enough. Yue Tian Ming had broken through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer and Lin Feng could easily defeat cultivators of the seventh Xuan Qi layer. Even if he had been stronger than Yue Tian Ming, he still wouldn’t have been able to defeat Lin Feng.

Wu Qing had always wanted to kill Lin Feng but now Lin Feng had the power and strength to kill him.

“And you.” said Lin Feng, looking at Nie Yun. He wouldn’t let any of them off, people from Tian Feng were his enemies.

Nie Yun was just as speechless. He was the first envoy of Tian Feng and he was afraid because Lin Feng had glanced at him only

once.

After threatening those few people, Lin Feng slowly turned around and looked at the crowd. People from Tian Feng, the Yu Clan and the Wan Shou Sect.

Lin Feng looked at each and every single one of them.

“I know that you all want to kill me and that you are all surprised. I changed my face because of you. You have always tried to humiliate me, always insulted and always tried to kill me... but I am still alive and now I am not scared of you anymore. Now I can tell you, I am alive and if I don’t die, you will.” said Lin Feng indifferently. Those people were all speechless. Lin Feng hated them deeply and bitterly. They all perfectly knew how Lin Feng felt. They wanted to kill him but he also wanted to kill them. If Lin Feng remained alive, he would definitely win.

“You will die here during the Great Competition of Xue Yu anyways.” said the middle-aged man from Tian Feng coldly. “Of course, if you don’t die, I will personally kill you.”

“Do you think that with your ridiculous strength, you will manage to kill me?” said Lin Feng indifferently yet mockingly. That person had broken through to the eighth Xuan Qi layer, Lin Feng could easily kill people of the seventh Xuan Qi layer. Soon, Lin Feng would also be able to easily defeat cultivators of the eighth Xuan Qi layer. Besides, Xue Wu Chang had previously told Lin Feng that obtaining the first jade key would provide him with incredible benefits. Lin Feng had to cherish that opportunity. After the competition he would never have to be afraid of a cultivator of

the eighth Xuan Qi layer ever again.

That cultivator of the eighth Xuan Qi layer was astonished staring at Lin Feng. Indeed, after the competition he wouldn't be able to compete with Lin Feng anymore.

Lin Feng was becoming stronger and stronger, and at an incredible speed.

“You won't have any opportunity. You will die on the fighting stage of the competition.” said a cold voice. Lin Feng turned around and saw Xue Sha. He wanted to kill Lin Feng and was releasing an evil Qi.

“Indeed, you will die here.” said Yu Mo. Those two had surprised everyone. Such strong cultivators wanted to kill Lin Feng.

Some people in the crowd laughed when they saw that Yu Mo and Xue Sha wanted to kill him. Indeed, Lin Feng was definitely going to die there with them.

Xue Sha and Yu Mo wanted to kill him, would he die?

Lin Feng was definitely going to die.

“If we ever fight, yes.” said Lin Feng mockingly. He had the first jade key, he would be able to choose his opponents the entire time.

“Hmph.” The two others groaned coldly while staring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng moved back to his original position. He had wasted too much time and Xue Wu Chang hadn’t made any reproach, Lin Feng couldn’t exaggerate either.

Tang You You was looking at Lin Feng coming back towards her, she then looked at him and said, “I can kill one of them for you, which should I kill?”

Tang You You was pointing at Nie Yun, the first envoy of Tian Feng, and Wu Qing of the Wan Shou Sect.

Nie Yun and Wu Qing were astonished, they had forgotten that Tang You You was his friend.

“Don’t worry, you can kill one and I will kill the other one.” said Jun Mo Xi. Wu Qing and Nie Yun were even more furious. Tang You You and Jun Mo Xi wanted to kill them?

“The competition is getting more and more interesting. It will have to end soon.” thought the crowd laughing.

A moment before, Yu Mo and Xue Sha had threatened to kill Lin Feng but now Tang You You and Jun Mo Xi were proposing to help Lin Feng.

After that series of battles, there would be sixteen people left. Those remaining would be authentically strong cultivators, the titans.

“Just choose one as you wish. Give him the strongest ones.” said Lin Feng to Tang You You while laughing. He was telling her to leave the strongest opponent for Jun Mo Xi. Tang You You and Jun Mo Xi wanted to help him. He was happy about and wasn’t going to refuse.

Jun Mo Xi laughed, Lin Feng really knew how to talk to beautiful women... Surprisingly telling Tang You You to choose the easy opponents...

“You.” said Tang You You to Nie Yun which made him feel tense. He still came out and faced her. It was much better than fighting against Jun Mo Xi. After all, Tang You You had only broken through to the very top of the seventh Xuan Qi layer. She wasn’t as strong as the eight most dazzling geniuses of the competition.

When Tang You You saw that Nie Yun was coming, she immediately attacked. Her face was filled with murder.

“Killing me won’t be that easy.” shouted Nie Yun furiously. The Qi of his spirit then invaded the atmosphere. Nie Yun was about to release his spirit, he was immediately going to deploy his entire strength.

“Really?” said Tang You You coldly. She then immediately disappeared from her initial position and a hand appeared on Nie Yun’s shoulder.

“Huh?” The crowd was stupefied, what was happening?

In the blink of an eye she had appeared on his side, how was that possible? Then her hand crashed onto Nie Yun's head.

“What? How's that possible?” Nie Yun asked as he slowly collapsed. At the same time, like a celestial being, Tang You You moved back and landed next to Lin Feng.

She had killed Nie Yun in one simple attack!

From that moment, the seven envoys of Tian Feng were dead! All of them had died!

Chapter 643: The Sixteen Best

The people from the Wan Xian Sect who had just sat back down stood up again. The Imperial Tutor also stood up, Nie Yun was dead.

Tang You You had killed Nie Yun in one single and simple attack. How horrible! Last time, Feng Chen and the envoys had died in Xue Yue. This time, all the new seven envoys had died again. Joining the Great Competition of Xue Yue was supposed to be an honor, a glory for them, but now they had lost all their fighters.

The seven envoys were all dead.

What a humiliation!

Everything was because of Lin Feng, almost all of their most outstanding fighters had died. That night when Lin Feng had almost died, he had killed all of them, cruelly. If they had managed to kill Lin Feng, it would have been worth it, but Lin Feng was still alive. The consequences were terrible for Tian Feng.

“He must die!!!!” They were all furious, they all wanted to kill Lin Feng.

“Put the corpse away.” demanded Xue Wu Chang, glancing at the middle-aged man and the Imperial Tutor. The middle-aged man then moved to Nie Yun, grabbed his body and pulled it to the side. Then Xue Wu Chang looked at Di Ling, it was his turn.

Di Ling jumped forwards and arrived in the middle of the fighting stage. Di Ling then looked at someone, nobody was surprised.

“Come!” said Di Ling indifferently. That person raised his head and looked furious, he was insulting Di Ling in his heart... Even though he had broken through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer, he couldn't rival with Di Ling.

The result of the battle was obvious. As expected, Di Ling defeated him in one punch, crushing all his bones. Di Ling let him off though and didn't kill him.

Duan Wu Dao's battle was the same, one punch and he defeated his opponent.

The fifth one was Jun Mo Xi.

Of course, when Jun Mo Xi came out, Wu Qing and the people of the Wan Shou Sect were terrified. They hadn't forgotten what he told Lin Feng. Tang You You and Jun Mo Xi were going to kill Lin Feng's enemies. Tang You You had already killed Nie Yun so Jun Mo Xi was going to kill Wu Qing.

As expected, Jun Mo Xi looked at Wu Qing, which made his face turn deathly pale.

Was he going to try and run away like the second envoy?

It would be normal if he decided to run away, he couldn't compete with Jun Mo Xi. He wouldn't even have the opportunity to hit him once. Jun Mo Xi and Tang You You were the same. With one punch they could kill people.

But if he gave up, he wouldn't benefit from the treasures of Shen Gong.

Nobody knew that during the first round of the competition, he had already acted like a coward. He hadn't obtained precious treasures in the evil area because he hadn't gone and hunted people. He only tried to survive and stay hidden the whole time. This time, he wouldn't be able to hide away.

Teng Wu Yao looked as ugly as Wu Qing at that moment, why... All of this was because of Lin Feng.

Jun Mo Xi was going to kill him because of Lin Feng, otherwise he wouldn't had the idea to pick him.

"Give up." said Teng Wu Yao looking like a coward. There was no chance. If Wu Qing fought, he would die. Jun Mo Xi was one of the eight most outstanding disciples. If he hadn't been one of them, maybe then Teng Wu Yao would have allowed Wu Qing to fight.

Wu Qing was shaking, he glanced at Lin Feng and said, "I forfeit."

Then he left and moved into the crowd with the people from the Wan Shou Sect.

The competition had nothing to do with him anymore but Wu Qing still hoped to see Lin Feng die during the competition.

The sixth person was Xue Sha, he won.

The seventh one was Yu Mo, he won.

The eighth one was Qi Qing Jian Ling Xiao, he won.

The ninth one was Ling Xiao Xiao, she won.

The tenth one was Ku Yao Tong the Dead Tree, he won.

The eleventh one was Qing Meng Xin, she won.

The twelfth one was someone with a silver sword on his back, he fought against another sword cultivator... And the person he challenged was... Jian Chen.

Their battle was terrifying, just like Lin Feng had anticipated. Jian Chen understood sword intent, unfortunately, the challenger also understood sword intent. In terms of sword intent, they were both level one. Besides, the challenger was extremely strong. He had broken through to the top of the seventh Xuan Qi layer, ultimately Jian Chen was eliminated. How unfortunate!

The thirteenth person was a girl with an ice-soul skill, that ice-soul skill was monstrously powerful. everybody had had the impression that they were going to freeze standing during her battle. She had challenged Leng Xue from Dragon Mountain, Leng Xue had lost after a few attacks.

The fourteenth person had a monstrous strength and a body like steel. He challenged someone with a black left hand, Cui Wu Ming. In the end, Cui Wu Ming had... Lost. In terms of strength, the challenger had been stronger.

The fifteenth challenger had won, no exception and no surprises. But the sixteenth person had had no choice, the only person left to challenge was Yun Fei Yang.

Yun Fei Yang was an exception. Usually, such a thing never happened at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. Yun Fei Yang had finished fiftieth during the second round but had defeated the sixteenth cultivator during the second round!

Dragon Mountain had six people left: Lin Feng, Tang You You, Duan Wu Dao, Jun Mo Xi, Qing Meng Xin and Yun Fei Yang. That was exceptional!

The three other empires together only had ten left...

One more round and the competition would finish.

Many were impatient to see the last battles. The last sixteen people were all monstrously strong. The clash of titans would start.

Apart from Lin Feng and Yun Fei Yang, all those people had broken at least through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer.

However, Lin Feng and Yun Fei Yang were extremely strong. Many wished that they wouldn't have to fight against them... Lin Feng had scared everybody when he had defeated Yue Tian Ming. Yun Fei Yang was also able to easily defeat cultivators of the seventh Xuan Qi layer.

Now, there were sixteen people left. There were no weaklings, only extremely strong young cultivators.

“Have a rest for one hour.” said Xue Wu Chang. He was giving them one hour to retrieve some pure Qi.

Now the atmosphere was particularly silent. Many people were anxious or afraid to distract the sixteen geniuses.

Lin Feng took out a small round thing. Then he looked up at Jun Mo Xi and Tang You You and asked, “Who do you want to fight?”

“I don't know.”

Lin Feng rubbed his hands together. All the people left were extremely strong and had all broken through to at least the very

top of the seventh Xuan Qi layer...

“Same.” said Tang You You.

“You have the choice, I don’t. I’m doomed.” said Yun Fei Yang smiling. There were only sixteen people left... So only the first eight would be able to choose their opponents.

“Same for me.” said Qing Meng Xin. Immediately after, she looked at Lin Feng and said, “Choose me, I will let you win.”

Lin Feng looked at her beautiful face and shook his head resolutely, “No need to try and tempt or seduce me.”

Qing Meng Xin looked at Lin Feng angrily, then she lied down and put her head on Lin Feng’s legs and closed her eyes.

Her cleavage was directly in Lin Feng’s field of vision, like two mountains. His eyes started peaking at the sides...

“It seems like I’m doomed.” sighed Qing Meng Xin in a cute way. She wouldn’t be able to finish in the top eight.

Chapter 644: A Blood Like Sword

Lin Feng sighed again when he heard Qing Meng Xin. It was a good thing that he had obtained the first jade key.

Qing Meng Xin had obtained the eleventh jade key so she would end up fighting against the strongest geniuses of the competition. Indeed, the first one to choose was Lin Feng, and the second one was Tang You You. So the eight strongest geniuses would probably challenge her and she would probably get eliminated.

After one hour, the battles were about to start again.

Xue Wu Chang looked at those sixteen geniuses, their pupils were all twinkling. The real battles were about to start for real.

Xue Wu Chang looked at those eight people and announced, “The sixteen last people won’t be eliminated easily, the rules will change. We want a precise ranking list in the end.”

“Huh?” The crowd wasn’t ready, the rules were going to change?

Indeed, they needed a precise ranking in the end for the competition to be fair...

“It seems like things won’t be as sad as I thought for myself.” said Qing Meng Xin who was lying on Lin Feng’s legs, smiling in a seducing way. Lin Feng was a bit surprised when he said, “You already knew that it was going to end up like this, right?”

Qing Meng Xin looked at him and smiled, “Every round is like this, how could the last sixteen cultivators get eliminated that easily without any rule? What about the eight last ones? And four last ones? Only morons like you cannot understand such things.”

“Ehhh.....” Lin Feng scratched his head, she was making fun of him and he didn’t know what to say.

But Qing Meng Xin was right, would people get eliminated endlessly? That didn’t sound credible.

“Alright. You need to understand the rules now.” said Xue Wu Chang. “First, those who have the best jade keys can take the initiative, just as before. But this time, if you choose someone and lose the battle, you must give it to your opponent and you’ll obtain the very last one.”

“Ehhh..” Lin Feng was smiling wryly. He had obtained the first jade key but if he lost he would end up last... And everybody else would raise up in the rankings. Lin Feng had no choice, he had to win every match-up.

“After the eighth battle your jade keys will have new numbers, but those numbers won’t be your final ranking. I will bring you to another place where you will have wonderful opportunities, if you are talented enough, your cultivation level will increase. “

“As expected, some more opportunities..” thought the crowd shakily. They looked full of hope. This time, they would have some

great opportunities again, Xue Wu Chang would bring them to a place where they could increase their cultivation level.”

Lin Feng’s eyes were twinkling, he would always keep in mind Xue Wu Chang’s words. He couldn’t waste the first jade key because it would mean even more at that moment.

Keeping the first jade key would guarantee him the best treasures... The treasures were probably different depending on which key you possessed. The first one was probably the best one. Keeping the first key wouldn’t be impossible, but it would be difficult.

But now, he had to do it.

“After coming back from this special place with your treasures, everybody will have to fight again. Then, we will see who the strongest ones really are. I will tell you the new rules then and afterwards we will know the precise ranking of the sixteen winners of the Great Competition of Xue Yu.” finished Xue Wu Chang. He then looked at everyone again and said, “Do you understand?”

The crowd nodded, Xue Wu Chang’s explanation was easy enough to understand.

“Alright. Let’s continue the fights then. Don’t forget to protect your keys.” it seemed like Xue Wu Chang was looking at Lin Feng specifically when saying this. Lin Feng was serious and solemn now. That battle was going to be decisive for him. If he lost, he would miss a great opportunity and would miss incredible

treasures. If he lost, he would obtain the sixteenth key, the very last one...

He couldn't lose...

Lin Feng jumped in the middle of the fighting stage and looked at the other fighters. He had to choose one person out of those fifteen.

They were staring back at Lin Feng, they were all hoping that Lin Feng would choose them. They all considered him as the weakest cultivator of the group.

Finally, Lin Feng looked at the fifteenth person. That fifteenth person had ranked sixteenth and during the last series of battles he relied on some simple agility techniques to win.

"You." said Lin Feng. That person looked a bit tense but immediately smiled. Fighting against Lin Feng was the best thing that could happen to him.

He then jumped forwards like a swallow and landed in front of Lin Feng.

"Thank you." he gestured towards Lin Feng. He was thanking Lin Feng for having chosen him.

"Are you sure that you want to thank me?" asked Lin Feng indifferently.

That person nodded and said, “I saw you fight, even though your golden Buddha body is a strong attack. And even though you can defeat cultivators of the seventh Xuan Qi layer, you are extremely slow. I can do whatever I want with you, I can’t understand why you chose me.”

“You think that you will win and thus thanked me, right?” asked Lin Feng.

“Indeed. Thank you for choosing me. I will cripple your cultivation.” said that person, leaving Lin Feng speechless.

“I choose you so you and you thank me jokingly. Now you plan to win and cripple my cultivation, eh? But I’m also saving you from getting humiliated, it means that if anyone else chose you, you’d have absolutely no chance.” said Lin Feng. The other nodded and said, “You’re smart but you did something stupid too.”

“Alright. Since you’re so confident, I will give you a chance now. We will see if you can thank me again after the battle.” said Lin Feng, slowly raising his hand and grabbing the sword on his back.

The crowd was stupefied. Apart from his Buddha attacks, Lin Feng also used swords?

A metallic sound spread in the air when Lin Feng unsheathed his sword. That sword was red like blood and particularly dazzling.

On that sword there was blood and sword energy.

“Huh?” The crowd was astonished, since when could Lin Feng use a sword?

A terrifying sword energy then emerged out of his body and emitted whistling sounds. In a flash, Lin Feng was surrounded by a sword light.

“So I’m too slow when I use my golden body? Did you wonder if I could use anything else?” said Lin Feng indifferently. Immediately after, a terrifying sword energy started rolling out of his sword and into the air. That person was astonished.

What a terrifying blood sword... That Qi was really frightening.

“You made me use this sword.” said Lin Feng. Then he jumped forwards and threw himself at his enemy. It seemed like his terrifying sword energy was about to lacerate the enemy.

That person then started moving incredibly fast.

“I don’t think that your sword is faster than my agility techniques.” said the person coldly. Lin Feng then rose up in the air as well. He was surrounded by sword energy and sword intent.

“Die!” The sword intent and blood energy fused together, that person only saw a terrifying light. The enemy wanted to dodge but it seemed impossible. He lowered his head and saw some blood

dripping.

“Your agility technique is fast but I am faster.” said Lin Feng, that person’s heart pounded violently.

Chapter 645: The Holy City

“Are you faster than my sword?” asked Lin Feng. The crowd was astonished as they watched the silhouette in the sky, more precisely his abdomen.

His abdomen was covered with blood, and then incredibly, some blood arrows started emerging out his abdomen and moving into Lin Feng’s sword. Lin Feng’s sword was drinking blood.

“His sword drinks blood...” thought the crowd stupefied... Lin Feng’s opponent raised his head and asked, “Lin Feng... What is your sword?”

“It’s a bloodthirsty sword.” said Lin Feng indifferently. “We are sixteen, losing here is not dramatic... Originally, I just wanted to fight and stop when one of us had lost. We would have both benefited from amazing advantages and would have both become much stronger. We would have been seen as amazing and dazzling cultivators. Unfortunately, you wanted to cripple my cultivation so you have to die now, and you have only yourself to blame.” explained Lin Feng while his sword continued drinking his opponent’s blood. Then he stopped at his opponent and moved back to his original position.

“The moron offended the dragon... And the moron will die...” said that person with a sorrowful smile. He could have had a beautiful future but now he was going to die now...

He then slowly collapsed, crashing onto the fighting stage. Xue

Wu Chang raised his finger, and in a flash the body burnt to ashes and disappeared. Xue Wu Chang looked absolutely calm and serene, he glanced at Lin Feng. Lin Feng really had incredible natural abilities. He really had benefited from the temples at the beginning.

When the crowd saw the corpse burn to ashes, they then glanced at Lin Feng. They were unable to calm down.

Lin Feng had understood the golden body... So people couldn't break him?

Lin Feng could use one sword to threaten everyone that infuriating the possessor of the first jade key was dangerous.

What astonished those who knew Lin Feng was that he was able to crush cultivators of the seventh Xuan Qi layer easily. He had even despised and humiliated Yue Tian Ming, for someone like Yue Qing Shan, the situation seemed unreal.

His grandson was dazzling on the fighting stage of the Great Competition of Xue Yu. But at the same time, he didn't recognize him as his grandson.

“Like a tiger, Meng He's son is an incredible successor. If she were here, she would probably feel very gratified.” thought Yue Qing Shan, he looked sad as he closed his eyes. Lin Feng's natural abilities were higher than that of his parents.

“He’s amazing, our brother has become so strong.” thought Han Man. Under his bronze mask, there was a magnificent and resplendent smile. He was clenching his fists so hard that blue veins appeared. Lin Feng’s strength was astonishing, everyone’s hearts were pounding. That young man on the stage was Han Man’s great friend, they were like brothers.

“If Lin Feng goes back to Xue Yue after the Great Competition of Xue Yu, apart from Duan Wu Dao, nobody will be able to compete with him anymore.” thought Po Jun impatiently. After obtaining the great treasures of the academy, and with his bloodthirsty sword, who would be able to rival with him?

“His goal can’t be Xue Yue.... He will become famous in the empire, or even in the Holy City.” said Xiao Ya while clenching her tiny fists, she looked excited.

“The Holy City? What is that place?” asked Po Jun unknowingly. He had never heard that name.

Xiao Ya looked at him and when she saw that he looked confused, replied, “The incredible geniuses of the Great Competition of Xue Yu are considered as ordinary people in the Holy City. Mi Cheng or even Shen Gong are considered as tiny little spheres of influence in the Holy City. Besides, in the Holy City, there is only one sect.” Po Jun and Han Man were astonished, their eyes were twinkling.

The geniuses of the Great Competition of Xue Yu were ordinary people in the Holy City... The mysterious sphere of influence called Shen Gong was also small there...

Was it a gigantic city?

“Where is the Holy City?” asked Han Man. He was extremely curious.

Po Jun shook his head and said, “We don’t need to know that, we are tiny little insects. We will know when the right time comes.”

“Hahaha, you will. Big brother will leave Xue Yue will even leave Xue Yu. He will become an extremely strong cultivator on the Continent of the Nine Clouds.” said Xiao Ya, she was full of confidence for Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked like her real brother, like the one her grandfather sung of, “A young hero reaching the clouds who would step on mountains and rivers someday!”

Unfortunately, her real brother had died... He couldn’t take care of her anymore but now, Lin Feng had become like her real brother. He was taking care of her and loved her like a real little sister.

Han Man and Po Jun nodded, indeed, Lin Feng would become a monstrously powerful cultivator on the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He had to leave the tiny little country of Xue Yue, and even the small region of Xue Yu.

Tang You You then moved to the middle of the fighting stage, it

was her turn to choose.

Just like Lin Feng, she had to win not to lose her jade key. She had the second one, so losing it would be a catastrophe because she would end up at the end of the rankings.

She then looked at the different potential opponents. Amongst those in the top ten, she didn't feel like fighting anyone. Apart from Lin Feng, she couldn't defeat any of them anyways.

Qing Meng Xin and Yun Fei Yang couldn't fight, they had become friends too.

"I choose you." said Tang You You, looking at the thirteenth woman with the ice-soul skill.

That girl looked at Tang You You and remained emotionless. Her Qi was ice-cold, just like her skill.

She jumped and landed in front of Tang You You.

"Let's see who can win in one attack, what do you think?" asked Tang You You. The other glanced at her and said, "Alright."

It didn't matter if she lost the battle or won. That girl had nothing to lose, that's why she didn't refuse Tang You You's proposition. Participating at the competition was already amazing for her.

“Be careful.” said Tang You You and suddenly turned into a thousand dream shadows, which then turned into real clones. They were everywhere.

That girl suddenly moved backwards and abruptly, the atmosphere became ice-cold. Snowflakes started falling in the air.

“Absolute Zero, freeze!”

“Kacha!” The temperature was ice-cold, piercing to the bones. Even the crowd felt ice-cold. Surprisingly, a layer of ice appeared on the fighting stage. Besides, in the middle, there was a blizzard.

It seemed like Tang You You’s clones were going to freeze and turn into statues.

“What a terrifying coldness.” thought Lin Feng speechless. He was also feeling the cold.

That coldness actually froze Tang You You’s clones.

“Huh? something moved...?” In the ice, a silhouette moved and attacked the girl.

She turned around and in a flash, she knew what it was. She moved backwards and raised her head, spitting out ice and snow. It shot out towards Tang You You.

“Break!” shouted Tang You You. Her body broke the ice, her black hair was moving in all directions, and then she suddenly disappeared. But quickly, she appeared in front of that girl.

“Destroy!” said the girl attacking Tang You You again. The ice and Tang You You’s fists collided. In that flash, her body was frozen again.

Had Tang You You lost? Immediately after, a crackling sound spread in the air and the girl moved back of a few meters. There was still blood on her hands but blood was splashing out of her mouth.

“I see...” said the girl sorrowfully... Tang You You’s strength could surprisingly cross ice, that must be a particular aspect of her skill...

“You win!” said the girl while moving back. Some cracking sounds spread in the air and Tang You You appeared in the open air again. She had managed to protect the second jade key!

Chapter 646: Titans' Battles!

“Pfeww....” Tang You You took a deep breath, that battle hadn't been easy.

The next cultivators were all monstrously strong. They had all broken through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer or above. Every battle would be monstrous.

Tang You You moved back next to Lin Feng. When Lin Feng saw that her body was still surrounded by a layer of ice, he released some fire Qi and heated her up. The ice melted away quickly.

“Thank you.” said Tang You You, smiling resplendently. Lin Feng nodded and looked at the stage again. The third battle was Di Ling's. Di Ling had chosen the person who was ranked fourteenth. It was a cultivator whose body was as solid as steel. However, Di Ling defeated him in one punch!

The third battle was Duan Wu Dao's. He chose the person who ranked twelfth and used a sword. Just like Di Ling, Duan Wu Dao defeated him in one extremely brutal punch.

“Those two are extremely brutal...” thought the crowd after watching Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao. Everybody had already forgotten that Duan Wu Dao came from a country under the jurisdiction of Dragon Mountain. They only knew that he was monstrously powerful. Nobody dared belittle him, he could definitely compete with Di Ling.

They also heard about Duan Wu Dao's sealed doors blood spirit, they could seal other people's cultivation.

The fifth battle was Jun Mo Xi's.

Jun Mo Xi frowned and then smiled wryly when he arrived in the middle of the fighting stage.

"I'm the fifth one..." Jun Mo Xi looked at his jade key, thought for a few second... From Lin Feng to Duan Wu Dao, they had chosen people who weren't part of the top ten... There were only two people left amongst the weakest cultivators.... Qing Meng Xin and Yun Fei Yang.

He felt really embarrassed, he couldn't choose them.

Thus, he could only choose someone from the top ten...

There were: Xue Sha, Yu Mo, Ling Xiao, Yu Xiao Xiao and the Dead Tree.

"Huh?" The crowd was astonished.

"Come." said Jun Mo Xi.

Yu Mo was astonished. He looked to his left, there was Xue Sha. And then he looked to his right, there was Ling Xiao.

Immediately after, he looked at Jun Mo Xi again and realized that Jun Mo Xi was really looking at him.

He was astonished. Yu Mo's eyes were twinkling though. How interesting, Jun Mo Xi had chosen him??

The crowd was stunned as well... Jun Mo Xi was choosing him? Really?

Everybody was looking at him, Jun Mo Xi had chosen him.

Jun Mo Xi was a genius from Dragon Mountain and was one of the eight most outstanding young disciples of the competition. During the second round he had obtained the fifth jade key.

Yu Mo was a genius from Firmament and was also one of the eight most outstanding geniuses of the competition. During the second round, he had obtained the seventh key.

Now Jun Mo Xi was challenging him...?

“Pfew....” The crowd looked terribly excited, they were shivering. Finally, two monstrously strong cultivators were going to fight.

They were both one of the eight most outstanding disciples at the competition. Who was the strongest one? Jun Mo Xi or Yu Mo?

“You chose me?” asked Yu Mo, he was slowly standing up and staring at Jun Mo Xi.

“I think so. I find you and Xue Sha the ugliest but since you are weaker, I chose you.” explained Jun Mo Xi. Everybody was surprised he said that, some people were smiling wryly. With that kind of reasoning he must not care about his jade key?

“Alright. Very good.” said Yu Mo looking more and more evil. Then he jumped forwards and landed in the air above the fighting stage, where a monstrously cold energy invaded the atmosphere. He glared at Jun Mo Xi and said, “Very good. No matter what you think, I am curious to see if you will be able to keep your fifth jade key.”

“Let’s see how strong you are then.” said Jun Mo Xi indifferently. He didn’t look aggressive at all, he only looked calm, serene, maybe relaxed. He definitely looked like he didn’t care... Maybe that his self-confidence enabled him to despise Yu Mo. However, Jun Mo Xi didn’t look conceited either so it was difficult to know what he was thinking.

“You will see.” said Yu Mo. Immediately his eyes turned white and gray, his eight trigrams eyes had appeared. He looked like spider with those eyes.

“Die!” shouted Yu Mo furiously as several illusional trigrams started moving towards Jun Mo Xi to oppress his body.

“They’re going to fight now!” thought the crowd, they were all

shivering while watching them. Two of the eight most outstanding geniuses of the competition were going to fight against each other for the first time.

“Boom!” Jun Mo Xi’s body was completely surrounded. His long hair was fluttering violently. But still, Jun Mo Xi remained calm and serene as before. He slowly moved his head to look at Yu Mo. The crowd believed Jun Mo Xi looked like a holy man, his Qi was pure, elegant and holy.

“Boom!” The eight trigrams in the air soared to the sky and were suddenly surrounded by a golden light that detained them. Those golden lights were gigantic, like skyscrapers jetting up.

“Boom!” That gigantic pure and holy golden light turned into a hurricane as the eight trigrams were destroyed. Jun Mo Xi’s Qi was incredible and oppressive.

“How strong.” thought the crowd speechless. They had never seen Jun Mo Xi release any Qi before... What powerful energy! What skill was he using though?

“Huh?” Yu Mo was surprised. His eight trigrams had been destroyed by Jun Mo Xi’s golden Qi, how?

“Vital Energy of the World!” said Jun Mo Xi while jumping forwards. Rumbling sounds spread in the air as his Qi abruptly became even more imposing.

“Down the Mountains and Through the Rivers” a gigantic hand made of golden Qi emerged and rolled in the atmosphere towards Yu Mo. That Qi was altering the entire space, the vast fighting stage was suddenly covered by a vital Qi. It was the vital Qi of the Earth and the sky.

“Break!” shouted Yu Mo while releasing some pure Qi. His white and gray pupils looked colder and colder. Whistling sounds were increasingly strident. It seemed like it was going to be difficult for Yu Mo to block the vital Qi of the Earth and sky.

“Boom boom boom!” A terrifying Qi suddenly rolled and tossed over in the atmosphere. That Qi was terrifying and oppressive, how terrifying! Yu Mo had the feeling he couldn’t condense energies or strength anymore. He was just being oppressed violently.

“ILLUMINATION OF THE HEAVENLY BODIES!” said Jun Mo Xi. In the air there was the vital Qi of the Earth, of the mountains, the rivers, and of the heavenly bodies!

The air was filled with purity, holiness and righteousness.

The crowd was shivering, everybody became solemn. They were feeling guilt build-up in their hearts. That vital Qi was filled with righteousness which made sinners feel guilty...

Yu Mo’s heart was filled with poison and evilness so it was difficult not to be affected. His strength was being completely oppressed. He had no determination to fight anymore, he just

stared at the pure and holy Qi which was becoming even more magnificent in the sky. His facial muscles were twitching. How come? Jun Mo Xi's strength was really terrifying.

“Eight trigrams!” shouted Yu Mo, his eyes were radiating evil. His Qi moved towards the vital Qi in the air.

“Vital Qi of righteousness, destroy evil and sinners!” sung Jun Mo Xi! Each of his words were releasing pure vital Qi which attacked and collided against the eight trigrams. They vanished.

Yu Mo was unable to release his eight trigrams spirit properly!

“”Boom!” Some spirit Qi emerged in the air, the eight trigrams appeared behind Yu Mo, his eyes were bloodshot.

“That's enough!” shouted Xue Wu Chang at that moment. He sounded furious, Yu Mo was astonished.

“It's the end of the battle. No need to continue.” said Xue Wu Chang indifferently. With Jun Mo Xi's vital Qi of righteousness, continuing the fight was useless. Xue Wu Chang already knew how the battle would end if they continued.

Chapter 647: Everybody, Give Up!

“There really are too many geniuses...” thought Xue Wu Chang. Jun Mo Xi could use pure and unadulterated vital Qi of righteousness... How rare and how difficult, especially to make it reach such dimensions! It was extremely hard to learn.

In order to learn vital Qi of righteousness, one required a pure heart and couldn't commit sins. One's vitality and soul had to be pure, sinners couldn't give birth to vital Qi of righteousness...

That skill was the reflection of one's personality.

“Stop now?” Yu Mo raised his head and looked at Xue Wu Chang. He didn't understand why the battle had to stop. Just a moment before Jun Mo Xi had just oppressed his body, why would the battle stop? Yu Mo wanted to regain face, he had just been humiliated.

“You lost.” said Xue Wu Chang. Yu Mo didn't know what to say so he pulled a long face, Xue Wu Chang was humiliating him in front of everybody.

“Even though you didn't lose in terms of strength, you lost in your heart. What you need to do is not think about regaining your prestige... But instead, change your state of mind. If you are unable to change your state of mind then you will miss out on the wonderful opportunities that await you ahead. At that time, you will lose again.” said Xue Wu Chang slowly to Yu Mo. Yu Mo's face looked hideous. He understood what Xue Wu Chang meant, after

all, Yu Mo wasn't stupid... Jun Mo Xi was indeed extremely strong and that vital Qi of righteousness could destroy evil Qi. A moment before, Yu Mo had wanted to release his spirit... But Jun Mo Xi wouldn't have struggled with it, that was indeed his defeat.

“We will fight again.” said Yu Mo coldly to Jun Mo Xi. He then moved back to his seat.

“We can play together anytime.” said Jun Mo Xi smiling. He looked free, natural and unrestrained. When he moved, his vital Qi of righteousness disappeared and he looked like an ordinary young man again. There was nothing strange about him.

Jun Mo Xi moved back to his seat. In their hearts, everybody felt even more respect for Jun Mo Xi.

Maybe Jun Mo Xi was one of the three best cultivators of the competition, along with Duan Wu Dao and Di Ling ...

Lin Feng and Tang You You were extremely strong and had obtained the first jade keys. But compared with someone like Jun Mo Xi, they were still very far... At least, in their eyes.

Jun Mo Xi's vital Qi of righteousness was monstrously powerful... Yu Mo didn't have a chance to resist it... Yu Mo was one of the eight most dazzling geniuses of the competition but he was still inferior to Jun Mo Xi... Before the battle, everybody had wondered which of them were stronger. And the competition was full of surprises, Jun Mo Xi who didn't look as strong to begin with was actually obscenely strong. Being aggressive and arrogant

didn't mean anything to someone like Jun Mo Xi who was always calm, serene and gentle. Many had thought that Jun Mo Xi was one of the weakest of the eight most outstanding geniuses. But they just misunderstood his temperament.

After Jun Mo Xi's fight, it was the sixth person's turn: Xue Sha.

Xue Sha stood up and chose Qing Meng Xin.

Qing Meng Xin had a resplendent smile on her face, she looked to Xue Wu Chang and said, "Mister, I am too weak, can I give up?"

The crowd was astonished but then they understood her. She was a girl, beating Xue Sha would be extremely difficult... Forfeiting was a way to admit that she had already lost.

"You can. You're here so you can choose to fight or not." said Xue Wu Chang nodding.

"Thank you, mister." said Qing Meng Xin looking honest. She then said to Xue Sha, "I give up."

"Hmph." Xue Sha groaned coldly. He wanted to try a skill but Qing Meng Xin hadn't given him the possibility to try it out! He didn't like winning that way, especially after Jun Mo Xi's victory.

It should have been Yu Mo's turn after Qing Meng Xin gave up, but he had been defeated already so it was Ling Xiao's turn.

Ling Xiao only could choose between three people... Yu Xiao Xiao, Ku Yao Teng the Dead Tree and Yun Fei Yang.

“I wonder if I could defeat Ku Yao Teng... If I fight against Yun Fei Yang, Yu Xiao Xiao will have to fight against Ku Yao Teng...” thought Ling Xiao... His choice was too hard. In the end, he looked at Yu Xiao Xiao and said, “Let’s give up together.”

When she heard him, she knew what he meant and nodded. Then he looked at Xue Wu Chang and said, “Mister, I challenge Yu Xiao Xiao and we give up together.”

They didn’t feel like fighting anymore, they were just thinking about the great opportunities Xue Wu Chang had talked about. They wanted to know what they were and if they’d be able to break through to the next cultivation layer after.

“Okay.” said Xue Wu Chang not refusing. Immediately after, he looked to Ku Yao Teng and Yun Fei Yang, they had no choice.

The last battle had to be between them. If Ku Yao Teng lost the battle, he would lose his jade key. But if Yun Fei Yang lost, he had nothing to lose because he already had the last jade key.

“Do we need to fight?” asked Ku Yao Teng to Yun Fei Yang. He didn’t even move to the middle of the fighting stage.

“Let’s try!” replied Yun Fei Yang, the crowd thought that Yun Fei

Yang was going to give up. That battle wasn't going to be great, the crowd could not believe that he would win.

The Dead Tree was speechless, but then his eyes were twinkling as he said, "Alright, let's try then."

He jumped onto the fighting stage and watched Yun Fei Yang sharply.

"Come if you want to fight." said Ku Yao Teng. He then released some dead tree Qi, his eyes looked absolutely livid and cold.

Yun Fei Yang landed on the fighting stage and said, "Ku Yao Teng the Dead Tree, I want to know where your nickname comes from..."

"You will see." said Ku Yao Teng coldly. His pupils turned gloomy, he looked dead. The entire atmosphere filled with a death Qi and an eerie silence invaded it. It seemed like everything was dying around Ku Yao Teng. Yun Fei Yang wasn't far from him but the death energy around his body didn't feel pleasant, it seemed like he could die at any moment.

Ku Yao Teng then made a step forwards and some withered Qi spread through the air.

However, Yun Fei Yang smiled devilishly from the corner of his mouth! He looked particularly amused.

“I’m sorry, I give up.” said Yun Fei Yang abruptly. Everybody was astonished! Yun Fei Yang had asked for a battle and then suddenly gave up!

Ku Yao Teng was furious but he didn’t even have time to react, that Yun Fei Yang was already back to his seat. He smiled resplendently and said, “I wanted to see your Qi, now that I saw it there is no need to continue.”

“You’re playing with me!?” said Ku Yao Teng menacingly.

“I think that everybody wants the battles to end as soon as possible.” replied Yun Fei Yang joyfully. Everybody wanted to see the great presents from Shen Gong. Yun Fei Yang had given up right-out, which meant that the battles had come to an end for now.

Chapter 648: Shen Gong

The crowd was just as surprised when Yun Fei Yang gave up. Perhaps he had really only wanted to see some of Ku Yao Teng's Qi.

But Yun Fei Yang was right. Everybody was hoping to see what kind of gifts Shen Gong had for them.

Ku Yao Teng groaned coldly and returned to his seat. There were fifteen people left, the fifteen strongest ones.

Xue Wu Chang glanced at the fifteen cultivators left and said, "Alright, come with me now. In seven days we will come back here to continue."

"Seven days..." The crowd was surprised. They needed seven days to receive gifts?

The fifteen geniuses weren't ready for that either, where were they going? Why did they need seven days? But in any case they were all happy. They weren't going to complain because they were going to obtain treasures...

"Mister, I offended many people in Mi Cheng... I will be with you for seven days... But my friends..." said Lin Feng in a weak voice. Han Man and Po Jun were there too, maybe Lin Feng's enemies would try to kill them... Lin Feng was scared to leave them for seven days.

“Where are your friends?” asked Xue Wu Chang.

“There.” said Lin Feng, pointing at them.

“Alright. If anyone dares touch them, Shen Gong will kill them. And for further precaution, I will send people to protect them.” said Xue Wu Chang. He then continued, “You don’t need to worry about anything. Relax. During these seven days, you must only pay attention to yourself. I will make sure there will be no problems.”

“Alright. Thank you very much.” said Lin Feng while bowing in front of him. Surely, nothing would happen to Han Man and the two others.

“Anything else?” asked Xue Wu Chang to the crowd. Everybody shook their heads, expressionlessly.

“Alright, then follow me.” said Xue Wu Chang, turning around and rising up into the air.

“In seven days, wait here.” shouted Lin Feng to Han Man and the others. Then he rose up in the air and followed Xue Wu Chang, along with the others. Their pure Qi was emitting whistling sounds in the atmosphere.

They were flying above the clouds in the sky.

“Lin Feng, what do you think we will get this time?” asked Jun Mo Xi. Lin Feng and the others from Dragon Mountain were flying

together in the sky, only Duan Wu Dao wasn't with them. Duan Wu Dao hadn't even glanced at anyone else. He had stayed alone from the beginning and to the end. He looked very selfish, as if he had been the master of the sky and was above all the others.

"No idea." said Lin Feng, shaking his head. He had no idea what the competition would be like this time, would it be like the first round? Would luck play a role in this part of the competition? Xue Wu Chang had said that the number of their jade key would play a role.. Each jade key probably enabled cultivators to access different treasures... Lin Feng would probably obtain the best treasure then...

"The first round was about getting skills in the temples, so this time wouldn't be about getting skills or techniques... Maybe it's about making us smarter and increasing our power of understanding... Maybe we will understand cultivation layers even better." said Jun Mo Xi. Xue Wu Chang had told them that they would first get treasures and then fight again... So what were those treasures? Would they drastically change their cultivation abilities? Would they influence the next battles?

Nobody knew anything. Lin Feng and Jun Mo Xi were no exceptions.

After two days, Xue Wu Chang slowed down. In front of them was a mysterious Qi... It was an illusion.

"We arrived." said Xue Wu Chang. He stopped and everybody else stopped with him. They all looked to Xue Wu Chang.

They had arrived?

There was nothing in front of them, only clouds?

Were there treasures there?

In front of them appeared a gigantic cloud, they were confused. Suddenly, some clouds rolled apart and a magnificent light appeared. Their hearts began to beat faster.

In front of them, clouds opened and a path appeared.

“What’s this?” the crowd was astonished. How intriguing! That was an illusionary door! A moment before, there had been clouds but now there was an illusionary door. Inside, there was a hole that looked like another world.

“Come.” said Xue Wu Chang, passing through the door. The crowd followed him and then they sensed that their pure Qi was becoming chaotic.

“How pleasant. The pure Qi of the earth and the sky is very thick here.” thought Lin Feng, pleasantly surprised. He turned his head and saw that the illusionary door had closed itself. They had really arrived in another world. Under their feet, the pure Qi of the earth and the sky was rolling.

Lin Feng had the feeling that this place was like a fairytale, like those he had watched on the TV in his previous life.

There were celestial palaces above the clouds.

“That place is Shen Gong.” said Xue Wu Chang, everybody was astonished. Shen Gong was that entire mystical place!

Clouds kept rolling over, that place was proof of Shen Gong’s power.

“On the path of cultivation, there really are no limits.” thought Lin Feng terribly excited. Creating such a world was monstrously difficult.. Who could create such a world? What was the cultivation layer of the one who had created it?

“Protector Xue!” shouted a person in the distance. It was a young man in armor. He then nodded to Xue Wu Chang.

That young man was about twenty-five years old and his Qi was enigmatic. He was even stronger than Yu Mo. That person was different from the eight most outstanding geniuses of the competition. His armor, just like his eyes, were twinkling.

“Hao Peng, come. These people are for you.” said Xue Wu Chang to the young man. Hao Peng nodded and said, “In seven days, I’ll bring them back.”

“Alright.” said Xue Wu Chang, nodding. Immediately after, he

looked at the crowd and said, “Go with Hao Peng. He knows where to take you.”

Everybody looked at Hao Peng, he also stared back at them. He looked calm and serene, maybe even a bit proud.

“So those are the strong cultivators from Xue Yu, they’re not that strong!” thought Hao Peng while observing them. Of course, he wasn’t going to tell them that.

People didn’t have the feeling that Hao Peng was nice because of the way he looked. Ling Xiao Xiao, Qing Meng Xin and the other girls. He had even frowned while looking at Tang You You as if he had wanted to say something but hadn’t.

“Come with me.” said Hao Peng. They then all followed closely behind him.

They could see many palaces in front of them, what an astonishing architecture! The Qi of the earth and the sky was extremely dense and pure there. The palaces were gigantic, just like wonderlands.

If they had practiced in that place before, they would have already reached monumental cultivation levels!

Sects and countries would become extremely powerful if their people could train there...

Xue Wu Chang is our protector but he has limits to where he can take you. There are many places where he cannot go so I have to do it for you.” explained Hao Peng. Everybody was surprised, Xue Wu Chang couldn’t go just anywhere, he was only a protector... What an incredible place!

But Hao Peng didn’t seem so nice. He was criticizing others to make himself appear more important!

Chapter 649: The Banquet

Hao Peng was leading the way and was followed by the geniuses of the competition. But as before, nobody could see where they were going...

“That place is gigantic.” thought Lin Feng. They had been flying for such a long time but still hadn’t arrived... How big was that place... There was still an endless sky all around them.

Lin Feng didn’t understand precisely who the Shen Gong people were or how strong they were.

Suddenly Lin Feng was in a new place. In front of him was a passageway that was about twenty meters wide. There was a gigantic and magnificent gate at the entrance and "Shen Gong North" was written above it.

“There are four districts here: Shen Gong North, Shen Gong South, Shen Gong East and Shen Gong West. Shen Gong North is one of the most prestigious districts. so much so that protectors like Xue Wu Chang cannot come here.” explained Hao Peng before entering the passageway.

Lin Feng and the others continued to be surprised but followed him into Shen Gong North. After the passageway they arrived in a new area that reminded them of the outside. However, palaces were a bit smaller and there were cultivation fields. This seemed like a place was for residents... There were all sorts of skills, bicycles, sword skills, etc. Everybody could see that. (editor's note: I have no

idea why it says bicycles there, lol!)

“When will we arrive!?” asked Di Ling, he was starting to get upset. They had been there for a while already.

“Immediately.” said Hao Peng. “Shen Gong is like heaven, you’ve never seen such a place before. Your eyes can now open... It’s an incredible place which will enable you to understand the world even better. It’s a place for strong cultivators, it’s a place where you realize how tiny you are. Don’t think that you are real geniuses because you are a little strong in Xue Yu. Actually, you are worthless. I have seen authentic geniuses in my life and I don’t consider any of you as one.”

“What?” They were astonished when they heard him, he had actually made them quite upset. Hao Peng was making fun of them and insulting them.

“How strong are you in Shen Gong then?” asked Di Ling mockingly.

“I am one of the top geniuses, I belong to the Shen Gong North.” said Hao Peng.

“You are from Shen Gong where the Qi of the earth and the sky is extremely dense. Considering those facts, you are actually a weakling.” said Di Ling. Hao Peng was stupefied, he turned his head and saw Di Ling’s cold smile.

“You don’t know the immensity of heaven and earth.” said Hao Peng indifferently. Finally, they arrived in front of a gigantic palace. In front of the palace were several silhouettes. It seemed like those people were waiting for them.

As expected, Hao Peng jumped and landed on the roof of the palace. He looked at one person respectfully and said, “Your Highness, I brought them.”

“You worked hard.” said the middle-aged man indifferently. That person didn’t sound or look like an incredible person, he looked like your average Joe. Even his Qi was normal.

That person was the Leader of Shen Gong... What was his cultivation level like?

Everybody wanted to know how strong that person was.

“It is an honor for me to receive so many outstanding geniuses in Shen Gong North. Since you are my guests, we should have a banquet together. After the dinner we will bring you to the next place.” said the leader of Shen Gong North. He didn’t sound proud at all, he just sounded like a nice person. He was probably easy to get along with, he even looked like he respected them already.

“A banquet...” thought Lin Feng. Shen Gong also prepared banquets... Lin Feng was wondering what that place really was.

Lin Feng was a bit upset because of the incredibly beautiful

women on the leader's side. All of them had an extraordinary Qi, they were all extremely strong and had natural abilities. And yet, they were only following them around, Lin Feng didn't feel at ease.

He had the feeling that Shen Gong was an odd place.

What did they want to do? The Great Competition of Xue Yu was managed by Shen Gong, what was their goal?

Was it really to see who the strongest cultivators were?

All of them had never thought about these things until now. But suddenly they were all starting to ask themselves these questions, not only Lin Feng.

A group of women in white clothes brought tables, chairs, food. Everything was put on two sides of the table and the middle was reserved for the respectable people of Shen Gong North.

"Alright. Everybody, let's start." said the Leader of Shen Gong North. Then they looked at everything and their eyes lit up.

"That is... The banquet?" On the tables, apart from alcohol and food, there were specks of grass and pills.

That banquet was luxurious and extravagant, there were grass and pills... And all of them were extraordinary, everybody could sense the pleasant Qi emerging out of them...

“Shen Gong...” sighed Lin Feng. That was how strong and rich this sphere of influence was. Ordinary people couldn’t imagine such things. Even cultivators like Lin Feng who had become stronger step by step, who had gone through hardships, had taken risks... And had, step by step, broken through to higher cultivation layers.

Maybe Shen Gong's people, with their wealth, only had to listen to some teachers and partake in some small battles against their fellow disciples. Learning incredible skills and techniques made them monstrously strong. Sometimes they would go out to practice using some grass and pills, they could destroy extremely strong cultivators with all of that... Those who made great efforts in Shen Gong could become gods...

That was the difference between a place like Shen Gong and a country like Xue Yue. The conditions at birth were different so the future was different.

Of course, Lin Feng wasn’t going to undervalue himself. On the path of cultivation, going through hardships and taking risks were wonderful things. If a cultivator who had become godlike by going through hardships and taking risks fought a godlike cultivator who had enjoyed a comfortable life, there would be no suspense. The winner would be obvious.

But Lin Feng didn’t deny that it was the case for all of them. Surely, some people from wealthy groups also went through difficult times.

Generally speaking, people from wealthy groups all had better conditions. What was important was the way the elders educated them.

However, those who reached the clouds thanks to their own efforts could be proud of themselves.

In comparison with those Shen Gong people, the geniuses of the Great Competition of Xue Yu didn't have such luxuries. They had to rely on themselves a lot and didn't have access to incredible treasures to improve themselves with on the path of cultivation.

“Please.” said the Leader of Shen Gong North when he saw that the crowd was astonished.

The leader of Shen Gong North took the best seat and sat down. Then the many beautiful women sat down around him. And then some extremely strong cultivators came and sat down with them too.

“I wish I could know you better, please introduce yourselves.” said the Leader of Shen Gong. He was, as before, extremely polite. He didn't sound arrogant at all.

“Firmament Empire, Di Ling.” said Di Ling.

“Firmament blood... Di Ling, not bad.” said the Leader of Shen Gong North while nodding.

“Xue Yue, Duan Wu Dao.”

“The unruly and ultra-violent crown prince. What you have accomplished is great for such a tiny country as Xue Yue.” said the Leader of Shen Gong North, it seemed like he knew everything about them already....

“Black Wings Empire, Xue Sha.”

“Magnolia Empire, Ling Xiao.”

The Leader of Shen Gong knew all of them... And then Lin Feng introduced himself.

“Xue Yue, Lin Feng.” said Lin Feng, but this time the Leader of Shen Gong North looked surprised. He didn’t know him, Lin Feng from Xue Yue?

He had never heard of such a genius, who was that?

Chapter 650: Shen Gong's Goal

“Lin Feng!” whispered the Leader of Shen Gong North. Lin Feng was from Xue Yue... A tiny little country like Xue Yue had two geniuses in the top fifteen.... That was very rare.

Besides, Lin Feng had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer so the Leader of Shen Gong North was even more surprised! Apart from him and Yun Fei Yang, they had all broken through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer and beyond.

“Not bad. You are extremely young, such a cultivation level is rare. I hope that after having gone to our special places, your cultivation level will increase. I hope that you will become much stronger.” said the Leader of Shen Gong North... In his eyes, Lin Feng was so young and was already stronger. He could be proud of himself because that was already incredible.

Lin Feng slightly smiled and bowed but said nothing.

“Dragon Mountain, Jun Mo Xi.” said Jun Mo Xi.

“There are six people from Dragon Mountain and the countries under its jurisdiction... Shen Gong will remember that and there will be an award, of course.” said the Leader of Shen Gong North while smiling and looking at Jun Mo Xi. Jun Mo Xi was, of course, delighted. Everything was going better than he had expected. Lin Feng and Yun Fei Yang were even there in the top fifteen.

Everybody introduced themselves and then the Leader of Shen

Gong North said, “Alright, everybody help yourself. Please don’t be shy.”

After that, the Leader of Shen Gong North looked at the beautiful women and young men in armors, “Weren’t you curious to know those geniuses? You have the opportunity now. You can even measure your strength with theirs.”

They nodded, some beautiful woman were drinking alcohol while looking at the men in admiration.

Many of those young men were looking at Qing Meng Xin, she looked so lovely and attractive. She could make men’s souls shake, her beautiful skin looked like a precious material. She had a resplendent smile on her face and her neck was as white and beautiful as that of a swan. When they looked down at her cleavage, they only wanted to see more...

However, the first one who stood up didn’t go to towards Qing Meng Xin but towards Tang You You!

Tang You You looked cold and elegant. She was different from Qing Meng Xin but they were both beautiful. Even though Tang You You wasn’t sensual, she looked delicate.

“Your name is Tang You You, would you like to sit next to me and have some drinks?” said Hao Peng, waiting for Tang You You’s response. He looked strange... At the same time, a beautiful woman moved next to Jun Mo Xi. She was looking at him in a sensual and alluring way. Her eyes looked as limpid as water.

“Ehhh...” Lin Feng was stupefied. He had the feeling that the banquet was a blind date meeting...

Beautiful women loved heroes, and handsome heroes also loved beautiful women... A group of beautiful women walked towards Di Ling, Duan Wu Dao, etc. Because there were only four women, the young men from Shen Gong moved towards one person each. Those beautiful women looked outstanding and extraordinary, one could see it from their Qi.

Lin Feng looked right and left. On his left, there was Jun Mo Xi. On his right, there was Tang You You. They were both accompanied, only Lin Feng was alone...

He had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer... It was too low for the beautiful women of Shen Gong.

But then a beautiful woman who was drinking alcohol moved towards him. She looked left and right, and then smiled wryly and asked him, “Can I sit next to you?”

“Of course.” said Lin Feng with a slight smile on his face. That beautiful woman was wearing a blue cheong sam and she sat down on the floor with him. She looked different from the rest. When she saw that Lin Feng was looking at her, she raised her glass and took a sip.

Lin Feng also took a sip, the girl who was sitting with him was the most beautiful of all the girls there. But she looked different,

she looked lonely and solitary..

“You don’t like that kind of atmosphere...?” asked Lin Feng in a very low voice.

The girl raised her head, smiled and said, “We, people of Shen Gong, need the purest and strongest blood!”

“.....”

Lin Feng was stupefied... He understood what she meant. The banquet had been organized to create couples between the most outstanding geniuses of the Great Competition of Xue Yu and their people... They needed their women to give birth to incredible geniuses....

Therefore, there was that kind of banquet...

“I understand.” said Lin Feng while smiling and nodding.

The girl lowered her head and drank her glass of alcohol... And then suddenly, as if she had thought about something, she raised her head again and looked at Lin Feng, “Look, what do you think? If you and I...? Would you be willing?”

Lin Feng looked surprised, just like that?

“Anyways, if it’s not you, it’s them. Even though your cultivation

level is low, you look handsome to me. You seem to have very high natural abilities, your blood mustn't be that different from mine..." whispered the girl with a wry smile.

"Since you don't like selling yourself, why don't you find a lover instead? Wouldn't that be better?" asked Lin Feng.

"I am a Shen Gong girl... We are as outstanding as those young men, but we don't have as much choice as them... We have to find people who have amazing natural abilities, even if their cultivation level is low, it doesn't matter."

"You're quite audacious." said Lin Feng while smiling and shaking his head. That place was so huge, with the leader's cultivation level, even if she was whispering he could probably hear what she was saying...

"The Leader knows we don't want to do this... But he doesn't care. The most important thing is Shen Gong. He doesn't repent anything at all." said the girl as if she didn't care. Lin Feng was speechless, but that girl was interesting. In other circumstances, Lin Feng might have fallen in love with her.

"I already have wives..." said Lin Feng while smiling.

When Tang You You heard him, she glanced at him and turned her head again. Then she said to Hao Peng, "Go away, I'm not interested in you."

Hao Peng was speechless, he had just invited Tang You You to sit with him but she was refusing him so out-right. He had never thought she would react like that. He was so astonished that he could only pull a long face.

Then he stood up and looked at Lin Feng and the girl. Then he looked at the girl and said, “Qing Chan, you’re really becoming worse and worse. Choosing a cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer, that’s ridiculous.”

Then, Hao Peng rolled up his sleeves and looked at Lin Feng with discontent.

“Ignore him, he’s very arrogant. He thinks that he’s the most amazing cultivator in the world. But there are actually many people in Shen Gong who are much stronger than him.” said Qing Chan indifferently. Hao Peng had already been rejected by that girl in the past. He was still furious so that’s why he was being rude with her.

Lin Feng slightly nodded and took a pill from the table which he immediately swallowed. An incredible feeling invaded his body, it wasn’t comfortable at all but it felt like his pure Qi was getting purer than before.

After a short time, everybody went back to their own seats, those beautiful women as well.

The Leader of Shen Gong North smiled and said, “You are the most outstanding geniuses of Xue Yu and those are the most

outstanding young men and women of Shen Gong. I organized that banquet so that you can exchange.”

“Alright. Since you don’t feel like it right now, I will first bring you to the special area.”

The Leader of Shen Gong North then stood up and said, “Follow me.”

Everybody suddenly became interested. On the path of cultivation, people were mostly interested in increasing their strength...

Everybody rose up in the air and followed the leader. What was that special area the Leader had been talking about? They were finally about to benefit from the great advantages of Shen Gong!

Chapter 651: The Special Area

Apart from the Leader of Shen Gong North and the fifteen geniuses, several outstanding cultivators from Shen Gong followed them too. They were all heading for the special area.

After a while, the clouds rolled away and a gigantic area appeared. There was no palace, only a moonlight shining upon clouds.

“That’s clearly another world... There is a moon and a sun... Even at night it cannot get dark. The sun and the moon seem like they will never disappear.”

Lin Feng looked at the moonlight and was surprised. He had seen many incredible things but he had never thought such a thing could exist.

That was another area of Shen Gong, the Special Area...

“In the past, I went to the fire desert when I crossed the illusionary door in the Lovesickness Forest... Could Shen Gong be a place like Tian Ya Hai...?”

Lin Feng suddenly thought about that mysterious place where he had been in the past. Li Shan had helped him fabricate his banner there, but he had had evil intentions. It had been very difficult to escape... And then he had forced his parents to block the entrance to that world and never go back again. It was too dangerous.

When Lin Feng thought about that, he raised his head and looked at the sky.

“Let’s go up.” said the Leader of Shen Gong North.

The crowd followed, rising higher up into the sky.

The clouds were rolling more and more violently. The crowd had the feeling that they were traveling back and forth... They were surrounded by clouds. When they got closer to the sun, sixteen gigantic and ancient gates appeared, they could cross those gates...

“Those gates all lead to a special place, you have to use your keys to open them.” said the Leader of Shen Gong North. That’s why there could only be sixteen participants in the end at the Great Competition of Xue Yu, because there were only sixteen gates...

What would there be behind the gates? Nobody knew, maybe that the Leader of Shen Gong North didn’t know either.

Those gates were next to each other. From above, it had the shape of a semicircle. Some gates were very high, some less.

“Those who have the last two keys can enter the fourteenth and fifteenth gates.” said the Leader of Shen Gong North. Quickly, Yun Fei Yang and the fourteenth person walked to the gates, took out their keys and opened the gates. The atmosphere vibrated and the gates opened themselves. A gigantic vortex appeared and the two

silhouettes disappeared.

“Thirteenth!” said the Leader. It was the girl with the ice-soul skill, she also entered the special area.

The Leader continued calling people until the tenth, but at that moment, he was speechless. He had also been observing people while calling them, and he had tried to guess who the last ones would be but... Lin Feng was still there?

Lin Feng had broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer and was in the top ten...?

With his cultivation level, the Leader could be mistaken. Even if Lin Feng was using a secret skill to hide his cultivation level, the Leader of Shen Gong North would still know Lin Feng's cultivation level.

He looked at Lin Feng in a strange way and said, “From sixth to tenth, you can go.”

Those people immediately moved to the special areas, the Leader was still astonished. Lin Feng was still standing there... Calmly and motionless... Lin Feng was in the top five...?

Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao were there as he had expected, but Lin Feng was still there... The Leader was also surprised about Tang You You. He would have expected her to be at the end of the top ten...

“Are they fourth and fifth...?” thought the Leader of Shen Gong North. He then continued, “Fourth and Fifth, go.”

“I’m off.” said Jun Mo Xi to Tang You You and Lin Feng. He immediately moved to the special area. Duan Wu Dao also went to the fourth special area.

Tang You You and Lin Feng were still there...

“Eh...?” The Leader was astonished. Even the outstanding young men of Shen Gong were astonished. What was going on?

Lin Feng and Tang You were in the top three...?

“Tang You You...” Hao Peng was staring at Tang You You in a perverted way. His eyes were twinkling.

“Third, go.” said the Leader... But Tang You You and Lin Feng remained motionless... Instead, Di Ling entered the third special area...

“Second, go.” said the Leader, his heart was pounding... Lin Feng and Tang You You were first and second...

“I’m off.” said Tang You You to Lin Feng. She then used her jade key to open the gate and disappeared.

Lin Feng was the last one left!!!

“Lin Feng!” The Leader of Shen Gong North and the others were absolutely astonished. The first one was Lin Feng!

But he had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer, how could he be first...?!

“Interesting!” thought Qing Chan, at that moment he was smiling. That cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer was interesting...

“Do you have the first jade key?” asked the Leader of Shen Gong North, he couldn’t believe his eyes.

Lin Feng stretched his arm and opened his hand where the first jade key appeared.

“I’m very surprised.” said the Leader sighing. “Lin Feng, you will benefit a lot from the first special area... You have seven days there... Only the first key can allow you to stay there for seven days... Cherish that opportunity and the treasures you will acquire. It will not only help you now with your cultivation level but it will help you in the future too... Many doors will be open for you in the future.”

“Thank you.” said Lin Feng, nodding. Xue Wu Chang had told him that the first special area would be extra special. It seemed like that place was going to be extraordinary.

“You can go.” said the Leader. Lin Feng nodded and went to the first gate and opened it. A vortex appeared and Lin Feng disappeared from everyone’s field of vision.

The Leader looked at Lin Feng disappearing and then said, “Hao Peng, bring Xue Wu Chang to me.”

“Roger, Leader.” Said Hao Peng while nodding. His silhouette flickered and he disappeared. In a flash, he came back with Xue Wu Chang.

“Leader.” said Xue Wu Chang while bowing.

“Wu Chang, I’m very surprised by the current rankings. Tell me, how are those fifteen people?”

“Oh.” said Xue Wu Chang while nodding and then continued, “Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao are extremely strong, they are brutal and violent. They still haven’t used their full strength because all of their opponents so far were very weak. They are third and fourth. The fifth one, Jun Mo Xi can use vital Qi of righteousness... He is very enigmatic and unfathomable... Besides, I don’t know what his spirit is... Then the sixth one is Xue Sha and the tenth one is the Dead Tree, they are similarly strong... Maybe, with the benefits of the special area the difference will be made for the end of the competition...”

“The most important person amongst the higher numbers is actually the last one, Yun Fei Yang. He has a very deep knowledge

of cultivation. He shouldn't be the last one, he will be in the top ten..”

“I noticed that too, he's hiding his true strength. He is very enigmatic.” said the Leader when he heard him. “What about Tang You You and Lin Feng?”

“Tang You You and Lin Feng entered the temples together, Tang You You's agility techniques and spirit are very particular. She definitely belongs to the top ten in terms of strength... I don't know how it will end for her though... We will see.” said Xue Wu Chang. People would fight until the end to be in the top ten...

“What about Lin Feng?”

“Lin Feng!” Xue Wu Chang made a pause and said, “He has a terrifying power of understanding. With the strength of the fifth Xuan Qi layer, he used the memories he obtained in the temple to kill people who had broken through to the very top of the seventh Xuan Qi layer. He is very young too... I don't quite understand him either...”

Chapter 652: Amazing Sword

“A cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer who can kill people of the seventh Xuan Qi layer??!” the Leader of Shen Gong North was astonished.

“Xue Wu Chang, what do you think will happen in the first special area?” asked the leader.

“His cultivation will improve and not only a little. Even if he doesn’t break through to the sixth Xuan Qi layer, he will be able to defeat cultivators of the eighth Xuan Qi layer...” said Xue Wu Chang.

“What if I help him break through to the next cultivation layer?”

“Leader!” Xue Wu Chang was astonished. The Leader wanted to help Lin Feng, so.....

“Lin Feng was able to get the first jade key, I hope we have him on our side.” said the Leader. Then he looked at Qing Chan and said, “You and Lin Feng should make friends.”

Qing Chan didn't know what to say. She had talked Lin Feng because he was alone, she didn’t want him to feel embarrassed or lonely... She hadn’t thought that he had such monstrous natural abilities at that moment... To the extent that the Leader of Shen Gong North would attach so much importance to him.

“I will do my best.” said Qing Chan while bowing. Qing Chan lowered her head and smiled wryly.

The Leader of Shen Gong North nodded and looked at the outstanding boys and girls, “You are all the most outstanding disciples of Shen Gong. Those people are the most outstanding people of Xue Yu. They all belong to clans and sects who are not as wealthy as us. They relied on themselves and nobody else to reach such cultivation levels... If Shen Gong helps them, they will become monstrously powerful. If you manage to steal their heart, it will be beneficial for Shen Gong and for yourselves.”

“Indeed, Leader.” said everybody while nodding. A few girls were looking at Qing Chan enviously. She had chosen the best one, Lin Feng... The one who was considered as precious by the Leader of Shen Gong North...

“Alright, I’m going to talk to the respectable master now.”

The crowd was surprised, the Leader of Shen Gong North was going to talk to the respectable master about Lin Feng...

Hao Peng was pulling a long face. He despised the geniuses of Xue Yu, but the Leader of Shen Gong North attached such importance to him... He was even going to talk to the respectable master about Lin Feng...

.....

Lin Feng entered the special area and found a thick, rich Qi of the Earth and sky surrounding him. It was five times denser than the one outside in the normal areas of Shen Gong and ten times denser than in the outside world.

It meant that practicing cultivation was also ten times faster in such an environment.

The Qi of the earth and the sky was ten times thicker than outside, but apart from that the world didn't seem much different. It was just vast and arid, there was absolutely nothing. There was no sun and no moon either, but it was bright.

Lin Feng made a step forwards, he had used the first jade key to come to that place... And there was nothing? How could that be useful to him?

“How could that be helpful for my cultivation?” thought Lin Feng. However, that arid place looked similar to where Lin Feng had obtained the sword memories. It had then fallen down from the sky and Lin Feng had been able to visualize it. There had been nothing else but a sword.

However, at that moment, there was only Lin Feng and nothing else.

“Is there anything special here.” thought Lin Feng. He was in the best special area, there couldn't be only a thick Qi of the earth and sky. Otherwise it wouldn't have deserved to be called the first area.

Lin Feng sat down cross-legged and started practicing cultivation. It seemed like that vast and arid area came from an ancient memory. It looked ordinary and extraordinary at the same time. In Lin Feng's heart, there was only one sword.

Lin Feng was remembering the memories from the sword temple in that arid area. That sword appeared again in front of him and it was surrounded by an incredible quantity of sword energy. A real sword that could lacerate the universe.

There was nothing else but the sword for Lin Feng at that moment, he was focused on it.

Lin Feng released some sword energy which whistled in the air. The sword Qi rolled in the atmosphere, it was terrifyingly sharp. If anyone had been around they would have gotten lacerated by that sword.

“That sword is in front of me... Hmm, strange...” thought Lin Feng as he abruptly opened his eyes. A terrifying sword light flashed and his heart started pounding.

In front of him, in the desert there was a sword and it was suspended in air. It seemed like it had existed since the creation of times, it definitely didn't look like it had just appeared.

From that gigantic sword there was monstrous intent. Or more precisely, it looked like a special category of sword intent. One glance and he had the impression that the sword was an almighty warlord and could destroy the Continent of the Nine Clouds...

“Crrr.... Crrr.....”

In spite of Lin Feng’s willpower and determination, he still got propelled backwards a few steps from that sword intent.

“It is not an illusion.. It is real.” thought Lin Feng with his heart was pounding violently. A real sword had appeared in front of him and it contained real intent. Such a powerful strength was terrifying. One couldn’t understand it by looking at it with their eyes, They needed to use their heart to understand it.

“How come it’s like this? And how come the sword memories appeared here in reality?”

Lin Feng couldn’t calm down... Was it... Did he only need to think about something for it to appear?

Everything seemed to be an illusion except for the sword and its intent, those were absolutely real... And Lin Feng wasn’t crazy!

He slowly walked forwards and sensed that real sword. The terrifying sword intent was cutting at his skin so he didn't continue moving forwards.

All of this was part of the memories, and now those memories had turned into reality. It was astonishing.

A terrifying sword energy emerged out of Lin Feng's body and whistled in the atmosphere. There was sword energy everywhere.

Lin Feng was trying to walk steadily, he wanted to actually sense that real sword and merge with it.

In Lin Feng's heart, there were only four words, "I can do it."

The sword Qi was becoming increasingly violent and it was lacerating the atmosphere. But Lin Feng was convinced he could do it.

He still had the feeling that it was extremely difficult. The sword energy was monstrously strong, more than what he had expected... It didn't belong to his strength. If it had been a part of his strength it wouldn't have appeared in the air out of nowhere.

"What I think becomes true." thought Lin Feng, his heart was still pounding. His sword energy became stronger as he ran towards that gigantic sword in front of him. He wanted to see it for real.

Lin Feng stretched his hand and put it on the sword. An incredible sword energy which could cut through the entire world spread in the air. Lin Feng and the sword seemed to have fused together, he was the sword and the sword was Lin Feng.

"Rise!" Lin Feng raised his arm. It was very easy as he managed to rise that sword up in the air. Lin Feng was sure that if he had

been a really strong cultivator, those geniuses at the Great Competition of Xue Yu would have all been insects in front of him. With that terrifying sword energy, he could destroy anything.

Lin Feng made another step and jumped up in the air as if he had been trying to attack the sky! There was nothing else in that world but his sword.

Lin Feng looked like a sword god. His body was like a sword which could annihilate everything.

“Will I be like that in the future...?” thought Lin Feng unable to think about anything but his sword.

Chapter 653: Sword and Heruka

Lin Feng closed his eyes and remained in the air while firmly holding his sword. He was calmly sensing that extreme strength.

He was using his heart to understand the sword. That strength didn't belong to him but he could clearly sense that the sword energy was reaching the clouds, his sword cultivation was drastically improving.

He didn't know how to go and look for it, it was just there in front of him. How convenient! He could immediately sense it this way. He had a feeling that he could control swords better than a moment before. How strong he was becoming?

He could understand and grasp information faster and faster, like a sponge. That sword intent was becoming a part of himself. In the future, if he could use it he would progress much faster.

“That's why the Leader of Shen Gong North told me that it what I learned inside the special area would improve my cultivation, and also help me in the future...” thought Lin Feng. That special area was magical, all the things he thought about could become real. Then he could use them to study, how wonderful! If he had the ability to practice there he would progress incredibly quickly... After a few months in that incredible area, his power of understanding would also drastically increase...

The vast and arid area was filled with sword energy, there was nothing else. He looked particularly proud in the sky. Then he

closed his eyes and continued releasing monstrous amounts of sword energy unconsciously. Lin Feng was studying sword cultivation deep in his heart, he was fusing together with his sword.

It lasted for a long time and even then Lin Feng was still immersed in that state. He couldn't stop these feelings that were extremely deep and profound. That kind of environment really helped him improve his power of understanding. Even if Lin Feng had some moments of consciousness, he still refused to open his eyes. He wanted to enjoy every single second in that marvelous place. Each time he visualized the sword, he could progress on the path of cultivation.

Learning alone and learning from a strong cultivator were two different things. Extremely strong cultivators could dispel the clouds and see the sun, they could enlighten people with perfect wisdom and flawless teachings. But Lin Feng had become an extremely strong cultivator alone, all by himself. His power of understanding was way more advanced than the majority of people.

Suddenly, Lin Feng abruptly opened his eyes and there was a terrifying sword light in the sky. It looked like sunlight but it turned into a sword light. It looked like the sword of a killer.

“Five days... I only have two more days.” thought Lin Feng. Some rumbling sounds spread in the air and the sword lacerated the entire space. The Earth and sky were shaking, the sword Qi was cutting through them.

“Crrr....” A massive and terrifying amount of sword Qi continued spreading in the atmosphere as the area was lacerated. Then the sword penetrated into the ground of the arid area.

“Two more days... I could continue practicing sword cultivation, but I have more abilities that I need to improve.” thought Lin Feng. He shook his body and the sword disappeared. The atmosphere became calm again as if nothing had ever happened. That place was truly incredible.

After a short moment, Lin Feng sat down again, cross-legged. There was no sword anymore, however, a new world appeared, the world formed from the memories of the Heruka.

Apart from his sword skills, Lin Feng also had the terrifying strength of the Heruka. He needed to understand it to improve it.

The special area gradually turned dark like night. Then a gigantic golden Buddha appeared, it was sitting in suspended in air. Its golden light was dazzling, it was a real Buddha. It could protect all sentient beings from torment and sufferings.

Facing the Buddha, there was a pitch-black body. It was releasing a terrifying evil energy which seemed extremely ancient.

Just like the Yin and the Yang, those two seemed like they were fighting.

The Buddha kept chanting some mantras in sanskrit and golden

letters came out of his mouth. Those golden letters turned into golden hands and then its entire body was surrounded by golden hands.

On the evil statue there was a black light which turned into a yaksha (translator's note: a yaksha is a malevolent spirit in buddhism), but it had the body of an asura (an asura is a malevolent spirit in Indian mythology). Those lights looked deadly. That black light was the exact opposite of the paramitas (the six paramitas are practices to reach enlightenment in buddhism), it was turning into an authentic devil from ancient times.

Lin Feng abruptly opened his eyes and looked at the golden light and the black light. He couldn't help but shake, he was standing between the Buddha and the malevolent spirit. They were actually fighting right next him.

Under his feet there were golden and black lights shining too. It was extremely intriguing that an authentic Heruka had appeared. It had the strength to destroy the universe! Lin Feng was standing between the two sides of the Heruka and had the feeling he was going to drown from their struggle.

“If someday I can transform into a gigantic golden Buddha and illuminate the world.. Or turn into an evil and malevolent spirit, and then I could become a Heruka... And annihilate anybody standing in my way.” thought Lin Feng. He felt like a hero, his heart was burning. He had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer but he was able to participate at the Great Competition of Xue Yu and dazzle everybody. People had even attached

importance to him and respected him. They had told me that I was a rare bird, but compared with authentically strong cultivators, he was still too weak. The Xuan Qi layer was nothing!

That statue with the golden hands could destroy the entire planet if it was challenged. The Heruka could even destroy people's hearts.

Lin Feng was convinced that there were no gods in that world, Buddha or Heruka... All that mattered in the end was strength, the strong could annihilate the rest.

No matter how strong the Heruka was, a cultivator could become a Heruka.

When Lin Feng thought about it, he sat down and looked at the battle between the Heruka and the Buddha. Around his body was a golden light which turned into a gigantic golden Buddha. His entire body was changing and turning into a real Buddha. He then slowly rose up in the atmosphere.

He was looking down at the earth, he was above the sky and the stars were within reach. The planet was tiny, even though Lin Feng knew that it wasn't his own strength, he could still clearly sense it and feel it. At the same time he was studying the teachings of the Buddha and the Heruka, understanding their power. Everything he could understand was going to belong to him and he would be able to use it after leaving the special area.

One day after, Lin Feng was still in the air and his body turned

black, he had transformed into an evil spirit.

“Go!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. In the atmosphere an Asura shot towards the ground. It seemed like it could annihilate anything as a gigantic sound spread in the air and a large crater formed. It was so deep that one couldn’t see the bottom, it looked like an endless abyss.

“I really can’t wait to use that kind of strength later.” Lin Feng stretched his hand and continued practicing evil cultivation, he looked cold. He wasn’t a Buddha at that moment, he was a malevolent spirit.

“I’ve never really sensed the strength of the evil swords, but here in this special area... I can turn into a malevolent spirit and then I could use the hands of that body to use the evil swords....”

Lin Feng slowly closed his eyes and visualized the evil swords to summon them.

In the air nine swords appeared, they looked absolutely calm as they weren’t moving at all. Lin Feng opened his eyes and the nine swords were emitting a terrifying evil light, but then they merged together and became one sword.

In that sword was a terrifying evil energy... As well as a terrifying sword energy. That sword looked like that of a sanguinary killer, it looked bloodthirsty and cruel.

“The evil sword is even more powerful than my gigantic sword... Besides, my gigantic sword is an illusion whereas the evil sword is real and I can actually hold it in my hands. Unfortunately, I cannot control it...” thought Lin Fen. He stretched out his hand and grabbed the evil sword. Black clouds started spreading in the air, but at that moment the evil sword looked calm.

The evil sword was an object malevolent spirits could use. Maybe, only a malevolent spirit could control the evil sword. And right now Lin Feng was an evil and malevolent spirit..

Chapter 654: Coming Out

Lin Feng was holding the evil sword and the result of the combination of the nine swords. Lin Feng had turned into an evil spirit, his eyes looked extremely evil, ice-cold, cruel and emotionless.

The evil sword was releasing a monstrous evil Qi which had fused with his heart.

The evil sword had its own life and its own intent. With it, it could influence people's cultivation. Even when he had turned into an evil spirit his body was getting polluted and influenced. If an ordinary person fused with the evil sword, they would be unable to escape unless they turned into an evil spirit.

“Go!” Lin Feng moved his hand the sword streaked through the sky. It seemed like a fissure had appeared in the air where it had cut. Some rumbling sounds in the air and then the sword disappeared. Lin Feng just had the feeling that he was in a dream. Having the ability to control that sword was incredible, but he would regularly have that feeling in the future. Someday, he would become a real Heruka and slaughter everybody.

With that evil sword, he would be able to annihilate everything.

Lin Feng felt extremely happy and free from worries after that experience. He had the feeling that someone had just showed him the path to enlightenment.

“Boom boom boom!” The special area started shaking intensely.

Lin Feng frowned, that world didn't seem too solid. It was probably very difficult for people to remain in it for a long time. Actually, it was probably impossible, otherwise people from Shen Gong would spend all eternally practicing in there to become incredible geniuses... They would resemble Hao Peng or someone similar... They would be really terrifying.

The first special area was a perfect world to increase one's power of understanding. It saved cultivators one year or even ten years of time.

That kind of sensation was incredible, most people would never have such a sensation in their entire life. Sometimes, people couldn't break through to the next cultivation layer. If that was the case then entering the special area could help them overcome their difficulties.

“Boom boom boom!” some loud bangs sounded. The space was shaking, Lin Feng was stupefied. He turned his head around and saw a silhouette walking towards him...

“Huh?” what was going on? There were other people in the special area.

That was the first special area, Shen Gong wouldn't let anything go wrong... But there was a person at that moment... And Lin Feng didn't know who it was.

“Back!” When Lin Feng saw the silhouette getting closer, he started moving back like the wind.

However, it was useless, that person was too fast faster. Lin Feng couldn't see any face though, only a silhouette...

“It doesn't look good...” Lin Feng was astonished. That person was too fast, he couldn't move faster than he was.

“Bzzzzz.....” Lin Feng shivered, a finger landed on Lin Feng's shoulder that made him shake violently. He then shook his head, it was as if he had fallen into a coma.

The pure Qi all around him started rolling violently and spinning at full speed. Lin Feng's Qi was becoming stronger and stronger, it was turning into an incredible essence.

“Don't worry. I am anointing your head with the purest cream, I am enlightening you with perfect wisdom... Your strength determines the quantity of Qi of the Earth and sky that you can absorb. With your cultivation level, you don't need to resist. You can easily absorb it and your cultivation level will increase. Just let things go smoothly” said a voice which resonated in Lin Feng's head. Lin Feng had to stop resisting and let the Qi flow in his body.

After a while the voice disappeared from Lin Feng's head and he was sitting cross-legged. He was using his cosmos-burning sun skill to make the entire surroundings burn. Huge flames of Qi were burning around in the air.

A sun pattern appeared on Lin Feng's body. In the sky, even though there was initially no sun or moon, a sun appeared and started shining upon Lin Feng's body. The fire was becoming hotter and hotter.

“Boom!” that terrifying fire became rampant, Lin Feng was bathing in a gigantic sea of flames.

That terrifying fire seemed like it could burn the entire space. There was only that fire in Lin Feng's heart.

He slowly stood up but his eyes were closed as before. He raised his hands and two suns appeared.

Those two suns rose up and floated in the sky. Then, more suns appeared, up until the ninth sun. They were shining upon Lin Feng's body. This time, Lin Feng had an infinite quantity of pure Qi sun fire. The suns belonged to him and he could use all of their fire.

“Burn the cosmos!” thought Lin Feng. The flames started burning even more violently, there was nothing but flames all around Lin Feng.

The entire arid and vast area was covered with an infinite number of flames.

Lin Feng opened his eyes and saw the fire. So that was what it looked like when the skill reached its maximum... When it became

an authentic sun skill... It could really burn the entire cosmos...

“Boom boom boom!” The vast and arid area kept shaking, it was more and more violent. It seemed like it was going to collapse. Lin Feng looked sad... Seven days...

He really wanted to stay there longer, everyday in there was wonderful. He had made the same progress that he would have made in one year's time outside.

Unfortunately, he could only stay seven days in that great world and now it was over.

Actually, only Lin Feng was missing in the outside world, everyone else had already finished their time. They all looked more mature as if they had all made great progress.

They hadn't left him though. They raised their heads and looked at the first gate which was also the highest one. Lin Feng had obtained the first jade key so he got to train there. They were wondering when he would come out.

“The first special area is the best one and is also the place where one can spend the most time... It must be much better than all the special areas where we went. Lin Feng has been there for seven days, even if he hasn't changed his skills or anything he should have broken through to the next cultivation layer...” said Tang You You while watching the first gate. Actually, Lin Feng was the only one who had spent seven days in a special area.

Tang You You had been able to stay six days in the second area, and she had benefitted a lot from those six days.

“Breaking through to the next cultivation layers is only a matter of time. Even if Lin Feng doesn’t finish at the top of the rankings this time, he has already obtained a lot and will have a brilliant future in front of him. He will be even more successful in the future. He is able to progress faster than us.” said Jun Mo Xi in a low voice. When Yu Mo heard that, he groaned coldly and looked solemn. He hated Lin Feng for having obtained the first key, he wished he had spent seven days in the special area... He didn’t even have five days to practice cultivation...

But now, seven days had finally passed. Outside and around the gate, some clouds appeared as the gate opened itself. A silhouette appeared and descended from the sky.

That person’s Qi was different...

However, his cultivation level hadn’t changed! He had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer!

“Fifth Xuan Qi layer??” The Leader of Shen Gong North was surprised... But then sharp lights twinkled in his eyes and a magnificent and radiant smile appeared on his face, “that boy is hiding things!!”

If the Leader of Shen Gong North could only see that Lin Feng had broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer, it meant that he was being fooled by Lin Feng’s secret skill to hide his cultivation level!!

Chapter 655: The Prologue!

“He’s only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer...!” almost everybody looked at him with disdain. He had spent so much time in a place where the Qi of the Earth and sky were extremely strong and rich. In the end it seemed like he had been practicing for ten days! Besides, breaking through to the next cultivation layer after the fifth or sixth Xuan Qi layer wasn’t easy at all. It might be that Lin Feng would remain at the fifth Xuan Qi layer his entire life... Maybe he wouldn’t be able to condense pure Qi anymore and would remain at the top of the fifth Xuan Qi layer.

“Sending a person like you to the first area was a waste of resources!” said Yu Mo indifferently. Lin Feng had spent seven days in there and hadn’t even broken through to the next cultivation layer... If Yu Mo had been in there, he would have become a monster.

Yu Mo had entered the seventh special area but he had only been able to stay there for less than four days. During that time he had sensed what it was like to break through to the Tian Qi layer. He had realized what it was like to become a monstrously strong cultivator. And concerning his real strength, his cultivation level was now at the very top of the eighth Xuan Qi layer.

He was convinced that those four days spent in the special area had enlightened him. He had understood things which would help him break through to the Tian Qi layer at some point.

When Lin Feng heard Yu Mo, he just smiled indifferently. He didn’t have to justify himself because it was pointless, fighting

would be proof enough.

“Even though we could continue the Great Competition of Xue Yu now, if you want to consolidate your cultivation here in Shen Gong, we can delay it by two days.” said the Leader of Shen Gong North slowly. Everybody looked at him and nobody replied. Nobody was willing to postpone it.

“Leader, since everything was planned already, let’s not delay it.” said Di Ling indifferently. He didn’t want to delay the competition.

“Yes, he’s right. We’re about to start the last battles... Everybody is waiting for them now. If we delay it then everybody will be upset and worry, let’s continue now.” said Yu Mo. Since he had been injured by Lin Feng during the first round in the evil area, he was furious. On top of that, he hadn’t obtained any treasures there.

During the second round, in the Flood Dragon Cave, he wanted to prove to everybody how amazing he was. He had grabbed a jade key but then Xue Sha stole it, and then Jun Mo Xi had attacked him too... In the end he had only been able to grab the seventh jade key...

Yu Mo was furious, he needed to prove to everybody that he was actually strong.

“Alright.” said the Leader of Shen Gong North. He didn’t insist when he saw that everybody was unwilling to stay.

“Alright, you guys can bring them to the exit of Shen Gong.” said the leader to the young people who all nodded. The Leader was asking them to bring them back, which was obviously another attempt to make couples.

“Qing Chan, didn’t you want to leave Shen Gong for some sightseeing? This time, I will allow you to go and watch the Great Competition of Xue Yu.” said the Leader of Shen Gong. Qing Chan was astonished, she quickly glanced at Lin Feng with her beautiful eyes and then nodded. She perfectly understood what it meant. He was asking her to go and make friends with the genius, Lin Feng.

“Alright. you are all geniuses so don’t worry if you lose your battles... You made it so far already, concentrate on your cultivation now.” said the Leader of Shen Gong trying to comfort everybody. “Alright, go now.”

“We’re off, good bye Leader.”

“Leader, thank you.”

Everybody was saying goodbye to the leader or thanking him. After all, he was the one who had let them enter the special areas and enabled them to practice cultivation. They could only be grateful.

Besides, the Leader of Shen Gong had to be extremely strong.

Everybody left.

Lin Feng was flying through the sky when someone suddenly appeared next to him. It was the girl who had talked to him before.

Qing Chan looked at Lin Feng, smiled wryly and said, “I wouldn’t have thought that you would fool me. You are actually monstrously powerful.... You got the first jade key and entered the first special area... You can only use those special areas once a year. Even the Leader of Shen Gong North cannot use it more than once a year... This time, you surprisingly had that incredible opportunity...”

“You never asked me so why would you say that I fooled you?” said Lin Feng while shaking his hand. He was a bit surprised, only once a year? Only the most outstanding cultivators? This time, Shen Gong had opened the doors of the special area for the sixteen of them and had enabled them to increase their cultivation level, what was the reason?

Were the participants of the Great Competition of Xue Yu more important than the disciples of Shen Gong themselves? It didn’t seem plausible. In terms of strength and natural abilities, the geniuses of Xue Yu couldn’t be stronger than the geniuses of Shen Gong. How could they rival with them?

“You’re right.” said Qing Chan. “Lin Feng, do you know why I am here?”

“It’s only a coincidence. It’s because I talked to you for a few minutes and then the Leader of Shen Gong North asked me to

chase you. He hopes that we can become friends and that you will contribute to the glory of Shen Gong.” Lin Feng hadn’t replied because Qing Chan had instead. Lin Feng nodded and said, “I knew that.”

Qing Chan smiled resplendently and looked at the sky. Then she whispered, “Will you accept?”

“I won’t.” said Lin Feng, shaking his head.

Qing Chan nibbled her lips, turned her head to look at him with a wry smile, “You seem quite sure... You are leaving me absolutely no margin. Can’t you give me face...?”

“If I had met you before when I didn’t have feelings for anyone else, maybe. You’re so beautiful, charming and nice; I would have fallen in love with you.” said Lin Feng with a gentle smile.

“What you mean to say is that I’m too late to receive your feelings?” Asked Qing Chan with a provocative smile on her face. Lin Feng smiled wryly. He nibble his lips and remained silent.

“Joining Shen Gong would be incredible for you... With your personality, plus the education Shen Gong would provide you, you would become so much stronger.” said Qing Chan in a low voice.

“My heart refuses. It would just become a prison for me.” said Lin Feng, shaking his head. There were too many forbidden things in Shen Gong... If he joined Shen Gong he really would become

stronger, but on the other hand, he would lose his freedom. He would have to listen to Shen Gong's orders etc. Lin Feng couldn't live under restrictions.

Qing Chan seemed like she could and couldn't understand at the same time. She smiled back and said, "No matter what your reply is, if you like me or not. I still want to get out of Shen Gong and leave with you..."

"Yes." The Leader of Shen Gong had told Qing Chan to stay with him when he was outside of Shen Gong. Lin Feng wasn't going to refuse.

The crowd was leaving Shen Gong and arriving back to the normal world again, the Qi of the Earth and sky were becoming thinner... They were not used to how little there was...

The fifteen cultivators left along with some people from Shen Gong and headed for the fighting stage at the Great Competition of Xue Yu.

When they returned they found that the fighting stage had become larger. And around it the crowd had become even noisier. Everyone had shown to watch the end of the competition.

"They arrived." At that moment, the crowd saw a group of people in the sky. They had left several days before and were finally coming back!

Finally, the fifteen strong cultivators were back! Who was going to dazzle this time?

Chapter 656: Monstrously Strong Cultivators, The Prologue!

“There are some people with them, they must be cultivators from Shen Gong.” thought the crowd when they saw that there were more than fifteen people in the sky. There were beautiful girls there.

The strong cultivators had gone to Shen Gong and were returning with Shen Gong girls... They were incredibly beautiful and were also extraordinarily strong female cultivators. The fifteen finalists also looked different, as if they had changed.

“It seems like they have greatly benefitted from the excursion...” thought the crowd. The fifteen finalists’ eyes were twinkling. They were the strongest cultivators from the thirteen countries of Xue Yu. Everybody was wondering how strong they had become now that they had benefitted from Shen Gong’s treasures.

“They had obtained jade keys with numbers from the second round. Lin Feng and Tang You You had finished first and second, but they would probably fall in the rankings during the final round...”

“Boom!” all the cultivators landed on the fighting stage as an incredible Qi dashed to the skies. The crowd could sense how strong their Qi had become.

“Lin Feng has become stronger. This time, he will astonish everybody...” thought Han Man, staring at Lin Feng from his

bronze mask.

“Ling Xiao, Yu Xiao Xiao.. What a glory for you, you are such dazzling cultivators!” in the distance a voice rolled in the sky. The crowd was surprised as they turned their heads. There were a group of people flickering in the sky. The leader had a golden chang pao and looked domineering. He held a zither and a sword, he was probably skilled at using them.

“Teacher.” said Ling Xiao and Yu Xiao Xiao, surprised. That old person was their teacher and the Patriarch of the strongest sect in the Magnolia Empire: the Yun Xiao Sect. In Magnolia, the Yun Xiao Sect was even stronger than the Imperial City Clan of Magnolia. The Yun Xiao Sect also made most of the more important decisions in their country.

The crowd was happy to see Ling Xiao and Yu Xiao Xiao’s teacher. They were both amazing cultivators in Xue Yu and they were the two most outstanding cultivators of Magnolia... Their teacher had come to Mi Chen, so he must really care about the results of the Great Competition of Xue Yu.

The Patriarch of the Yun Xiao Sect nodded to them and said, “No need to pay attention to anyone else, just focus and try to be the most dazzling ones!”

“Yes teacher.” they said together. They had joined the Great Competition of Xue Yu to win!

“Could Magnolia ever dazzle anywhere...” asked a cold voice.

That voice came from far away where a black cloud had appeared in the sky. It was surrounded by a monstrous evil Qi.

“What a terrifying Qi...” thought the crowd, they were shaking... Even though the person who spoke was still far away, their Qi could be felt by everybody there. It seemed like they were going to drown it, how terrifying.

“Mister Yin Sha...!” several people had recognized that old man. He was the Patriarch of the Tian Sha Sect, Mister Yin Sha. His cultivation was terrifying.

And not far from him was someone else... That person was extremely skinny, like a skeleton... And it seemed like everything was dying around them...

“Teacher!”

“Teacher!”

Xue Sha and the Dead Tree both shouted that word at the same time. Two strong cultivators from Black Wings had arrived, Xue Sha’s teacher and the Dead Tree’s teacher.

Their teachers had come to see them because they also attached great importance to the Great Competition of Xue Yu.

“Hmph. Walking corpses... Utterly worthless vegetating people...” said the Patriarch of the Yun Xiao Sect mockingly when

he heard Mister Yin Sha. Mister Yin Sha was smiling strangely and most evilly.

“The first of the competition will be Di Ling.” said a loud voice at that moment. Several people from Firmament had arrived too. There was a middle-aged man in a dragon robe, his Qi was something like a warlord. It seemed like everybody disappeared when they near him, as if they had to submit themselves.

Di Ling’s Qi was very similar.

“Father!” shouted Di Ling to the middle-aged man. Di Ling’s eyes were twinkling as he said, “Dad, I will finish first!”

“I’m waiting to see that. I hope so.” said the middle-aged man full of confidence. Di Ling represented the Firmament Empire, how could he lose? He was the best!

Yu Mo’s teacher also arrived with some people from the Firmament Empire, but he just nodded to Yu Mo. Di Ling was the most important person there. Even though Yu Mo was extremely strong, nobody could offend Di Ling. Yu Mo didn’t have the firmament blood like Di Ling, so there was a huge difference. The difference between the two might be defined by their blood alone.

He wasn’t aiming for the first place, but for second. The Firmament Empire had to dazzle!

After that, people from Magnolia and Black Wings also arrived

and surrounded the fighting stage.

Everybody wanted to watch the Great Competition of Xue Yu. Those geniuses were the future of Xue Yu. A few dozens years later and they would become the leaders of their empires and countries. They had to be monstrously strong then or else their empires would crumble.

But there was someone else, and he was smiling faintly. That person looked calm and indifferent towards everyone else there.

However, that person's Qi was that of a king...

Why wasn't he saying anything? He just looked at Jun Mo Xi, and remained standing in the middle of the crowd... It seemed like he was communicating something, Jun Mo Xi turned around to look at him too... A faint smile appeared. That person was his father, the Emperor of Dragon Mountain.

"They're all here, the strongest cultivators from Xue Yu came..." The crowd was absolutely speechless this time, it was also a gathering of the strongest cultivators of Xue Yu and the gathering of geniuses... Everybody had come for the Great Competition of Xue Yu.

"It seems like the competition is going to be something to remember.

The crowd was extremely excited with their their fists clenched

into balls. It really proved how important the competition was.

Everyone could watch the future leaders of Xue Yu improve during the final round of the competition. After it ended, nobody knew what they would do to continue progressing.

“Hehe. Everybody has come to Mi Cheng for the Great Competition of Xue Yu, what an honor it is for us from Xue Yu to host this competition. However, Xue Wu Chang had things to add. Even though these cultivators are your offspring, no matter what happens you cannot intervene. I am talking to the extremely strong seniors now. Otherwise, Shen Gong will come to punish you.” threatened Xue Wu Chang calmly. Everybody shivered, Xue Wu Chang was incredible, he was stronger than those emperors and powerful patriarchs... They all respected and feared Shen Gong. Not everybody could win the competition so Xue Wu Chang was warning them in advance.

“How aggressive, Shen Gong is too scary.” thought the crowd surprised. Even those strong cultivators didn’t dare defy Shen Gong.

Everybody remained silent.

“Alright, let’s just watch calmly. The Great Competition of Xue Yu is a fair and equitable competition!” said Xue Wu Chang indifferently. He looked to the candidates and said, “Alright, let’s get ready for the last battles!”

Chapter 657: Forfeit

Everybody kept silent when Xue Wu Chang spoke.

It was seven days after Xue Wu Chang had sent the fighters to the special area, and now they had finally come back. The rules had changed too, people weren't going to be eliminated in one battle this time. There would be too much luck involved if they did that again. He had said that everybody would fight each other so that the strongest fighters would stand out.

Xue Wu Chang wasn't done talking.

“This time, the last battles are about to start. Everybody is going to fight against each other. The number of victories will determine your position in the rankings.”

The fighters nodded. Indeed, that kind of battle was extremely fair. The one with the most victories would be ranked first.

Nobody could afford to be careless with each fight. Everybody had to win if they wanted to dazzle.

This time, almost the entire population of Xue Yu was watching. They wanted to see who the most dazzling cultivators of the region were. Those with the best cultivation levels, skills and techniques should put on an amazing show.

Besides, the strongest cultivators of the four empires were there

to watch too, Shen Gong included.

“There is something else I want to tell you. This time I will allow you to give up. If you feel like you have no chance of winning and that fighting could affect your following battles, you can give up. Of course, that will count as a loss.” said Xue Wu Chang. The crowd remained silent. That would allow fighters to save their strength and energy for their next battle without being exhausted. But would it be worth it for a loss?

“Besides, the order of the battles is based on the same principle as the previous battles. The one with the first jade key can challenge who they want. So Lin Feng will be the first one and then it will be Tang You You’s turn.. Then after everybody is done battling, it’s Lin Feng’s turn again. However, there is one rule. You cannot challenge your own self and you cannot challenge someone who has just battled. You must wait until the next round to challenge them.” explained Xue Wu Chang. As before, the ones with the best jade keys could challenge first but it wouldn’t provide with such great advantages. Eventually, everyone would fight everybody else...

Everybody would have to fight each other without exception. Apart from strength, endurance was going to be tested here too...

“I told you the rules and I think everybody understands. Now, everybody move aside. Lin Feng stay here and choose your first opponent.”

“Alright.” nodded Lin Feng. He stayed in the middle of the fighting stage and the others gradually moved away. All eyes were

on Lin Feng and they wondering who he would choose first.

“You.” said Lin Feng, pointing at the fourteenth person. That person’s strong point was physical strength, his body was like an indestructible iron wall.

That person deeply stared at Lin Feng, he expected that he’d be chosen. Lin Feng would probably fight against the strongest cultivators later... Lin Feng and Yun Fei Yang were good friends so he didn’t want to fight him first.

“Boom boom!” That person was making the ground shake after each step. It seemed like the fighting stage was going to cave in.

“Give up, I don’t want to hurt you and influence your next battles.” said Lin Feng indifferently. That person was surprised at how arrogant Lin Feng was... That person was fourteenth but he was extremely strong. And now Lin Feng was telling him to give up because he didn’t want to hurt him...?

Everyone was surprised when they heard Lin Feng. Another step made the atmosphere vibrate.

“Even though I only spent one day in the special area, I also progressed. Besides, with my corporeal strength, I can fight you. You might win but I want to try at least.” said that person. Lin Feng had increased his sword cultivation in the special area and might be able to kill him with one sword attack... But that person was really strong too, if he didn’t fight the first battle, how would he be able to fight the next battles...? He would lose credibility.

Lin Feng slightly nodded and said, “Alright, let’s fight then.”

Lin Feng made a step forwards, and in a flash his sword emitted whistling sounds in the atmosphere. He was placing pressure on the physical strength of his opponent. Sword force and physical strength force were colliding in the air.

That person violently trampled on the ground towards Lin Feng when he sensed how sharp the sword energy was.

“Boom boom boom!” A terrifying physical strength was shaking the entire fighting stage violently.

“Physical strength cannot win against my sword...” whispered Lin Feng. And then he launched forwards.

“Crrrr.... Crrrr.....” A terrifying sharp sound spread in the air. It seemed like sword Qi was going to lacerate the entire atmosphere.

Lin Feng’s sword had started to look like that of a monstrously strong cultivator. It could finally lacerate the atmosphere, but it was only the start though.

“What a terrifying sword.” thought the crowd, staring at Lin Feng’s sword. Seven days before, they had seen how terrifying Lin Feng’s indestructible golden body was. And then they saw Lin Feng’s terrifying bloodthirsty sword. It was then that they had realized how terrifying he was.

Now, they realized that Lin Feng's sword ability had increased.

Lin Feng was giving off the feeling that he had perfectly fused with his sword. His sword intent was terrifying, it was more terrifying than any simple human sword fusion. His sword intent was jaw-dropping.

"As expected, sword intent..." The crowd sighed. Last time they hadn't sensed it clearly, but this time the sword intent was fierce and swift.

Lin Feng's opponent already looked glum. Lin Feng's sword was putting too much pressure on his body already, and that sword intent actually cutting the air... It was moving towards him and emitting terrifying whistling sounds, his own physical strength force didn't have a chance.

"As expected, I doubted his abilities previously because last time he defeated a cultivator of the same strength as me. But training in the first special area... I already lost now." thought Lin Feng's opponent. His physical strength force was moving back. He looked at Lin Feng and said, "I lost."

He had lost, he wasn't going to try and fight.

Lin Feng's terrifying sword energies immediately disappeared. He didn't put any more pressure on his opponent, he just smiled and nodded. Then, he moved aside.

After watching Lin Feng, The crowd was wondering what his real strength was... It seemed like he had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer but with his terrifying sword intent he could easily annihilate cultivators of the seventh Xuan Qi layer. He was probably hiding his real cultivation level...

Lin Feng had probably become stronger...

People were impatient to see Lin Feng's next battles to see how strong he had actually become. Who would be able to defeat him and his sword?

Then it was Tang You You's turn. She picked the ice-soul girl again.

"Last time, you lost. I challenge you again." said Tang You You.

That ice-soul girl looked glum. Seven days before she had been to figure out how to resist Tang You You's punches... But she had had no idea, the only solution she could come up with was speed. She had to be faster than Tang You You, or her physical strength had to surpass that of Tang You You...

However, it seemed impossible. Especially seeing how Tang You You had gone to the second special area... and the ice-soul girl had gone to the thirteenth one... She had no chance.

"I forfeit, you win." said the ice-soul girl, unsurprisingly. She

closed her eyes as if she was trying to save some strength and energy for her next battles.

Tang You You nodded. Just like Lin Feng, she moved back to her initial position.

Lin Feng and Tang You You had both won their first battles, so there were thirteen more to go.

Chapter 658: Poor Yu Mo

The third battle was Di Ling against the twelfth, and Di Ling had won.

Then, Duan Wu Dao chose Qing Meng Xin and Qing Meng Xin gave up.

Jun Mo Xi looked at Yu Mo and smiled indifferently.

Jun Mo Xi's smile made Yu Mo upset, he was choosing him again...

"This time, I'm sure that I will win." said Yu Mo, his pupils looked ice-cold. Seven days before, he had taken everything to heart. Yu Mo was an incredible cultivator, but he had surprisingly lost to Jun Mo Xi from Dragon Mountain... He had lost face.

"Boom!" A terrifying vortex appeared. There weren't many actions, no words, only a vortex which emerged out of Yu Mo's body and moved towards Jun Mo Xi. It looked dreadful.

"Vital Qi of Righteousness!" said Jun Mo Xi as a terrifying golden light emerged out of his body and rose up in the air. A gigantic Qi of righteousness dashed to the skies.

A gigantic vital energy of righteousness!

“Die!” shouted Yu Mo furiously. He then assaulted the atmosphere with his fists towards Jun Mo Xi, who just stared back at Yu Mo. His vital Qi of righteousness was incredible, it seemed like no evil Qi could pierce through it.

Yu Mo’s punch made the Qi of righteousness fluctuate even more violently, it was insanely dashing to the skies now.

“Huh?” Yu Mo was astonished. How was that possible? He couldn’t pierce through his vital energy of righteousness. He had broken through to the very top of the eighth Xuan Qi layer, how could it be that difficult?

His pupils turned black and white, some trigrams patterns appeared in his eyes as well as in his hand. He was persevering but wanted to destroy Jun Mo Xi’s Qi of righteousness.

“Boom... Boom....” That terrifying vital energy of righteousness continued to dash towards the skies. Jun Mo Xi was bathing in a pure and holy and energy, the trigrams pattern still had no effect.

“Jun Mo Xi is even scarier than seven days before...” thought the crowd, shivering. His energy was as gigantic as a mountain.

“You thought that you had become strong enough to defeat me after training in that special place?” asked Jun Mo Xi. Yu Mo was shaking. At that moment, Jun Mo Xi’s eyes were twinkling and looked dazzling. It was the first time that such dazzling lights appeared in his eyes.

“Don’t forget that I entered the fifth special area. Even before the special area I was stronger than you, so it makes sense that you are still weaker than me.” said Jun Mo Xi, jumping forwards. His terrifying energy of righteousness invaded the entire atmosphere, there was nothing else but righteousness.

“Huh?” The crowd was astonished. Jun Mo Xi’s Qi was really terrifying. It was entirely gold was able to turn into a hurricane. But then, it formed into a golden dragon.

The crowd could sense it, they felt tiny insects.

Apart from the crowd, Yu Mo also had that feeling. He felt like a piece of trash in front of that energy of righteousness which could annihilate any evil person.

Yu Mo had no more self-confidence. He was just staring at Jun Mo Xi bathing in his golden energy.

“You... Are a genius?” asked Jun Mo Xi mockingly. Those words painfully resonated in Yu Mo’s heart and brain. The terrifying dragon hurricane swept away and took Yu Mo along with it. His body was blown away. Jun Mo Xi had an overwhelming victory.

“Jun Mo Xi won...?” The crowd was shaking. Everything had happened so fast, what was going on? The fight had just started, Jun Mo Xi released his energy of righteousness and oppressed Yu Mo so much so that he flew away. The difference between the two was so much...?

Jun Mo Xi's words were resonating in people's thoughts, was Yu Mo a genius? Was he really one of the eight most outstanding geniuses of Xue Yu?

Was he too weak or was Jun Mo Xi too strong?

Yu Mo groaned, the energy of righteousness had invaded his body and he was fighting it.

"Next." said Jun Mo Xi calmly, turning around and going back to his seat. Yu Mo couldn't believe what he heard.

"No, we're not done." said Yu Mo, suddenly looking particularly evil. He couldn't take his eyes off of Jun Mo Xi.

"Enough!" shouted a voice which resonated in Yu Mo's brain painfully. Yu Mo raised his head and saw a pair of ice-cold eyes staring at him.

"I told you. On the path of cultivation, your heart must become as solid as a mountain if you don't want it to break." said Jun Mo Xi. He had won.

For the sixth battle, Xue Sha chose Yun Fei Yang, just like Lin Feng had expected. Yun Fei Yang immediately forfeited.

The seventh battle was Yu Mo's turn but because he had already been chosen and had already fought, he would have to wait for the next fight. Qi Qing Jian Ling Xiao chose Ku Yao Tong the Dead

Tree. Both of them were part of the eight most outstanding disciples of Xue Yu.

This time, Qi Qing Jian showed no mercy. He immediately unsheathed seven swords which all contained sword intent.

The Dead Tree had death in his eyes as he opened them. In a flash, everything was filled with a dead energy. But in the air, Ling Xiao's swords cut through the energy. Rosy clouds emerged out of the swords and dashed to the skies. Soon after Ku Yao Tong lost.

There were only fifteen people so when it arrived to Liu Yu Qin Yu Xiao Xiao's turn, everybody had already fought once. So she chose the fourteenth cultivator and won.

During the second round, Lin Feng chose the ice-soul girl. Using his sword intent he destroyed the girl's ice-soul. His sword couldn't be frozen, thus Lin Feng won again.

Tang You You chose the one with the silver sword and won as well. It was their second victory already.

Then, Di Ling chose Qing Meng Xin who immediately forfeited. Then, Duan Wu Dao chose Ku Yao Tong. Everybody thought that the battle would be disastrous but Duan Wu Dao was way too violent and powerful. It seemed like he only held disdain for the Dead Tree, even though Duan Wu Dao was younger than him. He had destroyed him in one punch and won.

Jun Mo Xi, this time chose Liu Yu Qin Yu Xiao Xiao and won. Then, Xue Sha chose to fight against Ling Xiao. Xue Sha's deadly Qi collided with Ling Xiao's sword and there was a huge explosion. However, in the end Xue Sha won.

Xue Sha had won twice.

After, it was Yu Mo's turn to choose. He chose Yun Fei Yang, he was the only one left who hadn't fought during that round.

"Unfortunately, I cannot kill you." said Yu Mo evilly to Yun Fei Yang. Lin Feng wasn't the only one who had offended him, Jun Mo Xi had also made him appear as a buffoon. Now, he wanted to regain face by crushing Yun Fei Yang. Unfortunately Yun Fei Yang would probably immediately forfeit and would refuse to fight.

"How come you're still standing there?" Yun Fei Yang jumped forwards and looked back Yu Mo. He sounded indifferent. Yu Mo was astonished.

Yun Fei Yang was going to... Fight?

Yun Fei Yang had forfeited when Xue Sha had challenged him... He had also forfeited against Ku Yao Tong the Dead Tree... But in front of Yu Mo, he was going to fight? Why?

Yu Mo looked glum, but then he realized what was happening... He wanted to humiliate Yun Fei Yang, and the latter knew that. So by accepting the challenge, he was alternatively humiliating Yu

Mo.

“You are not giving up?” asked Yu Mo. Yun Fei Yang ignored him and immediately jumped forwards. In a flash, a gigantic rumbling sound spread in the air. The force of the Earth and sky became heavy, Yu Mo pulled a long face... Not only wasn't Yun Fei Yang going to forfeit but he had immediately took the offensive.

“DIE!” This time, Yu Mo was infuriated. Terrifying trigrams appeared. Without hesitation his blood-like eight trigrams surrounded Yun Fei Yang's body.

Chapter 659: Blood-Red Sword

“You asked me to forfeit? I will really wonder how you plan to back that up. At least, you should be able to one-shot me if you’re strong enough to ask me that.” said Yun Fei Yang with a cold smile. He jumped forwards and terrifying rumbling sounds spread in the air. He condensed the force of the Earth and sky. Once again, he was borrowing the strength of the planet which enveloped the eight red trigrams.

“Since you don’t want to forfeit, I will teach you a lesson.” said Yu Mo coldly. The eight trigrams looked even more frightening. And then Yu Mo shouted furiously, “Annihilate!”

The eight trigrams were moving chaotically through the air. A black and white color then rose up and moved towards Yun Fei Yang. This time, Yu Mo was using his full strength. It seemed like he wanted to kill Yun Fei Yang. He wanted to regain his popularity.

“The force of the Earth and sky is mine! A strong force can annihilate anything.” shouted Yun Fei Yang furiously. Pure Qi was emitting whistling sounds in the air as Yun Fei Yang started running.

“Boom boom boom!” The ground was shaking violently, some fissures even appeared. The force of the Earth and sky was that powerful. Yun Fei Yang’s Qi and force were dashing boundlessly and then turned into an airstream spinning rapidly. He was fusing together with the earth.

“Seventh Xuan Qi layer!” The crowd was astonished, extremely surprised. Yun Fei Yang had broken through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer. He had been hiding his real strength... Apart from his terrifying force of the Earth and sky, he had also broken through to the very top of the seventh Xuan Qi layer.

“That guy... He has incredibly frightening methods. And to top that, he managed to hide his strength from us...” thought Lin Feng, smiling. Yun Fei Yang and Lin Feng were very similar, they were both hiding their real cultivation levels.

Yu Mo was astonished. He even looked glum. No wonder Yun Fei Yang had accepted the challenge. He wasn't scared at all because he had hidden his real strength.

“Seventh Xuan Qi layer or not, I will still kill you!” scorned Yu Mo coldly. A terrifying spirit Qi emerged and rolled into the atmosphere abruptly. His eight trigrams spirit looked terrifying. In Yu Mo's eyes, everything was black and white.... And blood red.

“Eight trigrams, total annihilation!” Yu Mo closed his eyes and a myriad of trigrams appeared. Then they moved towards Yun Fei Yang at full speed. Yun Fei Yang was surrounded by the eight trigrams, his pure Qi was being consumed.

“Boom boom boom boom!”

The ground was shaking insanely. This time, Yun Fei Yang continued running and the force of the Earth and sky was oppressing Yu Mo's body. He then condensed all the force he could

onto Yu Mo creating an intense pressure.

“You’re still not dying!” shouted Yu Mo, whose eyelids were shaking. His world was still black and white. He was maneuvering his trigrams back to block Yun Fei Yang’s way. Now he wanted to kill Yun Fei Yang more than anything.

“Huh? Lin Feng frowned. This time Yu Mo was using his full strength, he wanted to kill Yun Fei Yang. And for the latter, the situation seemed dangerous...

“Boom boom!” but the sound of Yun Fei Yang’s steps were spreading in the air. Yun Fei Yang arrived in front of Yu Mo and condensed a massive amount of force to oppress Yu Mo. It seemed like Yu Mo was going to be crushed under the pressure.

“Die!”

“Die!”

They both shouted at the same time, their hearts were both filled with murder.

“Boom!” A terrifying force violently crashed onto Yu Mo’s body. Even though Yu Mo was stronger than Yun Fei Yang, Yu Mo was projected backwards and his blood splashed. He had been injured! Yun Fei Yang had condensed so much force that he could injure Yu Mo.

The crowd couldn't believe it, they had never thought Yun Fei Yang was that strong.

“You will die!!!” shouted Yu Mo like a madman. There were trigrams on Yun Fei Yang's body and Yu Mo still had some around his own body. Yun Fei Yang was already oppressed by the trigrams so Yu Mo still had hope.

“I give up.” said Yun Fei Yang moving back. He had injured Yu Mo but was still forfeiting... It was enough for him.

“You will die, no matter if you forfeit or not. Today you will die die!” said Yu Mo looking sick. Blood was pouring out his mouth, making him look possessed. His terrifying trigrams swallowed Yun Fei Yang's pure Qi and enveloped him.

Yun Fei Yang had given up but Yu Mo still wanted to kill him?

The crowd was shaking, Yu Mo was really furious. He had gone insane. He had lost his first battle against Jun Mo Xi and then was injured by Yun Fei Yang during the second. That was just too much for him.

Yu Mo had forgotten about the rules of the competition and went insane.

“Die!” Yu Mo had gone mental, he had to kill Yun Fei Yang.

Yun Fei Yang's face drastically changed. He thought he would be

safe after forfeiting.

But then a terrifying hurricane appeared on the fighting stage. A red, blood light had appeared. The crowd only saw a blood red setting sun appear.

“Huh?”

The crowd was stunned. They couldn't tell what was going on or what that blood red thing was. It seemed like a silhouette was appearing.

“Crrrr....”

A subtle sound spread in the air that wasn't loud at all. It seemed like wings had appeared on that setting sun. It was dazzling as it streaked across the sky.

“Fuck off!” shouted Yu Mo furiously. He then punched the atmosphere with terrifying strength. Several more sounds were heard and a weak, frail blood red light could be seen. It seemed like the strength of his hand was gradually being cut. In a flash, Yu Mo's sleeve was in pieces and blood gushed out of his hand.

“Ahhhhhh.....” Yu Mo suddenly sensed a terrifying pain in his arm. His entire arm was swallowed by that blood red light. At the same time, his body was also projected backwards.

“Lacerate.” another blood red light spread in the air and it was

just as terrifying. Yu Mo released a terrifying physical strength to cut the blood red light into two.

The moment when the light disappeared the crowd could clearly see what was happening. On the fighting stage, a silhouette in white clothes had appeared. That person looked thin and desolate. In his hand was a blood red sword that looked dazzling and bloodthirsty.

“Lin Feng!” the crowd couldn’t contain themselves. Lin Feng had surprisingly gotten involved! That blood sword of his was terrifying.

Now Yu Mo’s sleeve was minced and blood was gushing everywhere. Lin Feng had injured him with his sword before.

“How strong.” Thought the crowd, many had even stood up. They were enthralled with Lin Feng, they wanted to see him use his full strength. Could it be that he could defeat Yu Mo who had broken through to the very top of the eighth Xuan Qi layer?

Yu Mo looked ice-cold and stared back at Lin Feng. He had been injured again... He had been injured by Yun Fei Yang and now by Lin Feng. Someone who he had considered an insect. In the evil area he had almost killed Lin Feng... Now, Lin Feng was strong enough to injure him with his sword.

“Shameless bastard! You attacked me by surprise!” said Yu Mo coldly, while insisting on the word “surprise” because he wanted to keep face.

“I attacked you from the front, not the back.” explained Lin Feng indifferently. He held his bloodthirsty sword firmly. He then added coldly, “Don’t forget that you were the first one to break the rule.”

Then, Lin Feng turned around and moved to Yun Fei Yang. A moment before, Yu Mo didn’t have the time to take care of Yun Fei Yang when Lin Feng attacked him. The trigrams had disappeared already and Yun Fei Yang looked normal again.

“Are you alright?” asked Lin Feng.

“I’m alright. he’s worse than I am.” joked Yun Fei Yang. He didn’t care about the result of the battle, what was important was his heart. The most important thing was to surpass one’s self. Strength didn’t matter that much, even if the results of a battle were predetermined. Once the body and mind were determined they couldn’t be influenced by such reasonings. The most important thing to him was to become better, and that was enough. Yun fei Yang had just attacked Yu Mo and had injured him. That’s exactly what it was about, hurting other people.

“Since I am more hurt than you, do you want to continue the battle?” asked Yu Mo darkly, staring at Yun Fei Yang.

“No need. I forfeited.” replied Yun Fei Yang calmly. He didn’t care.

“Continue?” said Lin Feng. He raised his head and looked at Xue

Wu Chang, then asked, “Mister, it’s already the end of the second round. It’s my turn now so can I challenge him?”

Lin Feng was pointing at Yu Mo. The crowd was silent. Lin Feng wanted to challenge Yu Mo for the third round!

Chapter 660: A Sword Destroying the Atmosphere

Lin Feng was challenging Yu Mo.

Xue Wu Chang's eyes twinkled. He remained silent for a while but looked at Yu Mo and said, "He broke the rules first,. Even if it's another round it's no good to fight twice in a row. But if Yu Mo is willing to fight, then I have no objections."

The crowd looked to Yu Mo after they heard Xue Wu Chang. Would he accept even though he his injured?

Yu Mo didn't know what to say looking at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had obtained the first jade key so Yu Mo had no occasion to challenge him before... He had always thought that he would be the last person Lin Feng decided to challenge, but he had been looking forward to that fight. Since the beginning, he had wanted to kill Lin Feng.

However, Yu Mo hadn't anticipated that Lin Feng would challenge him during the third round of the final battles.

Yu Mo glared at Lin Feng coldly. He thought that Lin Feng's sword was very powerful, he could even use sword intent. Tut there was still a difference of three cultivation layers between them, could Lin Feng really compete with him?

Yu Mo decided that it was impossible. Lin Feng was challenging him and he was going to die because of it.

“Of course I agree, why wouldn’t I?” said Yu Mo, looking back at the blood on his arm. His pupils looked just as cold as before. Lin Feng was going to die.

Lin Feng wanted to kill Yu Mo even more when he his eyes.

In the evil area, Lin Feng was so much weaker than Yu Mo but now.....

Lin Feng glanced at Yun Fei Yang and smiled, “Go back, he’s mine.”

When Yun Fei Yang saw how confident Lin Feng was, he smiled and said, “Alright, if you can kill him don’t show any mercy.”

“Of course.” Lin Feng said nodding. Yu Mo wanted to kill Lin Feng, why would Lin Feng show mercy?

Lin Feng shook his hand and a pill appeared. He looked at Yu Mo and said, “That pill will cure all your injuries.”

He threw the pill at Yu Mo.

Yu Mo stretched his hand and caught the pill. He was speechless, Lin Feng was giving him a pill to recover...?

The crowd was just as bewildered, Lin Feng was that confident...?

“Don’t worry, that pill is a real one. With mister Xue Wu Chang and all the strongest cultivators of Xue Yu here, how could I think to poison you...? Take it. If you die, people will avenge you. If you manage to kill me, I will die without regrets just as well.”

“Alright, very good.” said Yu Mo with an ice-cold smile. He swallowed the pill and a pleasant feeling invaded his body. As expected, his injuries caused by Yun Fei Yang and Lin Feng immediately healed. Even his physical wounds disappeared, and his pure Qi was stronger than before.

“Now, let’s fight?” said Lin Feng indifferently. The crowd looked impatient. They wanted to see that battle. Lin Feng was going to fight against one of the eight most outstanding disciples of Xue Yu...

Was Lin Feng going to become one of the eight most outstanding disciples of Xue Yu?

Besides, Lin Feng was going to fight against an extremely strong one: Yu Mo.

“I’ve wanted to kill you for a long time, now you’re begging for it yourself.” giggled Yu Mo. He jumped forwards and oppressed Lin Feng with his peak eighth Xuan Qi layer power.

“You think that you are so strong because you can use some sword intent? There is a huge difference between your cultivation level and mine... You simply cannot compete with me.” said Yu Mo. He didn’t immediately use his eight trigrams like he had against Yun Fei Yang. He was trying his terrifying force instead.

“Indeed, there is a huge difference. However, with the strength of the fifth Xuan Qi layer I can kill people of the seventh Xuan Qi layer easily. If I was at the sixth Xuan Qi layer, wouldn’t I be stronger?” asked Lin Feng coldly. He was smiling resplendently.

After that, Lin Feng made a step forwards and released a terrifying sword energy. Lin Feng’s pure Qi was revolving around his body at full speed.

Sixth Xuan Qi layer!

All of a sudden Lin Feng’s Qi was of the sixth Xuan Qi layer, not of the fifth... Surprisingly, he had hidden his strength and Yu Mo hadn’t seen it. Honestly, nobody had.

Lin Feng had studied an impressive secret skill.

“So what if you broke through to the sixth Xuan Qi layer? The difference between each cultivation layer at the Xuan Qi layer is huge. The difference between a cultivator at the sixth Xuan Qi layer and a cultivator of the eighth Xuan Qi layer is too great. Besides, I am not at the seventh Xuan Qi layer, I am at the very top of the eighth Xuan Qi layer. I am not afraid of you, you can only

die.” after remaining silent for a moment, Yu Mo said those words again. He was threatening Lin Feng.

“Is that so?” said Lin Feng with a cold smile. He jumped forwards again and released a terrifying pure Qi which dashed to the skies. The crowd was shivering.

How was that possible?

The crowd was surprised with his next step, Lin Feng had released an energy and force equal to the seventh Xuan Qi layer! (Editor’s note: Even the editor is surprised :O

How could Lin Feng have broken through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer? Could it be due to the gifts he received in the special area? Even though the special areas were incredible places, the others hadn’t broken through to higher cultivation layers like that. How could Lin Feng have broken through two cultivation layers in a row?

Those who had gone with him to Shen Gong were even more speechless. They knew how incredible the special areas were but it was impossible for Lin Feng to have broken through two cultivation layers in a row. Absolutely impossible... Especially in seven days.

“Did Lin Feng hide his cultivation level before...?”

That was impossible.

People were all wondering how that was possible.

“Now, are you as confident as before?” asked Lin Feng, he was holding his bloodthirsty sword obliquely. Terrifying whistling sounds were spreading in the atmosphere. His sword intent surrounded Yu Mo.

Lin Feng’s bloodthirsty sword could cut through the entire atmosphere.

“Die!” Lin Feng’s bloodthirsty sword started dancing, it was moving at an inconceivable speed. A blood-red light shot out towards Yu Mo.

“Go!” shouted Yu Mo furiously. He shook his hand and a terrifying strength moved towards Lin Feng’s red light. Some muffled sounds spread as Lin Feng’s sword lacerated that physical strength. It was too sharp.

“Die!” shouted an ice-cold voice. Yu Mo was stunned. He raised his head and noticed that Lin Feng was attacking him again. The red light of his sword looked particularly terrifying.

“Eight Trigrams!” shouted Yu Mo unsteadily. Lin Feng’s sword was way too fast, the reflections on it looked like shooting stars. Yu Mo didn’t have a single second to breathe.

The eight trigrams moved swiftly through the air and then the

blood-red light of the sword was reflecting on them. Yu Mo wanted to kill Lin Feng just like he had tried to kill Yun Fei Yang.

During this crucial moment, Lin Feng decided to close his eyes. His body and mind were in perfect harmony. His body was in perfect harmony with his energies, with his sword, with the Earth and the sky...

“Crrr... Crrr....”

A terrifying sword Qi moved straight through the atmosphere with insane speed. Those in the crowd not already standing quickly did and started shaking. That sword was too fast.

A blood-red light invaded the entire arena. It seemed like the whole crowd was bathing in a sea of blood. It even looked like it was raining blood. It was a shower of bloodthirsty swords lacerating everything, including the trigrams.

“Twelve swords!” said a voice coming from the sky. An infinite number of red lights were pouring. The eight trigrams hadn’t collided with Lin Feng, instead they were lacerated by Lin Feng’s sword.

“What terrifying sword-play.” thought the crowd. They were astonished. Yu Mo looked absolutely enraged. His entire physical strength dashed to the skies. He was using all his strength he could muster at the top of the eighth Xuan Qi layer. Without restraint his eight trigrams soared to the skies and seemed heavy like they contained some sanguinary energies. Yu Mo’s eyes had become

bloodshot.

“Crrrrr....” Only some slight tearing sounds spread in the air, no explosion or quakes. An incredible blood-red light seemed like it was wrecking havoc on the stage. Yu Mo looked particularly cruel and evil, again like a madman.

“Even if you’re insane, you will die.” Lin Feng said. “Thirteenth sword!”

Chapter 661: One Sword

Blood-red lights transformed into a vortex as Lin Feng's sword fell from the sky. His bloodthirsty sword was destroying the entire space and it seemed like nothing else existed but that sword.

"Yu Mo is in danger!" the crowd thought, all of their attention was on the sword. They couldn't see Lin Feng's silhouette anymore, they could only see a bloodthirsty sword moving with an indomitable will.

Nobody had expected such strength, nobody had believed that Lin Feng would be able to deploy such a sword attack...

"Ahhhhh!!!!" A bloodcurdling shriek spread in the air. Yu Mo's blue veins were looking particularly swollen, almost like he was about to explode. He had never thought that he would be in such a difficult situation against Lin Feng.

"Stop!" shouted a voice which made the entire stadium shake, everybody's hearts skipped a beat. Lin Feng was in symbiosis with his heart at that moment and that voice made his entire soul tremble. He let out a groan from the pain. He had to leave his trance-like mental state of mind and came back to reality. His sword force also went back to normal...

"Go!" shouted Yu Mo violently. He condensed all the physical strength he could to soar into the sky and bombard Lin Feng's bloodthirsty sword.

More subtle sounds spread in the air, the red light from the sword impenetrable. The crowd only saw Yu Mo get projected backwards with his blood splashing out. Yu Mo looked like a madman the way he was looking at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng descended from the sky and landed. The tip of his sword rested on the fighting stage with Yu Mo's blood was dripping from it. Lin Feng looked like a proud hero.

Lin Feng turned around and looked back at Yu Mo who had landed far away in the distance.

The shout from before was probably Yu Mo's teacher who had tried to distract Lin Feng. Lin Feng had just sensed his soul shake from that soul attack. If he had hadn't shouted, Lin Feng would have killed Yu Mo.

Xue Wu Chang looked at that person, you could tell how furious he was from eyes.

"Yu Mo already lost, I am just forfeiting for him. I won't get involved again, I only wanted to save his life and nothing more." explained that person, rising up in the air and frowning. He sounded calm as he defended himself.

"That shout was an attack and you say you didn't get involved?" said Lin Feng furiously, looking at Yu Mo's teacher. That teacher was a tiny little person, but he was monstrously strong. He had hurt Lin Feng's soul a moment before with only a shout, so that teacher must have already broken through to the Tian Qi layer.

With one shout, he could injure cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer. The Tian Qi layer is way beyond the Xuan Qi layer...

Yu Mo's teacher, hadn't only broken through to the first Tian Qi layer, he was much stronger.

"Little boy, be quiet. There's no need to make big gestures here. Yu Mo forfeited, that's all. Go back to your seat now. Let the next battle start. Thank you." said the teacher indifferently, glancing down at Lin Feng. He even sounded like he was threatening Lin Feng to a certain extent.

Big gestures? Go back to his seat? Was Lin Feng the first one who wanted to kill in this match?

Ridiculous!

Lin Feng didn't pay any more attention to that teacher. He looked at Xue Wu Chang and asked, "Mister, did they violate the rules?"

"Indeed." said Xue Wu Chang nodding.

"I believe you then." said Lin Feng while bowing. Immediately after, he looked at Yu Mo and released a terrifying sword energy which was seemingly even stronger than before.

The sword energy was extremely sharp and was lacerating the atmosphere. The whistling sounds it was emitting were piercing

painfully through people's eardrums.

“Huh?” The crowd wasn't sure what he was doing. Was he going to continue the battle and kill Yu Mo?”

Xue Wu Chang made a step forward and arrived in front of Yu Mo's teacher. He then said coldly, “All the participants of the Great Competition of Xue Yu are geniuses. Shen Gong doesn't hope that they will die. If Yu Mo hadn't initially wanted to kill Lin Feng, I would stop Lin Feng now. But since Yu Mo has been trying to kill Lin Feng this whole time, the result is logical. I said it once, if you get involved once again, you will die here in Mi Cheng.”

“Die in Mi Cheng...” everyone's hearts were beating extra quick from the stress. Xue Wu Chang was furious.

He despised Yu Mo's teacher. Yu Mo and Lin Feng could solve their problems by themselves. Nobody could get involved. Even if Yu Mo's teacher was an extremely strong cultivator of the Tian Qi layer, Shen Gong wouldn't allow him to interfere again. This time he would kill him.

“How incredible, they are so cruel!” the crowd was extremely excited. Lin Feng was cruel, and Xue Wu Chang was just as cruel. A cultivator of the Tian Qi layer had just attacked Lin Feng yet he wanted to continue his battle against Yu Mo. The more he fought, the more he wanted to kill Yu Mo. This time the Tian Qi cultivator wouldn't get involved.

Yu Mo was face to face with Lin Feng and Yu Mo's teacher was

facing Xue Wu Chang. What could the teacher do now? Yu Mo's teacher didn't care about Xue Wu Chang, but Shen Gong was a different story. Xue Wu Chang was the manager of the Great Competition of Xue Yu, he represented Shen Gong and its authority. What he said was Shen Gong's word. If he got involved again, Mi Cheng would become his final destination. An incredible cultivator of the Tian Qi layer was now helpless.

Lin Feng was still firmly holding his sword. He slowly walked towards Yu Mo and said coldly, "You wanted to kill me back in the evil area, back then you didn't think such a day would come..."

Yu Mo looked ferocious and hideous. He had, of course, never thought such a thing would happen. Not even in his worst nightmares! Back in the evil area, he had humiliated Lin Feng and considered him as an insect. He wanted to kill him then but now the table was turned, what a sad truth.

The participants of the competition were narrowing their eyes, Lin Feng was really strong... He had even managed to defeat Yu Mo.

The entire crowd looked excited. These battles were incredible, brutal, dazzling. They had never thought that Lin Feng would be so incredible at the competition! Of course, it wasn't such a pleasant surprise for some people. Like certain people from Tian Feng or those of the Wan Shou Sect, or even for Yue Qing Shan...

They hadn't left yet because they had all been waiting for Yu Mo to kill Lin Feng. But just like in their worst nightmares, they were devastated to see Lin Feng succeed.

His sword Qi was becoming stronger and stronger. Lin Feng, with his state of mind and willpower was starting to leave tears in the air. His sword was moving straight towards Yu Mo.

“No... No....” People’s hearts were pounding violently. It was impossible, Lin Feng’s sword intent was becoming stronger!

“How’s that possible... Lin Feng hid his cultivation level and his real strength...” A short time before, his sword intent was at the first level, but now it was at the third. His sword intent had increased by two levels.

Yu Mo was astonished, his heart hurt from the pressure. Why had he put himself in such a situation?

“Could it be that Lin Feng is still becoming stronger?” thought the crowd. They kept shaking their heads, it was impossible. Lin Feng had already become so strong and there were limits. He couldn’t be so much stronger in such a short time, it was impossible according to the laws of cultivation.

His sword intent stopped at level three, and left the atmosphere filled with sword Qi.

Blood was still dripping from his sword. Lin Feng walked slowly towards Yu Mo and said, “Do you understand? A moment ago, I just used you... To practice my sword intent, that’s all.”

“Practice his sword intent?!” Lin Feng’s words were resonating in everyone’s heads... Yu Mo was scared. A moment before, Lin Feng had used him to increase his sword intent, just like a guinea pig. What a humiliation!

“Boom!” It seemed like the atmosphere was going to collapse with all that sword energy. It was everywhere as Lin Feng started moving swift like the wind.

“I only need one sword attack to kill you actually!” said Lin Feng. Then his sword started moving even faster. A blood red light descended from the sky as it was being cut in half. Immediately after, the crowd saw Yu Mo terrified. Surprisingly, he had forgotten to block. Truthfully, he was unable to block such an attack. He could only watch as that light descended from the sky.. Suddenly, a wound appeared on his body.

That wound was deep.

“One sword is enough...”

Lin Feng’s words were still echoing. One sword really was enough to kill him.

Yu Mo was dead!

Chapter 662: The Dead Tree

Yu Mo was cut into two. Blood was gushing and splashing onto Lin Feng's sword. Lin Feng's bloodthirsty sword was drinking Yu Mo's blood again.

In the air, Yu Mo's teacher couldn't believe it. He just watched as the blood was absorbed by Lin Feng's sword. The teacher wanted revenge Yu Mo.

Lin Feng had brutally killed his student in front of him. With only one sword attack...

Even after he threatened Lin Feng and his student was still killed, he had to persevere until the end.

The sword was absorbing blood as it was shaking violently, The light diffused by the sword was becoming even more dazzling. It seemed like it was gaining vitality and vigor. Lin Feng looked emotionless, he turned around and put his sword away. As the blood stopped the sword seemed satisfied. Then Lin Feng moved back to his original seat as if nothing had happened.

Nobody's hearts slowed down. Lin Feng had the strength of the seventh Xuan Qi layer and his sword intent was level three. And then there was his terrifying bloodthirsty sword. His sword was murderous. Lin Feng not only managed to injure Yu Mo, but he had even killed him. Everybody needed to reconsider Lin Feng's strength.

The crowd had thought that Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao were the strongest at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. The third was probably Jun Mo Xi, followed by the other five. But now, Lin Feng had proved them wrong. He had just killed one of the eight most outstanding disciples, which meant that Lin Feng was one of them, so to say.

“It seems like everybody underestimated the one who obtained the first jade key.” thought the crowd. Lin Feng had used one sword attack to kill Yu Mo. Lin Feng, with his strength, was maybe one of the five strongest cultivators at the competition...

The four best ones had to be Di Ling, Duan Wu Dao, Jun Mo Xi and Xue Sha, then Ling Xiao. Everyone was impatient to see Lin Feng fight against Ku Yao Tong the Dead Tree. If Lin Feng managed to defeat Ling Xiao, he would end up in the top five.

“He actually hid his strength well.” thought the crowd. They had never thought that Lin Feng, who used to be of the fifth Xuan Qi layer, would be one of the five best cultivators. Who wasn’t surprised?

They were all impatient to see the rest of the battles. Seeing these battles made them want to cultivate even more determinedly.

“Are you going to take of the corpse or should I do it?” asked Xue Wu Chang to Yu Mo’s teacher. The teacher looked cold. He glanced at Lin Feng and said, “I will take care of it.”

The teacher appeared in front of Yu Mo’s body, grabbed it, and

left. As he left a violent hurricane emerged that oppressed Lin Feng's body.

Lin Feng was too outgoing, he had killed Yu Mo... It was a terrible offense to infuriate a Tian Qi level cultivator. Lin Feng would have to be careful in the future...

Xue Wu Chang moved back to his original position when he saw the teacher leave. Then he said, "Since Yu Mo is dead, those who haven't fought against a Yu Mo yet will receive an additional victory and thus an additional point."

The crowd was surprised. Since Yu Mo was dead, those who hadn't fought against him were getting an extra victory. That wasn't fair at all because those who were initially able to defeat Yu Mo were treated the same way as those who weren't. The most annoyed was Yun Fei Yang.

Yu Mo had fought only three battles and had lost against Jun Mo Xi and Lin Feng, but he had won against Yun Fei Yang. This meant that everybody else had won against Yu Mo except for him.

Tang You You won, as before.

Apart from Tang You You, the ones who were at the top of the rankings also all won.

Lin Feng then won again against the twelfth cultivator with the silver sword. The cultivator with the silver sword had forfeited the

moment Lin Feng's bloodthirsty sword was about to collide with his own.

After the young man with the silver sword, Lin Feng fought against Liu Yu Qin Yu Xiao Xiao. Because Yu Mo died, everybody had obtained a free win.

Yu Xiao Xiao used a zither as a weapon. With that music she could make people's hearts burn by sensing all the vibrations of her melodies. Because Lin Feng's soul was monstrously powerful, Yu Xiao Xiao's music was unable to affect him. Even though Yu Xiao Xiao was extremely strong, she hadn't managed to make Lin Feng give up. In the end, Yu Xiao Xiao lost.

Lin Feng had already won all of his five battles.

With the free victory obtained because of Yu Mo's death, Di Ling, Duan Wu Dao, Jun Mo Xi, Xue Sha and Ling Xiao had also won all of their battles. Of course, there was someone else who had surprised everybody. Tang You You had also won all of her battles.

The sixth battle was Lin Feng against Ku Yao Tong the Dead Tree...

"If Lin Feng wins this fight he will become one of the six best cultivators..." thought the crowd. Lin Feng and Ku Yao Tong were facing each other on the fighting stage. Lin Feng had already defeated two of the eight most outstanding disciples of the competition: Yu Mo and Yu Xiao Xiao. He had killed Yu Mo and crushed Yu Xiao Xiao. There would be no suspense if Lin Feng

managed to win against the Dead Tree, he would be one of the six best in any case.

The Dead Tree was sizing up Lin Feng. He didn't despise Lin Feng considering that he had already killed Yu Mo in one sword attack. Who would insult someone that strong? The Dead Tree couldn't afford to be careless.

If the Dead Tree might lose if he was careless.

Behind him appeared an actual dead tree, it was his spirit. His nickname was the Dead Tree because his spirit was a dead tree. It was a very particular spirit and on top of it, he also had another technique called 'the eyes'. All of his abilities were incredibly powerful.

"Take out your sword." said the Dead Tree challenging Lin Feng, but Lin Feng shook his head. He wasn't unsheathing his sword.

"I don't have to sword, you used to think that I only had the golden body skill in the past. But against you, my fire skills will be more appropriate." said Lin Feng slowly. Just then, a terrifying fire appeared around Lin Feng's body. Lin Feng was bathing in a sea of flames, watching the atmosphere burning.

"Huh?" the crowd was stupefied, Lin Feng could also use fire...? It made sense to use fire against the Dead Tree instead of his sword.

“Alright, let’s see how well it works against me.” said the Dead Tree, his death energy was becoming increasingly violent. It seemed like everything was dying around him.. Suddenly several branches grew out from Dead Tree’s arms and hands and moved to surround Lin Feng’s body.

Lin Feng stepped forwards as he condensed some flames in his hands. He grabbed the branches and started burning them to ashes.

“What a strong fire.” thought the crowd. Several more branches were moving towards Lin Feng that looked like sharp swords.

“Burn!” said Lin Feng, more fire appeared as he shook his hands. The sun started shining upon those flames and the branches burnt again. There were no surprises at all.

“Die!” shouted the Dead Tree furiously. Between him and Lin Feng, several dead trees with gigantic branches appeared. Everything around them seemed to be dying. It seemed like a new world filled with darkness. He used their branches to surround Lin Feng’s body and stretched his hands, filled with death Qi, to attack Lin Feng. Ku Yao Tong’s body now looked like a real dead tree.

Chapter 663: The Seven Swords

“Death intent!” Lin Feng was surprised. In the middle of all those dead trees he could sense some death intent.

Intent wasn’t a specific attribute of swords, other things could have intent like death energy. Provided that the cultivator could understand intent, they could use it.

“Burn!” said Lin Feng coldly. Again a terrifying fire was emitted, and his entire body was surrounded by blazing flames. Those flames seemed like they could burn everything.

“Intent...” The Dead Tree’s pupils shrank. That terrifying fire contained intent as well. The entire area had turned into an ocean of flames that burned through everything.

Those branches disappeared without a trace each time they came in contact with Lin Feng. Lin Feng had been right to use fire against the Dead Tree.

“Die!” shouted a voice coming from within the flames. Lin Feng was his extremely hot cosmos-burning sun fire.

The Dead Tree tried to dodge the flames because touching them would spell his doom. That fire was too hot.

“Eye Skill!” The Dead Tree’s eyes suddenly looked empty, like that of a dead person. Everything seemed like it was fading. Lin

Feng's fire seemed to weaken.

Ku Yao Tong looked particularly evil at that moment. It seemed like his branches were becoming alive.

“Huh?” Lin Feng was surprised again. Impossible. His eye technique couldn't be so terrifying that it was giving life to the branches... It had to be an illusion or a hallucination.

“It has to be a trick.” thought Lin Feng determined. Ku Yao Tong could make Lin Feng believe things and make people believe he was a dead tree. But when someone realized that it was only an illusion, the death intent could make the branches alive.

Lin Feng knew that it was a hallucination but those eyes filled with death intent were powerful, it seemed like they could influence people's intent. Lin Feng's fire was becoming weaker and weaker.

“Eye technique...” thought Lin Feng. His eyes suddenly started turned black, deep and mysterious. He looked like a demon with his pupils ice-cold and emotionless.

Now nothing could affect his thoughts or intent, everything was clear and distinct. Everything appeared in his head just like a painting.

Ku Yao Tong shivered when he saw Lin Feng's eyes turn black, those eyes looked so cold... Even his death intent couldn't

influence Lin Feng anymore.

“It seems like your real strength is constricted in front of me.” said Lin Feng confidently. He made a step forwards as his fire regained its passion. That fire again seemed like it could burn the planet, the Dead Tree’s world gradually vanished. In Lin Feng’s hand appeared a sword condensed of sun Qi.

“Rising Sun!”

That sword rose like the rising sun, filled with the fire of the sun and fire intent. The sun was shining upon that sword dazzlingly.

Crrrr... Crrr....” Ku Yao Tong’s Qi was being lacerated by Lin Feng’s sword. Ku Yao Tong retreated backwards like a madman. He could only watch as the fire was moving to engulf him, some of the flames had even reached his body as he nearly started burning. That fire was filled with intent and was destroying a certain amount of his physical strength.

“Sun fire.”

Ku Yao Tong was shaking because Lin Feng’s fire was too terrifying. It was too hot, he couldn’t put it out. He might end up paralyzed if he got burnt, or even his cultivation might end up crippled.

Everything Lin Feng had said was turning out true. The dead tree Qi and the eye technique were powerful but it seemed like Lin Feng

could restrain them. Lin Feng's fire and sword were sufficient to put immense pressure on Ku Yao Tong, he had almost no chance to win now.

"I'm not fighting anymore. I give up." said Ku Yao Tong. He turned around and moved back to his original seat. He gave up because he had no chance of winning. He preferred to save his strength for the next battles. He preferred fighting when he was sure to win, otherwise, he might end up injured. Then he would lose the other battles...

That was Lin Feng's sixth victory.

"It seems like there is no suspense anymore, Lin Feng is the sixth strongest now. Lin Feng is the most surprising cultivator at the competition." thought everybody. Lin Feng's strength was overwhelming. He had now defeated three of the eight most outstanding disciples at the competition. People barely recognized him with his natural abilities and his strength.

Tang You You then chose to fight against Ling Xiao.

Ling Xiao was a bit surprised because there were other people less strong than Ling Xiao left to challenge, but she had chosen him.

He held seven swords on his back. As he started walking to the stage he asked Tang You You, "Is Lin Feng your boyfriend?"

"Eh?" Tang You You was caught off guard. She hadn't thought

that Ling Xiao would ask her that.

The crowd was just as surprised. Lin Feng, Jun Mo Xi, Tang You You, Qing Meng Xin and Yun Fei Yang all belonged to Dragon Mountain. They were all very good friends, especially Lin Feng and Tang You You. Their relationship seemed a bit different.

Could it be that Ling Xiao was right? Was Tang You You really Lin Feng's woman?

“Why are you asking?” Tang You You was a bit defensive. Ling Xiao was a bit too curious. They were there about to fight, not to talk about her private life.

“Xiao Yu is my female fellow disciples and I love her. When I see you and Lin Feng, I see the same emotions from you and Lin Feng, so I was curious.” said Ling Xiao indifferently. He released some sword Qi which surrounded his body, making him look like an extremely sharp sword.

People's eyes were twinkling, Ling Xiao was getting angry. He seemed to be offended because Tang You You was challenging him before Lin Feng had.

Ling Xiao turned around and looked back to Yu Xiao Xiao as he said, “Yu Xiao Xiao, today our teacher is here in front of everybody. I will show that I, Ling Xiao, can protect my beloved one forever.”

“So that’s what he meant.” thought the crowd, they understood now. Ling Xiao wanted to show everybody that he loved Yu Xiao Xiao and that he was strong enough to protect her. Tang You You was going to be a stepping stone for him.

“I want to tell you, Yu Xiao Xiao, as well as our teacher, that I am determined and that I am worth it.”

Ling Xiao slowly turned around and faced Tang You You, “It is an honor for you to fight against such a strong cultivator.”

Those seven swords on his back were releasing terrifying rosy Qi that dashed to the skies. A strong wind started blowing.

He unsheathed all of his seven swords at the same time. They were dazzling and the Qi they emitted was extremely powerful.

Those seven swords contained different colors and all contained terrifying sword intent. They seemed like they could make deities cry.

“What a terrifying sword Qi. They are emitting level three sword intent.” the crowd was surprised. Level three sword intent was already quite high.

Tang You You didn’t expect that. She was feeling oppressed by all the seven swords and their sword intent. Ling Xiao was the strongest cultivator she had faced so far during the competition. She hadn’t thought that he would be so strong. She and the crowd

had underestimated him.

Ling Xiao wanted to prove to Yu Xiao Xiao that Tang You You was his victim.

Chapter 664: Between Swords

Ling Xiao seemed extremely arrogant, as if Tang You You or Lin Feng were ants. In Ling Xiao Xiao's heart, there was only Yu Xiao Xiao. He wanted to use his sword to prove to Yu Xiao Xiao that he was worth it.

“What a terrifying sword level... We underestimated Lin Feng but we also underestimated Ling Xiao.” thought the crowd. That sword energy was terrifying. Tang You You was in danger. Level three sword intent emitted from seven swords... How could Tang You You block that? Now people were wondering if Ling Xiao intended to kill Tang You You or not.

Ling Xiao was deploying so many means, seven swords... The situation was perilous for Tang You You.

“Level three sword intent...” Lin Feng frowned. He looked at Ling Xiao, he had also never thought that Ling Xiao would show such strength against Tang You You... Ling Xiao thought that Tang You You was Lin Feng's woman, so he wanted to avenge Yu Xiao Xiao because Lin Feng had defeated her.

That reason was good enough, but Lin Feng understood that Ling Xiao was mainly trying to show to Yu Xiao Xiao that he loved her. This fight was a stepping stone.

Ling Xiao had already shown everyone that he was strong, he was dazzling all the way.

Tang You You frowned, that sword Qi was way too oppressive. She started to look deathly pale.

Tang You You immediately released her spirit and some extremely powerful Qi. She just felt an impending doom was upon her... She thought that she could die...

“Seven Swords, Go!” shouted Ling Xiao furiously. The seven swords dashed to the skies, all dazzling with different colors. Ling Xiao’s swords seemed like they could annihilate everything.

The seven swords jetted towards Tang You You’s all at the same time. They wanted to cut straight through her.

Those swords seemed like they contained Ling Xiao’s entire strength and oppressive force.

Tang You You had no time to think when she saw all those dazzling swords.

“Thousand Shadows!” she shouted furiously. A myriad of Tang You You clones suddenly appeared.

“Crrrr crrr crrr crr....” All the clones attacked the swords but were killed. Tang You You retreated back at full speed, she even fell off the fighting stage. Ling Xiao’s one attack was monstrous. Tang You You couldn’t resist to him. Sword lights were everywhere as Tang You You could only try to avoid them.

“Give up!” shouted Lin Feng extremely loudly. Then Tang You You said, “I give up!”

Tang You You’s soul was damaged as all of her clones were killed, she was left bleeding. It seemed like the swords weren’t stopping. The clones had delayed the attack but they kept moving towards her as if Ling Xiao wanted to kill her.

Tang You You raised her head to try and block the swords. But then she saw red lights appear in front of her. Sword Qi was dashing to the skies and emitting sharp whistling sounds. Ling Xiao groaned as he called back his seven swords. He was facing Lin Feng.

“She already gave up so I got involved. I didn’t violate the rules, did I?” asked Lin Feng to Xue Wu Chang. Xue Wu Chang nodded, Lin Feng had not violated the rules. Tang You You had forfeited and Ling Xiao had continued attacking... He was the one who had violated the rules.

Lin Feng nodded and turned back to Ling Xiao, “Qi Qing Jian Ling Xiao, you want to kill or hurt people to prove how strong you are. You tell us that you love your woman and that you can protect her. We don’t care about your private life! However, I hope that you can remain friendly, it would be unfortunate if we became enemies. Don’t forget that choices are important.”

Lin Feng then turned around and started walking away from Ling Xiao.

The crowd was surprised. Ling Xiao's swords were extremely strong, but Lin Feng's sword was able to stop them. A confrontation between those two sword geniuses seemed inevitable.

Lin Feng was right, choices were important, especially seeing how he had the first jade key. Ling Xiao had tried to harm Tang You You using Lin Feng as an excuse.

Lin Feng walked towards Tang You You who was bleeding her mouth, and asked, "Are you severely injured?"

"No need for sanguine soul grass... I will recover in a few minutes." said Tang You You, trying to assure Lin Feng. She didn't want him to use the other half of his grass... She knew that the grass was very important to him, he was going to use it to save someone's life.

"It's not that easy. Find a place to recover." said Lin Feng, shaking his head. It was the best method to recover seeing how other pills were useless. Only extremely precious things would work better. Tang You You sat down and closed her eyes.

The battles continued on the fighting stage. Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao were still extremely strong, nobody could win against them.

Then Jun Mo Xi moved to the fighting stage and looked at Ling Xiao. The crowd was surprised that Jun Mo Xi wanted to avenge her.

However, Ling Xiao had just fought. According to the rules, Jun Mo Xi couldn't fight against him.

How would a battle between Jun Mo Xi and Ling Xiao end though?

“Jun Mo Xi, leave him to me.” said Lin Feng. Jun Mo Xi turned his head and smiled. He nodded and said, “Alright, he's for you.”

“Even though I don't like to fight against women, we will all have to fight against them sooner or later.” said Jun Mo Xi to Yu Xiao Xiao. Ling Xiao and Yu Xiao Xiao were surprised. It seemed like it wasn't such a good idea to bully Tang You You. Now, Jun Mo Xi was going to avenge her.

That battle held no suspense at all. Jun Mo Xi could easily defeat Yu Mo so he could easily defeat Yu Xiao Xiao. Yu Xiao Xiao had already lost so now she had lost three battles total. She was the weakest of the eight most outstanding geniuses. Ling Xiao could only avenge her.

Ling Xiao was sad, he had bullied Tang You You and now Jun Mo Xi fought Yu Xiao Xiao. However, he didn't hurt her because he didn't like to bully women.

The battles continued and none were surprising. The lower ranked cultivators continued losing and weren't very exciting to watch. Then, it was Lin Feng's turn again.

Lin Feng moved to the center of the fighting stage. Everybody was getting excited from the anticipation. They were all looking at one person: Ling Xiao.

It was probably going to be a battle between two sword cultivators this time...

A bloodthirsty sword and seven swords...

Lin Feng's sword intent was level three just like Ling Xiao's. How would a battle between them two end up? The crowd found that watching Lin Feng fight was exciting. Their hearts were filled with even more ardor, tenacity and vigor as if their blood had been boiling.

Perhaps it was only because they hadn't anticipated such situations happening. They had seen Lin Feng from the beginning to the end becoming stronger and stronger. If he managed to win against Ling Xiao, it would mean that he was the fifth strongest cultivator. Lin Feng could almost be certain!

Chapter 665: Bad Choice

Just as the crowd had expected, Lin Feng looked at Ling Xiao. Since Ling Xiao had bullied Tang You You, revenge was unavoidable.

Ling Xiao wanted to prove to everybody, especially to the girl he loved, that he was strong and dependable. He fought Tang You You, who he thought was Lin Feng's girlfriend, to avenge Yu Xiao Xiao. Could Lin Feng forgive him?

“Do I need to call on you?” asked Lin Feng. Ling Xiao immediately jumped to the middle of the fighting stage.

“Even if you hadn't challenged me, I would have challenged you.” said Ling Xiao coldly. He unsheathed his seven multicolor swords once again. They were all filled with a monstrous sword intent.

“Let's see if your sanguinary blood is stronger than my seven swords.” said Ling Xiao. He had seven swords that were all different. His sword intent was level three. They contained the force of ten thousand swords.

Sword battles were extremely dangerous and were often fatal. Sword intent was whistling in the air and strong air currents emerged. It seemed that there were only swords in the world. Even though Ling Xiao hadn't reached a level where he could destroy the world, he could kill people from extremely far distances. It was easy for him.

Ling Xiao didn't need to use his hands to control his swords, he could use them from far away.

Lin Feng was calmly watching those swords. A light sound spread in the air and a blood-red light appeared. His bloodthirsty sword buzzed in the air, shaking violently with excitement.

His bloodthirsty sword had its own life and it was pointed at the seven swords. A terrifying sword energy spread in the air, his bloodthirsty sword then dashed to the skies.

That bloodthirsty sword was excited, it wanted to fight.

“What terrifying swords.” thought the crowd. The seven swords and the bloodthirsty sword all seemed alive, they had their own lives. Sword energies were dashing to the skies.

Ling Xiao looked fierce and conceited. His seven sword, the bloodthirsty sword, and their intent were all extremely precious.

“Your sword is not bad and your sword intent is also level three. I respect you, you are a good sword cultivator. Let's fight and finish the battle in one sword attack.” said Ling Xiao. From Ling Xiao's back appeared a sword light spirit. His sword energies became stronger. He was a pure sword cultivator and had a sword spirit.

However, Lin Feng didn't release his spirit. He was singularly relying on his bloodthirsty sword whose red light was dashing to

the skies. A terrifying killer energy invaded the atmosphere, he hadn't used killer energy for such a long time.

The crowd was watching the battle, the anticipation was terrifying.

"They're going to start the battle now..." thought the crowd. Whose sword was stronger?

"Right, I am a real man so I am going to win. I will show everybody that I am the best sword cultivator of Xue Yu. I will show Xiao Yu that my sword will never be defeated." said Ling Xiao arrogantly. He seemed to think that he had already won the battle...

"Indeed, you are brave but you chose the wrong person to prove everybody that you are the stronger." said Lin Feng as confidently as Ling Xiao had been.

"Is that so? You have only one sword and I have seven." said Ling Xiao while jumping forwards. In a flash, his sword energies shot out at Lin Feng, destroying the atmosphere on their way.

"Crrr... Crrr.... Crrr...." Some subtle sounds spread in the air. Nothing could stop those swords.

However, when the sword lights started illuminating the atmosphere, the crowd also saw Lin Feng move. He was holding his sword with both hands and was spinning in the air. His

bloodthirsty sword was filled with killer force.

Lin Feng was also releasing massive amounts of energies.

“He’s crazy.” thought the crowd. Lin Feng wasn’t like Ling Xiao, he wasn’t trying to fight from far away. Instead, he was trying to fight in close combat as he threw his body at his opponent. Did he want to die?

Blood-red lights illuminated the atmosphere and followed Lin Feng’s body.

Right at the moment when everybody thought that Lin Feng was insane, a magnificent light illuminated the atmosphere. Lin Feng’s bloodthirsty sword was attacking.

“Boom!” A blood-red light illuminated the atmosphere. It seemed like the atmosphere was filled with blood.

The blood-red light seemed more and more dazzling as it grew stronger. The loud whistling sounds in the air grew louder.

“Crrrr.... Crrr....” That light dazzled people’s eyes. The blood-red lights annihilated the other lights and moved straight towards Ling Xiao.

That sword wasn’t filled with level three intent anymore. It had increased to level four intent.

Buzzing sounds were resonating in people's heads. Many people were clenching their fists and sweating.

Lin Feng's sword intent was level four... Incredible! Lin Feng had hidden his strength against the Dead Tree and against Yu Mo. He was stronger than they previously believed.

The difference between level three and level four intent was huge. Understanding intent was extremely difficult, each level was entirely different from the other. It was extremely hard to increase one's intent level, even more so than breaking through to a superior cultivation layer.

Lin Feng's sword could annihilate anything.

That sword looked like the one he had used to kill Yu Mo. However, a devastating sword was useless if it wasn't fast enough. With speed, it was almost impossible to stop it.

"Ahhhh.....!" A horrible shriek spread in the air. The blood-red light finally disappeared, Lin Feng and Ling Xiao's energies collided. Terrifying sounds echoed in the air, louder than a horrible shriek.

However, the crowd had already forgotten about the energies, they only wanted to see who had shouted. Qi Qing Jian Ling Xiao hadn't died! However, his arm fell down on the ground! A moment before, the bloodthirsty sword hadn't killed him, he had moved aside and sacrificed his arm.

The crowd was astonished. They had stopped breathing, the atmosphere was incredibly oppressive. When everything calmed down again and the energies disappeared, Lin Feng was still holding his bloodthirsty sword, calmly standing there. Ling Xiao was covering the wound where his arm had been cut off but blood kept gushing. Ling Xiao looked like he was agonizing. He didn't look arrogant and proud anymore at all.

It seemed like the two of them had descended from the sky.

What a pity! Such a genius like Ling Xiao had lost an arm... He would lose his reputation.

Yu Xiao Xiao was astonished, even Ling Xiao's teacher was stunned. A moment before, he had been talking so arrogantly and proudly, but now Lin Feng had cut off his arm.

That was already the second person who had suffered from Lin Feng's hands. The first one was Yu Mo who had died and now Ling Xiao. They had both been one of the eight most outstanding young people of Xue Yu.

Lin Feng had won his seventh fight. It seemed like he was going to finish fifth in the end.

Lin Feng saw that Ling Xiao didn't look proud or arrogant anymore, he said, "You were right to declare your love, but you were wrong about using Tang You You to prove it to everybody."

Ling Xiao had chosen Tang You You to show Yu Xiao Xiao that he loved her. He made a terrible mistake!

Chapter 666: The Day Before the Great War

There was still lots of blood on the fighting stage. Ling Xiao was staring at Lin Feng but Lin Feng wasn't facing him. Ling Xiao could only watch his back.

His eyes were bloodshot and cruel. He couldn't calm down, but he didn't look determined, proud or self-confident anymore though.

He had really made a bad decision.

Why had Lin Feng hidden his strength... His intent was level four... And his bloodthirsty sword was terrifying, it had cut off his arm. But this time, the bloodthirsty sword resisted drinking his blood.

"Cure it well." shouted Ling Xiao's teacher. Ling Xiao then moved back to his seat and sat down like Tang You You. He took out a pill and swallowed it. His arm had already been cut off so he would never get it back, so now he needed to heal the wound. If the wound healed he would be able to keep fighting.

"Swords are powerful because they can move with the power of your brain. You can kill people from far away so an arm is not that useful. It can't stop you from moving forwards. Ling Xiao, your arm was cut off but you can still become a monstrously strong cultivator that reaches the clouds. You cannot give up." said the old man. Ling Xiao opened his eyes and sharp lights twinkled in his pupils again. It seemed like he had regained his motivation to

become a strong sword cultivator. Even if he had lost an arm, he could still become an extremely strong cultivator and reach the clouds.

His heart started beating faster again, he was filled with ardor. He wanted to become a hero.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the old man. No wonder his words sounded like prayers that could motivate people, he was a cultivator of the Tian Qi layer. They were filled with ardor and made people's souls shake.

“Alright, it's Tang You You's turn.” said Xue Wu Chang while looking at Tang You You who was still sitting on the ground. Even though he knew that Tang You You was still recovering, the competition had to continue. Tang You You still needed to heal but she had to challenge someone.

Tang You You opened her eyes, she wanted to stand up but Lin Feng touched her shoulders and shook his head. She still needed to heal.

“You can choose Di Ling or Duan Wu Dao and forfeit immediately. You cannot fight.” said Lin Feng gently.

When Tang You You heard him, she smiled. Then she said, “I choose Lin Feng, and I forfeit.”

Lin Feng was speechless, he just saw Tang You You smiling

childishly, she was so smart. Lin Feng smiled and shook his head. In any case, he would have never fought against Tang You You. She had chosen him so why not?

That was Lin Feng's eighth victory, he had eight points already but there were a few more battles left.

"With his strength, Lin Feng can definitely finish in the top five. Even if we don't know who the stronger one is between Lin Feng and Xue Sha. Duan Wu Dao and Di Ling will definitely defeat Lin Feng." thought the crowd. Lin Feng couldn't finish in the top four. They still had to see Lin Feng's battle against Xue Sha though. Would Lin Feng choose Duan Wu Dao or Di Ling for his next battle?

There was also Jun Mo Xi, Lin Feng was his good friend so how would their battle end?

Di Ling, Duan Wu Dao, Jun Mo Xi and Xue Sha were winning but weren't fighting each other. Nobody could defeat them though. Initially, Ling Xiao with his seven swords and level three intent was as strong as Xue Sha. He could have even put some pressure on Duan Wu Dao or Di Ling, but now Ling Xiao's arm was crushed so he couldn't do much.

Amongst the other eight outstanding geniuses the Dead Tree, Yu Xiao Xiao and Ling Xiao couldn't defeat the four best ones. Yu Mo would have never been able to defeat them either.

Therefore, the crowd was guessing that Lin Feng couldn't finish

in the top four. Di Ling, Duan Wu Dao, Jun Mo Xi and Xue Sha were, in their eyes, the four champions of the competition. Then came Lin Feng in fifth position.

But they were only guessing. Those five hadn't fought against each other yet. They hadn't deployed their full strength so nobody knew how strong they really were. In the top five, Lin Feng was the one who had revealed his strength the most.

But they were convinced that those battles would come soon.

The battles continued and they were sanguinary. Apart from those five people, there was the Dead Tree. It seemed very difficult to stop him, even Yun Fei Yang or Qing Meng Xin couldn't defeat him. Even though Yun Fei Yang had lost against Yu Mo, he was very strong. With his terrifying sword force, he could even defeat Yu Xiao Xiao. Everybody was astonished. The competition would show Xue Yu who its real geniuses were. (editor's note: Could anyone leave me a comment as to what chapter established Yun Fei Yang had sword force?)

The fights continued and Lin Feng was going to fight his tenth battle. The crowd sighed because Lin Feng had defeated Ling Xiao and hadn't battled since then. Qing Meng Xin and Yun Fei Yang also forfeited against Lin Feng. It seemed like they were trying to help him.

After the tenth battle Lin Feng still had four battles to fight... Di Ling, Duan Wu Dao, Jun Mo Xi and Xue Sha, the four strongest cultivators...

Tang You You still needed time to heal, she gave up against Di Ling. Then she forfeited against Di Ling so it was Di Ling's tenth victory, just like Lin Feng. Just like Lin Feng, he only had the three best cultivators left and Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng had to fight against four extremely strong cultivators, not three like Di Ling.

"Four battles.... After that round, the best battles will start..." thought the crowd.

Duan Wu Dao still had to fight. Because Jun Mo Xi won when Yun Fei Yang forfeited against him, another battle arrived and it was Xue Sha's turn. The crowd looked at Xue Sha, he wasn't going to fight against Ling Xiao it seemed, Instead, he was looking at Jun Mo Xi. He could wait to fight against Ling Xiao because that battle wouldn't be difficult. With the next battles being terrifying, it was better to choose someone else.

Therefore, Xue Sha chose Jun Mo Xi. Jun Mo Xi and Xue Sha were facing each other and the crowd was shaking with excitement... Two of the five best cultivators were going to fight. Who would win?

Chapter 667: Evil Fight

Xue Sha was a genius of the Tian Sha Sect. His teacher, mister Yin Sha, attached a particular importance to his disciple. He was the youngest cultivator at the competition of Xue Yu.

Jun Mo Xi was the prince of Dragon Mountain and had a Qi of righteousness. He could bring justice into the world.

Those two were opposites, one was benevolent and the other was malevolent. They were both some of the five best cultivators of the competition. Their battle would certainly be incredible. People were all firmly staring at the fighting stage. They didn't want to miss a single bit of that fight. This time, evil was going to fight against good. Who would win?

“Vital energy of righteousness...” said Xue Sha with an evil smile. He was making fun of Jun Mo Xi's energy of righteousness...

“In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, strong cultivators are respected, no matter if they are evil or good. The most important thing is strength. If you are strong, you can bully others and vice-versa. It is not because you are benevolent that you amaze people, it is because you are strong, nothing more.”

“I know, but at least being good enables you to have friends.” said Jun Mo Xi indifferently, smiling. Xue Sha was a bit surprised. Indeed, Jun Mo Xi was right. Being strong was important and earned you respect but evil people were feared. Of course, Xue Sha had chosen that path so he wasn't going to change. He just wanted

to be strong.

“Fighting isn’t about making friends.” said Xue Sha, his face turned paler and paler. It seemed like there was absolutely no blood in his face. He slowly raised his hands and a terrifying evil Qi rose. The crowd felt paralyzed even though they were far away. That evil Qi made them feel like they were suffocating, it was so uncomfortable.

Jun Mo Xi groaned coldly as he released some vital energy of righteousness. Xue Sha’s Qi collided with with the energy of righteousness and immediately disappeared. The vital energy of righteousness could annihilate evil energies and make them melt.

“Energy of righteousness? Get ready to endure the real evil energies.” said Xue Sha, smiling evilly. In a flash, his body disappeared from his original position and he jolted forward with his fist. A terrifying evil energy was condensed in his fist and was aimed at Jun Mo Xi.

“Evil energy will just melt in my energy of righteousness.” said Jun Mo Xi running forwards, he didn’t seem to care about the evil Qi. Vital energy of righteousness was moving in the air at full speed. It was oppressing the evil energy. But then the evil energy dispersed and moved in all four directions. That evil Qi seemed to contain some corpse Qi, it smelt like a cadaver in putrefaction.

“Wow.....” The corpse Qi moved in all directions, the audience felt nauseous and sick. They wanted to vomit. Some people even turned black as if their lives were being swallowed, maybe they were going to turn into corpses.

“Oh no... That wind is terrifying.” the crowd was bursting out in an uproar, many of them were moving back chaotically. Very quickly, the area emptied. Several people who were weak had collapsed. Their bodies were black, their muscles were twitching, and then they stopped moving. They had become corpses... How astonishing.

“How terrifying, how morbid!” thought the crowd, their hearts were pounding violently. Being touched by the corpse Qi could make people turn into authentic cadavers...

Only strong people like Jun Mo Xi could resist such energies and fight against Xue Sha.

Some of the crowd was terrified. They were so strong, those two fighters were titans. A majority of the people in the crowd couldn't fight these two.

Rumbling sounds were spreading in the atmosphere, corpse Qi and energy of righteousness collided. Some strong winds were blowing. There was a gray wind and a golden wind and none of them were disappearing.

“Xue Sha is so much stronger than Yu Mo.” thought the bewildered crowd. Yu Mo hadn't been able to resist Jun Mo Xi at all, he had just been crushed. However, Xue Sha was able to resist against Jun Mo Xi's energy of righteousness.

Even though he managed to resist against the energy of

righteousness, it still seemed like the corpse Qi was disappearing slowly.

“Sea of blood and corpses!” said Xue Sha when he saw that he was starting to lose the struggle. He couldn’t help but be furious. His corpse Qi suddenly became even more terrifying. At the same time, his hands became particularly scary, they looked like they were swollen with blood. With each attack, his hands seemed like they were sucking up Jun Mo Xi’s blood. They were absorbing Jun Mo Xi’s pure Qi and they wanted to swallow his blood and flesh too.

“Mo Cang Lan had a similar attack...” thought Lin Feng when he saw that. Back then, Mo Cang Lan had learnt a terrifying evil skill which could absorb people’s blood and flesh. It seems that Xue Sha possessed it too. But Xue Sha’s attack was way more powerful than Mo Cang Lan’s. Jun Mo Xi was just too strong and Xue Sha couldn’t destroy that energy of righteousness. No matter how strong the evil attacks were, it was difficult to destroy energy of righteousness.

“Woooooooooo!” The sound of a mourning ghost spread in the air and a terrifying corpse energy moved towards Jun Mo Xi. Xue Sha’s hands turned even redder, he was moving towards Jun Mo Xi and wanted to catch him.

“Vital energy of righteousness can annihilate evilness.” said Jun Mo Xi while walking forwards. His energy of righteousness was rolling in the atmosphere like waves. Those golden waves were rolling towards Xue Sha, making all the evil energies melt away.

“Boom boom boom!” A terrifying sound spread in the air. It seemed like the vital energy of righteousness was infinite. Evil energies were melting and being swallowed. At that moment, the energy of righteousness was dashing to the skies. Jun Mo Xi looked like an angel, pure and holy. Energy of righteousness was surrounding his entire body. He looked like a hero bringing justice and destroying evil.

“How strong...” thought the crowd. He had only used vital energy of righteousness, from the beginning to the end. What an incredible accomplishment during such a battle. Jun Mo Xi had only learnt how to use vital energy of righteousness, seemingly nothing else. Knowing only one skill and being so strong with it was incredible.

“Boom!” The evil Qi kept moving back and disappearing. Xue Sha’s face turned even paler, he was shaking. Blood was flowing out of his mouth...

“Jun... Mo.... Xi.... You resisted until now so you can be proud of yourself.” said Xue Sha evilly. His face was deathly pale like a ghost. He released even more evil Qi and from his back appeared a terrifying silhouette. It was a corpse. It was a monumental corpse. That evil corpse seemed like it could make the planet turn into a hell. Around Xue Sha appeared several skeletons, the scene was astonishing.

Xue Sha looked like a real monster.

“Evil Qi, Corpse Invasion!” shouted Xue Sha furiously. The corpses started moving and roaring. The sounds were so scary that

many people were putting their hands on their ears. Around Xue Sha appeared a sea of blood, there wasn't an infinite corpse Qi though but it seemed like Jun Mo Xi's vital energy of righteousness was moving back.

"Die!" shouted Xue Sha furiously. Just like a corpse, he threw himself at Jun Mo Xi. An incredible quantity of corpse energy collided with the vital energy of righteousness. The crowd was watching Xue Sha's face as an extremely evil and hideous smile sprouted.

"Annihilation!" an evil voice spread in the air. Xue Sha seemed like he was turning into a ghost, without a real body. He jumped into the vital energy of righteousness. His skeleton hand immediately crashed into Jun Mo Xi's chest and penetrated into it.

"It's over." thought the crowd. Was Jun Mo Xi going to die? Was Xue Sha going to kill him? His spirit had made him turn into a skeleton. A moment before, they had thought that his spirit only enabled him to use corpse Qi.

"Do you have anything to add?" said Xue Sha with his evil grin.

But Jun Mo Xi didn't look like he was in pain, he looked calm and serene. Xue Sha didn't feel reassured. Jun Mo Xi was going to die but... Wasn't afraid?

"What I want to say is, you are not the only person who has a spirit." said Jun Mo Xi slowly. Immediately after, an incredible quantity of vital energy of righteousness surrounded the evil

energy. Xue Sha's cringed away. It seemed like his body was going to melt.

He lowered his head and looked at Jun Mo Xi's chest. There was no blood where he had stabbed his hand!

Chapter 668: Evil Night Light

What astonished Xue Sha the most was the speed at which Jun Mo Xi's injury was recovering.

A moment before, he had badly injured Jun Mo Xi with his hand but it was now healing itself.

Xue Sha raised his head again and saw Jun Mo Xi's smile, his heart started pounding violently. He could only move back, he had no other choice.

But now Jun Mo Xi wasn't going to give him the chance to escape. His vital energy of righteousness was falling down like a waterfall. It crashed onto Xue Sha's body and he drowned in it.

Xue Sha's body gradually became real again. The terrifying vital energy of righteousness kept penetrating into his body and blood started gushing out of his mouth.

"Get away!" shouted Xue Sha furiously. He used his entire body attack Jun Mo Xi and then bounced backwards. He had landed one kilometer away. His Qi continued flowing but he was astonished again, a wave of vital energy of righteousness was closing in. Jun Mo Xi was getting near him again.

Xue Sha's heart was pounding, he looked to Jun Mo Xi and shouted, "I lost!"

Jun Mo Xi immediately stopped in front of Xue Sha and his vital energy of righteousness faded away. Xue Sha had given up.

Xue Sha had lost that battle.

Jun Mo Xi had oppressed the corpse Qi... But what was his spirit?

Xue Sha looked at Jun Mo Xi's chest and found that the wound had completely healed already. The crowd was also staring at the injury. Such a lethal injury had disappeared... A moment before, they had seen the energy of righteousness had stopped the evil energy from penetrating into the wound. Then Jun Mo Xi immediately recovered. What was that? Was that Jun Mo Xi's spirit?

“What is your spirit?” asked Xue Sha aggressively to Jun Mo Xi. He had lost but he wanted to know Jun Mo Xi's secret...

“You cannot blame yourself for the defeat. His spirit is extremely rare, it is impossible to kill him actually. He has an immortal spirit, any monumental attack cannot kill him because he can heal the wounds. There is only one way to kill him and that's use enormous physical strength and then kill him in one strike. That will make his soul fly out of his body, then his immortal spirit cannot save him. However, if you haven't broken through to the Tian Qi layer, it is impossible to kill him.” said Yin Sha in the sky. Everybody was astonished. Jun Mo Xi had an extremely rare immortal spirit.

“What a terrifying spirit!”

“Immortal spirit...” whispered Xue Sha. He looked extremely evil. He looked at Jun Mo Xi and said, “I lost and it’s absolutely normal.”

“Your spirit is extremely strong, otherwise you would already be unable to talk to me right now.” said Jun Mo Xi indifferently. He then turned around and walked away. Jun Mo Xi had won.

Jun Mo Xi had oppressed Xue Sha from all sides, it was terrifying.

Jun Mo Xi was definitely one of the best cultivators of the competition. Lin Feng might also be able to defeat Xue Sha. It meant that three of the four best geniuses of the competition would belong to Dragon Mountain. The most terrifying fact was that two of them would be Duan Wu Dao and Lin Feng who were from Xue Yue, a small country under the jurisdiction of Dragon Mountain. Was it the rise of Xue Yue? Surprisingly, it had two amazing and dazzling geniuses at the competition. What glory!

The battles continued. Those who were at the end of the rankings didn’t interest the crowd. A new round was about to start and it was Lin Feng’s turn to challenge someone. The crowd was excited again.

He was going to fight against an extremely strong cultivator now. Lin Feng already had ten points. He had to fight against the four most amazing cultivators now and had no other choice. This time, it would be another clash of titans.

Lin Feng could choose Di Ling, Duan Wu Dao, Jun Mo Xi or Xue Sha.

Who would he choose this time?

Lin Feng slowly turned his head and looked at Xue Sha.

“You wanted to kill me so now you will have your opportunity.” said Lin Feng to Xue Sha. Lin Feng was surprisingly choosing him, what a bastard! He was making him appear as the weakest of the four best cultivators. Lin Feng had started from the very bottom and was considered the weakest cultivator at the beginning but now he had climbed up the rankings. Lin Feng’s opponents were becoming stronger and stronger. This meant that Lin Feng didn’t consider Xue Sha as strong as Di Ling and the two others.

Even though Xue Sha had lost against Jun Mo Xi, he still considered himself extremely strong.

“Alright. I will kill you and regain prestige.” said Xue Sha. He felt better again. Outside, it was gradually getting dark and night was falling. There was only the full moon in the sky illuminating the area and the fighting stage.

During the last battles of the competition there was no difference between day and night. It was only about battling, about who was strong or weak, who was a winner or a loser. Those were incredible battles. Afterwards people would remember their names. Would they make fun of them or would they remember them as dazzling heroes? Those battles were going to determine

their future and make them appear as dazzling cultivators.

“I don’t like the daytime, I feel my best in the dark.” said Xue Sha looking evil. His eyes were twinkling with evil lights. However, Lin Feng just sat there looking perturbed.

“You always thought that you were the strongest but now you already lost a battle. How can you still be so confident? I really admire you for still being able to joke.” said Lin Feng jokingly. Xue Sha became angry, his eyes were bloodshot and fixed on Lin Feng.

“Wait and you will see, I will suck up all your pure Qi. I will swallow your blood and flesh. It will be a cruel night for you.” said Xue Sha while slowly walking forwards. A terrifying corpse energy invaded the atmosphere of the night. The night seemed even deeper and more mysterious. One couldn’t see too far in front of them.

Evil skills were particularly efficient at night and Xue Sha was no exception.

“I also like the night.” said Lin Feng staring at sky and gazing into the distance, it really was a pitch-dark night.

Lin Feng turned around and faced Xue Sha, there was a piercingly ice-cold energy, it seemed like an evil light. Lin Feng’s pupils looked like that of a devil, surprising Xue Sha.

“Jun Mo Xi used vital energy of righteousness to defeat you. I

will use an evil power and we will see which of us is the most evil.” said Lin Feng. Everybody stopped breathing, Lin Feng had evil powers? Could it be that, apart from his bloodthirsty sword and his golden body and his fire, he had other powers still?

What was Lin Feng going to use? How many skills did Lin Feng know really?

The crowd was looking at Lin Feng the unfathomable. They would never understand him.

At the beginning, Lin Feng was an insignificant cultivator of the fifth Xuan Qi layer and now he was one of the best cultivators at the competition. He just had to defeat Xue Sha and he would end up fourth in the end. There was really only one Lin Feng.

There were black lights emerging out of Lin Feng’s body surrounding him. Those lights made the night look even scarier.

The crowd was stupefied when they saw Lin Feng’s body. His body was surprisingly becoming bigger.... It was incredible. His body turned black and was growing.

His eyes were so strange that they sufficed to make people shiver at first glance.

“That’s a..... Demon!”

The crowd was astonished again. Lin Feng didn’t only have a

golden Buddha body. At that moment he had turned into demon!

Chapter 669: Demon's Body

“What a mysterious guy... What’s that?” thought the crowd. That guy was way too mysterious, he was full of surprises. Apart from his Buddha skills, he also knew some evil skills. That usually wasn’t possible! But it was true, Lin Feng couldn't be lying. Besides, his evil lights were becoming more and more profound. It seemed like he was trying to tell people that his evil powers weren’t ordinary.

“It’s a demon!” the crowd was really astonished. Lin Feng had turned into an ancient demon, he looked tall and majestic like a mountain. He was a real demon, it wasn’t a mere illusion.. It was a real demon...

“You’re purposely making a mystery of simple things, you turned into a demon so what? I don’t think that you can defeat me because I'm going to kill you.” said Xue Sha coldly. A terrifying evil Qi then emerged out of his body. The crowd moved backwards again, at the same time, a vortex appeared and a strong wind carried away some putrid Qi all around. They didn’t want to get poisoned by the putrid corpse Qi and turn into a cadaver.

“Corpse Qi... How could a demon fear corpse Qi?” said Lin Feng smiling. Some pure Qi landed on his body but he didn’t move at all. He remained standing steadily and tall, looking proud.

Corpse Qi couldn’t penetrate into the demon’s body, it was almost immune to such a Qi.

“Huh?” Xue Sha frowned, Lin Feng wasn’t scared at all. Lin Feng’s body was extremely strong. The atmosphere of the night was invaded by black evil lights and were protecting his body. The evil Qi couldn’t pierce through.

“I don’t believe that you can resist much longer because you are not that strong and your defense can’t be that good.” said Xue Sha coldly. A terrifying corpse Qi emerged from his hand and began rolling. Immediately after, his body moved too. He then threw himself at the demon known as Lin Feng.

“Defense? Who talked about defense?”

Then that demon body moved like a mountain. Lin Feng’s voice was the same as before which made people guess that he wasn’t a real demon, It was just Lin Feng who had adopted the shape of a demon, but it looked extremely real. Lin Feng could already transform his body into a real demon.

A fist bombarded the atmosphere, it was gigantic and filled with oppressive, evil energies.

Xue Sha only saw a hand move towards him. He released even more corpse Qi as his hand then collided with the gigantic demon hand.

“Boom!” A muffled sound spread in the air, the crowd was shaking when the energies collided. Xue Sha was projected backwards. He couldn’t resist against the demon’s strength. Not only couldn’t his evil Qi penetrate into Lin Feng but he also

couldn't resist the demon's strength.

Of course, it had to do with Xue Sha's specialty. He could use his corpse Qi to kill people but against Lin Feng it was useless.

“Bom boom!” Extremely loud sounds spread in the air, the fighting stage was shaking. The gigantic demon body was moving step by step towards Xue Sha. The evil lights around his body kept spinning.

Each of the gigantic demon's steps were huge, it only took a few to arrive in front of Xue Sha. Then, Xue Sha released some more terrifying energies.

“Boom!” Some corpse Qi collided with Lin Feng. This time, Xue Sha's body flew away. His strength was no match for the demon's body. That demon had a terrifying strength and Xue Sha couldn't stop him.

“Arrghhhh!” Xue Sha looked furious and roared violently. He had just been projected backwards by Lin Feng. He was no threat to Lin Feng. Xue Sha pulled a long face, he had already lost against Jun Mo Xi who had used his immortal spirit. At least he had an excuse for that defeat, but now, it was getting really belittling for him. He didn't even have time to breathe. At that moment, Xue Sha was releasing a terrifying corpse Qi because he couldn't lose. People couldn't breathe that Qi otherwise they would die and turn into cadavers.

“Die!” shouted Xue Sha furiously. The corpse Qi kept rolling in

the air and moving towards the demon. Lin Feng's demon body was surrounded by corpse Qi. Lin Feng frowned and made brutal steps forwards. A terrifying evil light appeared and crushed everything in the air and broke the corpse Qi. The corpse Qi couldn't get near the evil lights.

At the same time, Xue Sha was also running towards Lin Feng. A vortex of evil energies appeared and crashed onto Lin Feng's demon body. A crackling sound spread as if Lin Feng's demon body had broke.

“So what if you have a demon body? I can destroy it.” said Xue Sha looking glum.

Lin Feng despised him, everybody was a tiny insect compared to Lin Feng when he became a demon. Xue Sha stopped smiling when he saw Lin Feng's face, he was furious and looked cruel.

“You used almost all your strength and made me move a little bit. And now you think that you are amazing? Does that make you a genius?” said Lin Feng mockingly. Evil lights were twinkling in his eyes and around his body.

“I will teach you a lesson, I will show you what a real demon is!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. His gigantic demon body was moving and Xue Sha was shaking. It seemed like the demon was going to crush him. He saw two hands which looked like crosses moving straight towards him.

“Huh? No!”

Xue Sha seemed like he had suddenly understood something. Immediately after he ran away at full speed, he could sense the terrifying strength emanating from those two black evil hands moving towards him.

“Get lost!” shouted Xue Sha. A terrifying cross-shaped physical strength bombarded his body and at the same time Lin Feng jumped forwards and shouted, “ASURA BODY!”

In a flash, a gigantic sanguinary Asura appeared and attacked Xue Sha as sharp as a sword. The two silhouettes looked real, just like the demon. It was monstrously powerful.

“Spirit...” Xue Sha was astonished. His skeleton spirit appeared again and his body turned into a ghost. It seemed like Lin Feng really liked to fight at night. His evil energies were terrifying.

A terrifying and oppressive physical strength started spinning, Xue Sha was stupefied. He raised his head and saw Lin Feng’s demon body descend from the sky. It looked like an ancient demon descending from the sky, like a king of the night.

“Boom boom boom!” Terrifyingly loud sounds spread in the air, the fighting stage was shaking unceasingly. Xue Sha’s skeletons kept getting destroyed. Xue Sha’s body was blocked and constricted by the demon. The Asura threw himself once again, it contained deadly and killer energies.

“Motionless Demon Body!” said Lin Feng. Another demon body

appeared filled with evilness, and it moved towards Xue Sha. Xue Sha didn't know what to do, he was being oppressed by three demons at the same time. It was almost impossible to resist Lin Feng's demon body.

He had used a massive physical strength to counter Jun Mo Xi, but it was useless against Lin Feng. This battle was really tragic for him!

Chapter 670: The Arrogant Di Ling

“Lin Feng is really terrifying.” thought the crowd shivering, watching the demon prey upon Xue Sha. Now there was the Asura and another demon. Three demons from ancient times were fighting for Lin Feng who had turned himself into a demon. Xue Sha couldn’t rival with him. It only took one demon to defeat him.

“Lin Feng has so many incredible assets...” sighed the crowd. However, they didn’t know that Lin Feng, initially only had the strength of the Heruka. Later he coincidentally penetrated into the temple of the evil area and had obtained the memories of the Heruka. If he hadn’t learnt the Heruka skill at the Yun Hai Sect he wouldn’t have been able to deploy such monstrous strength.

Lin Feng was really grateful to Shen Gong for having given them the opportunity to go and practice in the special areas. Lin Feng had spent seven days in the special area where his thoughts had turned to reality. He had been able to see a world where good and evil, lightness and darkness had fought. People couldn’t imagine how powerful and incredible such a battle had been. Lin Feng had entered a world which belonged to remote ages and had experienced it as if he was a part of it.

He had visualized the ancient battles and had been able to participate even. That had allowed Lin Feng to understand the skill of the Heruka and develop his physical strength. One could even assert that the things Lin Feng understood in the special region had made him become even stronger than if he had only broken through to another cultivation layer.

“Boom boom boom!” Another brutal attack crashed onto Xue Sha’s body which made him groan with pain. He was unable to resist. Now, Lin Feng’s strength of the Heruka could already rotate seven thousand times. Besides it was coupled with the demon body, his punches were monstrously powerful. With the demons he could invoke he was incredibly strong. Xue Sha could barely resist against such a monumental strength, and especially against such an evil power.

The demons together did not fear Xue Sha’s trivial evil skill.

“You wanted to kill me, but now I really wonder how you’re going to do it.” said the demon making huge steps. On Lin Feng’s demon body was a massive amount of black physical strength revolving all around, everything had become dark and gray. The three other demons were fighting at the same time, Xue Sha was shaking violently as he continued to flee.

“Where are you going?” asked Lin Feng playfully. His gigantic body rose up in the air and chased Xue Sha halfway up into the sky. The pressure was so great that Xue Sha had to groan. His body was projected away. The three demons followed him and Xue Sha’s face drastically changed, he then shouted extremely loudly, “I forfeit!

“Come back!” shouted Lin Feng coldly. In a flash, the three demons came back to Lin Feng and penetrated into his body again, as if they had merged altogether.

“What kind of skill is that?” thought the crowd astonished, they were shaking. Lin Feng had turned into a demon and then three

demons had appeared. Lin Feng was monstrously scary.

In the darkness of the night, Lin Feng looked at the injured Xue Sha and said indifferently, “Can you kill me? If you hadn’t given up once again, you would have died twice. You wanted to rank first at the Great Competition of Xue Yu?! Ridiculous!” ridiculed Lin Feng, those words made Xue Sha’s face turn deathly pale. Lin Feng was humiliating him, he had destroyed his heart and dreams. Xue Sha didn’t feel like a strong cultivator anymore and had lost his determination.

Lin Feng was right though, Xue Sha had forfeited twice, so his determination and willpower had been crushed. He thought that he would dazzle all the way on the fighting stage. On top of that, he hadn’t fought against Duan Wu Dao and Di Ling yet... but had already forfeited twice. He had lost against Jun Mo Xi and Lin Feng, he would have never thought that he would lose against those two.

“You’re a piece of trash! You call yourself a genius, I really wonder why.” continued Lin Feng, then he turned around and slowly walked away. Xue Sha was coughing up blood, Lin Feng had humiliated him so much, he was trash.

He was now considered a loser. He had lost twice and thus lost face twice.

“Next battle.” said Xue Wu Chang whose eyes were sparkling. His heart was also beating faster. Xue Sha was already extremely strong. With his corpse Qi he was able to make people turn into cadavers. Even ordinary cultivators at the top of the eighth Xuan

Qi layer would have been crushed by him. And then there was his terrifying spirit.

Unfortunately, Xue Sha had encountered two geniuses who were more terrifying than him. One was Jun Mo Xi who could stop Xue Sha's evil Qi with his vital Qi of righteousness and top of that had an immortal spirit.

Then, Lin Feng had turned into a demon and had even invoked other demons. All of them had released terrifying evil energies, much more evil than Xue Sha's own evil energies. Xue sha had been unable to resist Lin Feng, all he could do was run away and protect himself. He had lost twice, how tragic.

In short, a genius had encountered two even more incredible geniuses than himself.

This time, the Great Competition of Xue Yu had a few terrifying geniuses.

On top of that, two other geniuses hadn't shown how strong they really were yet, Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao. They had won all their battles extremely easily. Therefore, Xue Sha's next opponents would be even more terrifying.

"It seems like Xue Sha is going to rank fifth, Lin Feng and Jun Mo Xi can rival for the fourth place." thought the crowd, their eyes were brimming with excitement. Being one of the four top winners of the competition, what glory!

Tang You You gave up another battle, her soul had been too injured. How could she fight against Di Ling or Duan Wu Dao? She had no hope to win against them so she conceded.

Then, Di Ling's turn arrived. He also had to challenge extremely strong cultivators from that moment on, Duan Wu Dao, Jun Mo Xi, Xue Sha... There wasn't a single weakling. Besides, Lin Feng and Xue Sha had just battled which meant that he had only two choices... Jun Mo Xi and Duan Wu Dao.

In the end, Di Ling looked at Jun Mo Xi. He still didn't want to fight against Duan Wu Dao, he wanted to save him for the end. Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao's battle would certainly be one of the most incredible battles.

Jun Mo Xi looked calm yet a bit nervous. Indeed, Di Ling was one of the strongest cultivators at the competition and was releasing a terrifying battle energy.

“Di Ling, possessor of the Firmament blood...” whispered Jun Mo Xi. He then released a massive amount of vital energy of righteousness which dashed to the skies.

Di Ling's eyes were golden as he stared at Jun Mo Xi, “Your vital energy of righteousness and your immortal spirit are incredible, however, the immortal spirit also has limits. A spirit is a kind of strength and if I keep injuring you, you will run out of strength and energies. If I use a powerful enough physical strength, I can even kill you. Even if you have a very strong spirit you must be very strong yourself.” when the crowd heard Di Ling, they were already anticipating the battle. Indeed, the spirit was only a

particular aspect of the cultivator's strength, it was an innate power. Some people could obtain a new spirit after birth but that was extremely rare. Since the spirit was only an aspect of a cultivator's strength, it had limits. Di Ling was considered as the strongest young man in the competition, his perspectives were much broader than that of others. His future wasn't going to be limited to Xue Yu.

“You are saying that my cultivation has limits and that you can defeat me?” said Jun Mo Xi to Di Ling.

Di Ling nodded impolitely and said, “Of course, I am going to be the final winner of the competition. You are no threat to me and Xue Sha is even worse off. Lin Feng cannot threaten me either. Only Duan Wu Dao is strong enough to challenge me.”

Chapter 671: The Firmament Spirit

“How arrogant is Di Ling?” thought the crowd, Di Ling was insufferably arrogant. He despised Jun Mo Xi and his vital energy of righteousness and his immortal spirit. Jun Mo Xi was an incredibly strong cultivator but Di Ling despised him.

In Di Ling’s eyes, there was only Duan Wu Dao.

“We have to fight to verify your beliefs.” said Jun Mo Xi indifferently. He looked calm and serene, especially after hearing how arrogant Di Ling was.

“Let’s fight, you go first then.” said Di Ling looking proud and self-confident. He looked extremely sure that he would win. Nobody could defeat him!

Jun Mo Xi released more vital energy of righteousness which emitted strident whistling sounds. He jumped forwards and landed in front of Di Ling, a terrifying vortex of energy of righteousness started spinning.

Finally, Di Ling released some Qi and force. It was an extremely brutal firmament energy.

He stretched out his arm and shook it, immediately attacking the vital energy of righteousness. Di Ling was absolutely fearless.

His hand crossed the vital energy of righteousness and continued

moving towards Jun Mo Xi. Jun Mo Xi smiled coldly, he jumped and the Qi of righteousness started revolving at full speed. He didn't even pay attention to Di Ling's hand, he was just concentrating on his own attack.

"Huh?" Di Ling frowned and immediately moved his hand back, it seemed like Jun Mo Xi's vital energy of righteousness was going insane in the air.

"Energy of righteousness, destroy the Earth and sky!" shouted Jun Mo Xi furiously. His strength seemed like it could destroy oceans and mountains. The massive amount of vital energy of righteousness kept oppressing Di Ling's body.

"Hmph!" Di Ling groaned coldly. His clothes were fluttering in the wind. Di Ling moved his hand again, and all around him seemed like the atmosphere was tearing apart. Strident whistling sounds emerged and his energies attacked the vital energy of righteousness.

"Boom!" A terrifying collision-like sound spread in the air. A hurricane formed from the struggle.

Jun Mo Xi moved back three steps but Di Ling didn't move at all. He remained standing tall like nothing could affect him.

"I told you, you can't rival with me. It's useless if you rely on your immortal spirit to resist against me. I am not that stupid." said Di Ling indifferently. A moment before, Jun Mo Xi hadn't cared about Di Ling's attack. He had just attacked at the same time

using his vital energy of righteousness. It meant that he had been relying on his immortal spirit to resist Di Ling's attack, but Di Ling wasn't that stupid. He knew that Jun Mo Xi could recover quickly but he couldn't recover so quickly.

“Nobody can defeat me, I have the firmament blood! I will have to show you how strong that blood is.” said Di Ling. A terrifying blood Qi started spreading in the air as he released some firmament blood Qi. Pure Qi was roaring and rolling in the air powerfully.

“How strong. No wonder that Di Ling is the strongest cultivator at the competition.” thought the crowd. Di Ling's strength was indeed monstrous. His Qi could already make people shake, it seemed like it could even make them suffocate.

Di Ling raised his fist, and it seemed like the oxygen in the air was disappearing. Brutal firmament Qi had appeared on his fist.

“Jun Mo Xi, since you're using your immortal spirit, I will show you the strength of the firmament.” said Di Ling while jumping forwards. The atmosphere was rippling all around him. It seemed like a terrifying physical strength was condensed that fist.

“Vital energy of righteousness, indestructible!” said Jun Mo Xi when he saw that terrifying fist. He was fearless. He condensed his vital energy of righteousness face that fist head on.

Rumbling sounds spread in the air, Jun Mo Xi's punch was destroyed.

However, Jun Mo Xi didn't frown at all. His left hand was also filled with vital energy of righteousness and kept moving towards Di Ling. He didn't stop moving forward for even a second. His right hand was injured but recovered extremely quickly.

"No use." said Di Ling indifferently. He had condensed some firmament strength in his left arm and attacked Jun Mo Xi with it, Di Ling was unperturbed.

Jun Mo Xi couldn't believe it. He raised his head and hands, then his terrifying vital energy of righteousness dashed to the skies. Energies were spinning violently as a terrifying dragon appeared from his hands.

"Boom boom boom." The ground was shaking. The terrifying dragon made Di Ling's body move back and groan coldly, his facial expression looked cold.

"Incredible, that's incredible." the crowd was awed. They didn't want to miss a single second of that battle. Jun Mo Xi's dragon of righteousness immortal spirit was terrifying. It had managed to push Di Ling back. With it Jun Mo Xi didn't need to block attacks, he could just attack unceasingly.

Even though Jun Mo Xi had only broken through to the very top of the eighth Xuan Qi layer, he was monstrously strong. Ordinary cultivators of the ninth Xuan Qi layer couldn't rival with him, but Di Ling had just been injured a little bit. They were both incredible.

Di Ling touched his mouth and found some blood on his fingers.

Di Ling's mouth was bleeding. He now looked particularly ferocious.

“Very good, your immortal spirit is extremely rare and mysterious. But now I will show you the firmament spirit!”

“Boom!” Di Ling released some firmament blood, and Jun Mo Xi felt like he was being oppressed by a physical strength. The entire atmosphere and fighting stage were shaking violently, shaking at the same tempo as Di Ling's heart.

“The firmament spirit is invisible, it uses the strength of the firmament to control the Earth and sky.” said Jun Mo Xi indifferently. At that moment, he had the impression he was in another world.

“So you know about my spirit. You may have the immortal spirit and won't die but now you know you cannot defeat me.” said Di Ling making huge steps. He clenched both his fists and the strength of the firmament oppressed his entire body. He then launched waves that moved towards Jun Mo Xi following Di Ling's fists.

“Gigantic Dragon Strength!” shouted Jun Mo Xi furiously. A terrifying dragon strength emerged in the air but it was covered by Di Ling's firmament spirit. Jun Mo Xi's strength was oppressed, the firmament strength became even stronger at that moment. It

seemed like there was nothing else in the world.

“Boom!” A terrifying strength crashed onto Jun Mo Xi’s body that made him fly away. At the same time, a terrifying strength caught him mid-flight. Di Ling had jumped up and was prepared to strike Jun Mo Xi again. He then said coldly, “I will see how long you can endure my attacks with your immortal spirit.”

“Why endure?” asked Jun Mo Xi with an indifferent smile. He then added, “I give up.”

He fell down to the ground just like a falling leaf. He had lost but he didn’t care.

“How come you didn’t kill me even though you are insufferably arrogant and hate my immortal spirit?” asked Jun Mo Xi. Then he turned around and moved back to his seat. He had lost, so what? Di Ling was indeed stronger than him, but he couldn’t use Jun Mo Xi as he wished. He couldn’t threaten Jun Mo Xi or use him as a puppet.

“Did you see how strong he is?” asked Jun Mo Xi to Lin Feng, still smiling. Lin Feng nodded, Di Ling was really terrifying.

“If you’re aware of how strong he is, I hope you can avenge me.” said Jun Mo Xi smiling. He had lost but it wasn’t that important to him, losing and winning were normal in the frame battle. Nobody could be an eternal winner. There was always someone stronger.

“I will do my best.” said Lin Feng nodding. He then looked at Di Ling... It would be difficult to fight against him.

After that battle, Di Ling was already one of the third best cultivators and Jun Mo Xi might end up ranking third or fourth. It depended on his battle against Lin Feng.

Chapter 672: Duan Wu Dao's Strength

Di Ling and Jun Mo Xi had been incredible, they were both too incredible. Di Ling and his firmament spirit with his terrifying punches, how many jin of power did they fists possess? Jun Mo Xi's huge dragon had even been destroyed, an authentic dragon could have been killed by Di Ling.

Jun Mo Xi had still lost the battle with his immortal dragon spirit and his vital energy of righteousness.

The next one is Duan Wu Dao, his eyes were twinkling. He looked at Xue Sha and said, "Get over here!"

Xue Sha was awkwardly looking at Duan Wu Dao. He had already lost against Jun Mo Xi and Lin Feng, he couldn't lose this time. If he did he wouldn't even be able to finish fourth... After all, Di Ling could probably defeat him just like Lin Feng and Jun Mo Xi. He had no chance to defeat Di Ling so he had to defeat Duan Wu Dao.

"I have to win." thought Xue Sha determined. He made a step forwards silently and looked at Duan Wu Dao.

"Give up." said Duan Wu Dao coldly. He looked really conceited in front of Xue Sha. In his eyes, Xue Sha wasn't a threat.

Duan Wu Dao made Xue Sha even more nervous. He had just had the thought that he could win but now Duan Wu Dao was hurting his confidence.

The crowd was also surprised. Duan Wu Dao was arrogant and aggressive, he was probably as strong as Di Ling. He had just told Xue Sha to give up very calmly, as if it was the only logical choice. There was no suspense for Duan Wu Dao because he already knew the result of the battle

“I still want to see how strong the crown prince of Xue Yue is though, why should I give up?” asked Xue Sha looking glum. He felt extremely humiliated when Duan Wu Dao told him to give up, what a lamentable humiliation.

“Huh?” Duan Wu Dao raised his head and stared back at Xue Sha. A terrifying light appeared that seemed extremely brutal and dazzling to the eyes, he had the energy of a warlord.

“What a terrifying warlord.” thought the crowd. Duan Wu Dao was like Di Ling, was he really only the crown prince of Xue Yue?

“Die!” shouted Duan Wu Dao. A terrifying golden warlord energy appeared, that golden energy was emitting whistling sounds as it launched towards Xue Sha. The entire stadium was shaking. Xue Sha was scared to face that horrible pressure.

“Warlord Punch!” Duan Wu Dao’s fist seemed like it could destroy the planet, just like a peerless warlord.

That terrifying warlord energy rose up in the air. Xue Sha only sensed that his muscles were twitching, he was trying to release some corpse Qi but it was useless. His corpse Qi was insignificant

compared to Duan Wu Dao's warlord Qi.

"The crown prince of Xue Yue has the blood spirit of the king." Many people were shaking when they sensed Duan Wu Dao's Qi. What a terrifying strength. Duan Wu Dao possessed warlord Qi and had learnt the warlord punch, how incredible! That kind of power could only be learnt by monarchs. Duan Wu Dao was the crown prince and had the temperament of a warlord. To him, learning such a skill was absolutely normal.

"Boom!" The warlord punch destroyed the corpse Qi, it didn't even have time to condense before being destroyed.

"Corpse Spirit!" shouted Xue Sha furiously. His spirit appeared and he transformed into a ghost. A terrifying putrid wind started blowing and moving forwards. The corpse Qi was moving straight towards Duan Wu Dao. Duan Wu Dao had wanted to defeat Xue Sha in one punch but he wouldn't allow that.

"Hmph, pointless." said Duan Wu Dao coldly and aggressively. A terrifying warlord punch then bombarded the atmosphere again. Then Duan Wu Dao holding some kind of strength in his hand. Suddenly, Xue Sha felt extremely uncomfortable. It seemed like his putrid spirit was being squeezed by something and then sealed.

His face then turned deathly pale, the situation was getting bad for him.

"Get lost!" shouted Duan Wu Dao furiously. He immediately bombarded the putrid soul with his fist and Xue Sha was projected

away. Blood splashed everywhere as he was badly injured this time.

“Piece of shit! You made me waste my time!” said Duan Wu Dao coldly. He moved back to his seat and his aggressive, violent voice was still resonating in people’s heads.

Even though that battle had been short, it had been incredible. Just like the kind of battle Jun Mo Xi and Di Ling could offer. Duan Wu Dao had managed to severely injure Xue Sha with two attacks.

“Duan Wu Dao is terrifying. He might be the strongest cultivator at the competition.” thought many people in the crowd. Some of them had thought that Duan Wu Dao was even stronger than Di Ling.

He was way too strong, he had defeated Xue Sha in two hits. They all knew how strong Xue Sha was. He might end up fifth at the end of the competition but Duan Wu Dao made him appear as a weakling with his warlord punch. He had even called Xue Sha a piece of shit.

All of them were geniuses but there was a difference between certain geniuses too, they weren’t all equally strong. For example, Duan Wu Dao was much stronger than Xue Sha.

Di Ling was focused on Duan Wu Dao, he would be his strongest opponent. He had always considered him as the other strongest cultivator at the Great Competition of Xue Yu since the first time he had seen Duan Wu Dao. He had always believed that apart from

him, there was nobody else to compete with.

Lin Feng was awed by Duan Wu Dao. How strong was he? Duan Wu Dao was brutal and violent, he didn't kill those who didn't offend him but didn't hesitate to kill his enemies. Lin Feng would have never thought that Duan Wu Dao would be that strong. No wonder Duan Wu Ya believed in his brother so much. Even if Lin Feng finished in the top nine, he couldn't defeat Duan Wu Dao. Duan Wu Ya perfectly knew how strong Duan Wu Dao was.

"The sealed doors strength..." Xue Sha fell to the ground as blood splashed out of his mouth. A moment before, Duan Wu Dao had punched him with the strength of the sealed doors and had made his body become real again. His ghost form was unable to reduce the strength of that punch.

"The competition continues." said Xue Wu Chang indifferently. He was also very surprised. Duan Wu Dao's strength was incredible. He was wondering how the battles between Duan Wu Dao, Di Ling, and Lin Feng would be. The others couldn't rival with them. Everybody was looking forward to seeing those battles.

However, the other battles didn't interest the crowd anymore because only the very best made them feel excited. The winners would be the most dazzling cultivators in all of Xue Yu. They would draw everybody's attention.

At the end of the rankings, Yu Xiao Xiao won against the Dead Tree. Then there was also Qing Meng Xin and Yun Fei Yang. Yun Fei Yang was particularly strong with his force of the Earth and sky.

After that round it was finally Lin Feng's turn again.

This time, Lin Feng could only challenge three people: Di Ling, Jun Mo Xi and Duan Wu Dao.

Who would he choose?

"Lin Feng." said Jun Mo Xi suddenly. Lin Feng then turned his head and looked at him.

"Lin Feng, Duan Wu Dao defeated Xue Sha. He's not weaker than Di Ling, he's an incredible genius. I wouldn't have thought that such monstrous cultivators as you and Duan Wu Dao would appear in Xue Yue. You can even put pressure on me! I already lost one battle which interrupted my series of victories. Now I will give up and let you continue, what do you think?" asked Jun Mo Xi. He had already lost a battle, so his statistics didn't look perfect anymore. Besides, Duan Wu Dao would be extremely difficult to defeat. Jun Mo Xi was ready to help Lin Feng stay healthy for his last battles!

Chapter 673: Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao

Lin Feng was speechless. He knew what Jun Mo Xi meant. He just had to nod and Jun Mo Xi would offer him a victory. Then Lin Feng would just have to fight against Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao. He wanted Lin Feng to keep his determination to fight and struggle for victory.

Lin Feng looked at Jun Mo Xi and nodded.

Jun Mo Xi nodded and smiled. He had no hope to become the first one anyway. Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao would probably struggle for victory but Jun Mo Xi still hoped that Lin Feng would dazzle.

“Alright. Lin Feng, challenge me now.” said Jun Mo Xi gently. The crowd was baffled, Jun Mo Xi was asking Lin Feng to challenge him?

“Okay.” said Lin Feng, nodding. “I choose Jun Mo Xi.”

Lin Feng wanted to fight against Jun Mo Xi?

The crowd didn't understand, they hadn't heard Lin Feng and Jun Mo Xi's conversation a moment before. Jun Mo Xi smiled, he didn't go to the fighting stage. Instead he said, “I forfeit.”

Forfeit!

Jun Mo Xi was giving up!

The crowd was astonished. They obviously knew why he was giving up. He wanted to offer Lin Feng a free win and one more chance to win the competition. Lin Feng only had to fight against Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao now.

Jun Mo Xi was allowing Lin Feng to be one of the three best cultivators at the competition!

Jun Mo Xi and Tang You You were both looking at Lin Feng. They had both offered him a free win.

Finally, it was Di Ling's turn. He had no choice, he had to fight against Duan Wu Dao.

Jun Mo Xi had told Lin Feng to choose him so Di Ling couldn't challenge Lin Feng anymore.

The moment Di Ling moved to the center of the fighting stage, a gigantic hurricane spread in the air. Everybody had been waiting for this.

Di Ling was considered the strongest young man at the competition. Many people were sure that Di Ling would finish first and would be the most dazzling cultivator of the competition.

Duan Wu Dao was extremely brutal and violent. Since he had won against Xue Sha, people considered him as the second best

cultivator. He had defeated Xue Sha in two strikes, that was incredible. However, some people also believed the opposite was true. Duan Wu Dao was gaining more and more prestige. He was the genius of Xue Yue, a small country belonging to Dragon Mountain. He was making his country dazzle.

Now, the decisive battle was about to start, who would win? Many people's hearts were pounding.

Duan Wu Dao arrived in front of Di Ling. Di Ling was the strongest opponent Duan Wu Dao was going to fight. That battle was going to be decisive for them.

"If I defeat you, I will rank first and become the strongest cultivator at the Great Competition of Xue Yu." said Di Ling indifferently. After Duan Wu Dao, he only had to fight against Lin Feng who was no challenge.

"I will finish first." said Duan Wu Dao calmly. He had the warlord Qi, he was going to win the competition and reach the clouds. The victory would be for him alone, Duan Wu Dao.

"Let's fight." said Di Ling, releasing some firmament energy that dashed to the skies. He only wanted to dazzle at that moment.

"Let's fight!" shouted Duan Wu Dao furiously. The Qi of both fighters seemed like they could exterminate the planet. It seemed like deities could respect Di Ling for his firmament Qi, but Duan Wu Dao seemed like a deity with his warlord Qi.

“What a terrifying and brutal Qi! This battle is going to be incredible!” thought the crowd, they were drooling with anticipation. In their eyes, the winner of that battle would be the most dazzling cultivator at the Great Competition of Xue Yu.

“Fist of the firmament!” shouted Di Ling furiously. A terrifying energy dashed to the skies and rolled in the air. The pressure was gigantic, bringing a strong winds and powerful energies with it.

“Warlord punch!” shouted Duan Wu Dao just as aggressively. His warlord fist was terrifying, it seemed like he could squeeze the atmosphere. He was moving straight towards Di Ling.

“Boom!” A terrifying light covered the two fighters, explosions resonated in the air along with Duan Wu Dao and Di Ling’s heartbeats. A white color and a golden color collided and turned into an incredible beam of light.

After some incredible lights illuminated the atmosphere, the two fighters moved away from each other and collided again. The crowd couldn’t even follow them with their eyes.

“Boom boom boom boom boom!” A terrifying hurricane spread in the air. The crowd only saw two lights lacerate the atmosphere. Their fists kept colliding over and over again.

The two silhouettes were in the air and dazzling lights were everywhere, explosions continued to sound. The two of them then separated again and stared at each other this time. They both looked extremely self-confident, like heroes.

“You didn’t disappoint me Duan Wu Dao, but I’m still going to win.” said Di Ling as sure as before. He then raised both his hands and a terrifying firmament energy spread in the air. A vortex appeared and the atmosphere was twitching. Di Ling was controlling the space again. Even Duan Wu Dao was twitching as if he had been about to break along with the atmosphere.

“Di Ling, you have the firmament blood and the firmament spirit, you understand firmament intent and can control the atmosphere. However, is it that easy for you to win? The atmosphere is not yours!” shouted Duan Wu Dao sharply. He released some more warlord Qi and all around him appeared some seal Qi, the atmosphere suddenly stopped twitching around him.

“Die!” shouted Duan Wu Dao furiously. The atmosphere around Di Ling also stopped twitching and a seal strength locked the atmosphere.

“They are both so terrifying!” Di Ling had the power of the firmament, Duan Wu Dao had the strength of the seals. They could both control or lock the atmosphere and thus influence their environment.

Di Ling looked glum. What a terrifying seal strength... Duan Wu Dao was much stronger than what he had expected.

“Warlord punch!” shouted Duan Wu Dao furiously. The seal strength and the warlord punch shot out towards Di Ling at an incredible speed. It seemed like time had stopped.

“Firmament destruction!” shouted Di Ling while raising his fist. Rumbling sounds spread in the air. The firmament looked like it was going to get annihilated, and the terrifying warlord punch also got crushed. Only warlord Qi was left.

“Boom!” Another explosion sounded in the air. This time, Di Ling was projected backwards and looked even more furious.

“Very good Duan Wu Dao, you made me move back a step. Now I will show you the precipice of the firmament blood.” said Di Ling coldly. A terrifying blood strength started fluctuating in the air. A powerful Qi emerged and surrounded his body, the Qi looked like it was boiling. He had broken through to the very top of the ninth Xuan Qi layer.

His Qi of the top of the ninth Xuan Qi layer was terrifying. How scary! The crowd was stunned. They had never thought that any of the geniuses at the competition would have broken through to the very top of the ninth Xuan Qi layer...

“Firmament destruction! Die!” At that moment, a new fist appeared and bombarded the atmosphere.

“Warlord punch!” shouted Duan Wu Dao looking glum. His punch was terrifying but it disappeared.

“Boom!” another terrifying strength then landed on Duan Wu Dao’s body which made him groan and move back. However, his warlord Qi was condensing.

Chapter 674: Last Two Battles

“Boom boom boom!” Terrifying sounds echoed in the night. It seemed like time-space doors coming from remote ages were opening. Then they appeared in the air around Di Ling and surrounded his body.

Everybody raised their heads and saw eight sealed doors in the air. The seal strength they were emitting was terrifying.

“According to the rumors, the crown prince of Xue Yue has the sealed door spirit. The rumors are true then... According to the rumors, the sealed doors spirit is monstrously powerful.” thought the crowd when they saw those doors. Those sealed doors looked terrifying and their strength was monumental.

Di Ling raised his head and saw eight sealed doors. In Xue Yue, it was said that the strongest cultivators had nine sealed doors, Duan Wu Dao already had eight. Nine sealed doors was the highest number the soul could accept. Duan Wu Dao had already broken through to the ninth Xuan Qi layer! He had extremely high natural abilities.

“Di Ling, with my sealed doors you have no chance.” said Duan Wu Dao coldly. His warlord Qi was more and more terrifying.

“Even if you have the sealed doors spirit, you cannot stop my firmament spirit.” said Di Ling looking even colder. His force and Qi had already reached an incredible volume.

“We will see if it can’t block your spirit, but in any case I can seal your body!” Duan Wu Ya joined his hands and shouted violently, “SEAL!”

In a flash, the eight sealed doors moved at the same time and turned into a pitch-black light which emitted rumbling sounds. It seemed like the doors were about to penetrate into Di Ling’s body.

“Firmament blood!” shouted Di Ling. A terrifying firmament blood dashed to the skies and blocked the sealed doors. It was clear to him that if the sealed doors penetrated into his body and sealed him, his spirit and cultivation would be in danger, and maybe even his life.

“Kacha!” A terrifying sound emerged in the air, one of the sealed doors had broke, but the seven others were still there and still surrounded his body. Di Ling was going insane, his struggling was making all those doors shake violently. It seemed like they could seal his body and his firmament strength.

“Break!” shouted Di Ling violently. A terrifying firmament strength emerged as another door broke, turned into a light beam, and then disappeared. He could make the doors break with his incredible strength.

“No, it won’t happen.” said Duan Wu Dao. He rose up in the air and started spinning. He lowered his head and then threw himself at Di Ling at full speed. His terrifying warlord spirit turned into a brutal hurricane. Duan Wu Dao was as fast as lightning.

Di Ling raised his head and looked at Duan Wu Dao, his eyes were bloodshot like he was tired.

“Die die die die!” Di Ling shouted “die” once and it resonated and echoed in the sky. The firmament Qi then regained its intensity. He was using his maximal strength of the ninth Xuan Qi layer.

“Seal!” shouted Duan Wu Dao furiously. A terrifying seal strength rose up that seemed like it could seal anything. He stretched his hands and crackling sounds spread in the air. Some energies were being destroyed, Duan Wu Dao sensed a terrifying pressure on his body.

“Break!” Roared Di Ling furiously, he sounded like an animal. His blood Qi was dashing to the skies, the firmament blood was fighting the firmament. Whistling sounds were hurting people’s ears. What a scene.

“Boom boom boom boom boom!” Explosions seemed unending. The sealed doors spirit was broken by Di Ling, his exceptional strength was astonishing.

“Die!” However, this time Duan Wu Dao moved and an incredible amount of warlord Qi crashed onto Di Ling’s body. It seemed like an infinite number of warlord punches were crashing onto Di Ling’s body. There were unceasing sounds as his body was pulverized.

The fighting stage had some incredible fissures forming. The two of them disappeared and the crowd could only sense the ground

shaking under their feet. Duan Wu Dao wasn't going to give a single opportunity to Di Ling.

A silhouette streaked through the sky and landed on the fighting stage. Everybody was stunned. Duan Wu Dao... He was going to be the final winner..... A genius from Xue Yue.

Di Ling quickly came out of the ground, his Qi was revolving violently as his clothes were torn apart. He looked ferocious as blood dripped from his mouth.

Di Ling had lost, he had never thought that he would lose. He had lost against Duan Wu Dao. Duan Wu Dao would be the real champion and Di Ling would end up second.

“Duan Wu Dao, I will defeat you someday and regain face.” said Di Ling. He returned back to his seat and then sat down cross-legged. He was starting to heal his wounds. Even though he didn't look affected, his internal organs had been badly injured. Duan Wu Dao had crushed him internally. Di Ling had no strength left, which is why he hadn't been able to continue their battle.

“I will wait for you.” said Duan Wu Dao indifferently. He then moved back to his seat and closed his eyes. It hadn't felt good to have his spirit attacked violently as it had. Di Ling was also monstrously powerful.

“Pfewww....” The crowd took a deep breath. The Great Competition of Xue Yu was astonishing. Duan Wu Dao was going to be the great champion... He was going to end up as the strongest

champion ever. Di Ling was only going to be the second... And Lin Feng, thanks to Jun Mo Xi, would finish third.

Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao's battle had been so incredible that the other battles could only be boring. Maybe the battles between Lin Feng and Di Ling or Duan Wu Dao would be a little entertaining.

While waiting for Lin Feng's turn, Duan Wu Dao and Di Ling remained calm. Xue Wu Chang commenced the remaining fights.

The other battles were taking place slowly, one after the other. Jun Mo Xi seemed like he was going to finish fourth, Xue Sha fifth, Tang You You sixth, Ling Xiao seventh, Yun Fei Yang eighth, the Dead Tree ninth, and then Qing Meng Xin. The eleventh would be Yu Xiao Xiao... Out of the eight most outstanding geniuses, three had ended up with miserable positions. Yu Mo had died, the Dead Tree and Yu Xiao Xiao had disappeared from the top eight rankings.

Lin Feng, Tang You You and Yun Fei Yang had replaced them.

Now, there were only Duan Wu Dao and Di Ling... Everything depended on their battle against Lin Feng but the crowd was sure about that the ranking list they had pieced together would hold. Duan Wu Dao would be first, Di Ling second and Lin Feng third.

Slowly, the night became clearer as sun rose up slowly. Everybody had fought, only two battles were left.

Jun Mo Xi had given up against Duan Wu Dao, only two battles were left. Lin Feng against Di Ling and Lin Feng against Duan Wu Dao.

The entire area around the fighting stage was silent. One could hear the rustling sound of the leaves on the ground and the atmosphere seemed dreary.

Lin Feng was calmly standing there, as if the competition had nothing to do with him. The crowd admired Lin Feng for remaining silent. Surprisingly, he had accepted Jun Mo Xi's proposition to struggle, he was going to try and fight. He was going to fight against Duan Wu Dao and Di Ling... he managed to remain calm knowing he was facing those two...

"Crrr... Crrr..." A terrifying energy emerged out of Di Ling's body. He opened his eyes in which sharp lights twinkled.

At the same time, Duan Wu Dao also opened his eyes. Even though he hadn't been as badly injured as Di Ling, his spirit had still been badly affected. Di Ling had bombarded him violently. Therefore, they both needed a long time to recover...

"They opened their eyes... Finally.. The battles were going to start..." thought the crowd. Even if the result of the battles were already sure, they were still impatient to see them. Would they be surprised?

Chapter 675: Lin Feng Vs. Di Ling

Everybody was looking at Lin Feng, who would he choose first for the two last battles?

“Lin Feng, you choose.” said Xue Wu Chang.

“I choose him.” said Lin Feng, pointing at Di Ling. Lin Feng looked calm and serene. Since Duan Wu Dao had won against Di Ling, Lin Feng should start with Di Ling. It would be easier to fight against him than Duan Wu Dao.

Di Ling was staring at Lin Feng, his eyes were twinkling coldly.

“Is it necessary to continue the battles?” asked Di Ling indifferently. Even though he had lost against Duan Wu Dao, he hadn’t stopped being arrogant. How could Lin Feng fight against him. If Di Ling fought against Lin Feng, he would lose face.

In Di Ling’s eyes, those two battles were not necessary. It was pointless to continue. Lin Feng had already reached the highest point he could reach.

“You used to think you were the strongest cultivator at the Great Competition of Xue Yu, what about now?” said Lin Feng. Di Ling narrowed his eyes. Even though Lin Feng’s voice was absolutely normal, he was making fun of him! He had thought he would finish first so why did he think he would finish second now? Di Ling couldn’t afford talking big like this, so he had to fight.

“Excellent. Since you want to fight, I will fight. I will show everyone here what the expression “an ant trying to shake a tree” means. I will show everybody how you overestimate your abilities.” Then Di Ling jumped forwards and landed not so far in front of Lin Feng. His terrifyingly brutal Qi dashed to the skies and moved towards Lin Feng. His firmament energy had once more appeared.

Di Ling stretched his hands and grabbed some parts of the atmosphere, he could control it. A terrifying vortex appeared and moved towards Lin Feng. It seemed like that vortex could kill Lin Feng right there.

“An ant wants to fight, how ridiculous!” yelled Di Ling, clenching his fists in the atmosphere. The air pressure immediately pressured Lin Feng’s body. Lin Feng had the impression he was going to break into pieces.

The atmosphere kept twitching and people saw hallucinations. The crowd was shivering, Di Ling was still monstrously strong. Maybe when he was fighting against Du Wu Dao, they hadn’t realized how strong he was because of the circumstances. But facing Lin Feng was a different story. It seemed like he could kill him using the tip of his finger. That kind of battle was terrifying and perilous.

Lin Feng’s arms slowly and messily rose up in the air, he slowly put a hand on his back.

A metallic sound emerged in the air as his bloodthirsty sword appeared. It was diffusing its usual blood-red light. It then slowly rose up in the air oppressively.

“Clang!” A terrifying sword Qi rose and emitted whistling sounds. The oppressive Qi released by Di Ling was becoming weaker. The sword intent was starting to become more intense. With Lin Feng’s willpower and intent, the sword Qi was gaining leverage.

“Firmament!” shouted Di Ling furiously. He clenched his fists, he seemed to be in perfect fusion with the atmosphere. The pressure was incredibly intense on Lin Feng’s body. Could Lin Feng resist Di Ling’s firmament intent?

Just when Lin Feng sensed all those oppressive energies, his sword Qi reached the first level of intent, then the second level, then the third level, then the fourth.... This sword Qi was emitting incredible sounds. It seemed like there were many swords suddenly, but it also seemed it was still increasing. That sword Qi was getting even more intense.

“Die!” A terrifying light appeared in the sky, red like blood and moving as fast as lightning. It even lacerated the atmosphere in two as if the world was a loaf of bread. The red light then lacerated the firmament.

Lin Feng’s sword intent was level five at that moment!

Everyone’s hearts were pounding violently. Lin Feng’s sword

intent used to be level four! He had used a level four sword intent to cut off Ling Xiao's arm before, he must have hidden his strength again! His sword intent could even lacerate the firmament intent! Everything under the sword intent cut like butter. Nothing could stop it!

Lin Feng's sword intent was level five... With his bloodthirsty sword, things were just starting to get serious.

Di Ling frowned, in the end Lin Feng was still weaker than him. Di Ling moved back and grabbed the atmosphere. His firmament intent continued to oppress the entire atmosphere, especially that red light.

A terrifying pure Qi was insanely moving in the atmosphere. The Earth and sky were emitting rumbling sounds. The red lights were bombarded.

Finally, the red lights were destroyed. Di Ling raised his head and realized that Lin Feng was in the air and was descending with his bloodthirsty sword. Once again, he was releasing level five sword intent and it seemed like nothing else existed.

"Die!" shouted Di Ling furiously. He rose up in the air and his firmament intent attacked the sword light. He released some more pure Qi that was even more powerful than Lin Feng's.

"Second sword." said Lin Feng. He was moving like the wind, and at that moment his sword was moving towards Di Ling's throat.

“I will finish you!” shouted Di Ling while clenching his fists even harder. A terrifying oppressive energy moved towards the sword energy again. Di Ling’s hands contained some terrifying pure Qi oppressed the bloodthirsty sword as well. He wanted to stop that red sword.

“Third sword!” A blood light appeared again and the atmosphere seemed like it was filled with bloodthirsty swords. An infinite emotionless energy moved towards Di Ling like a rain of arrows. They wanted to pierce through his body.

“Fuck off!” shouted Di Ling like an animal. He propelled both his hands forwards at the same time. An energy as monumental as a mountain moved towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng had the feeling that an actual mountain was weighing on his shoulders. He had the feeling that he was suffocating under it.

“Fourth sword!” Lin Feng unsheathed another sword, that sword seemed normal. Its energy wasn’t dashing to the skies. It immediately moved towards that mountain-like oppressive energy. After the collision, that terrifying mountain of oppressive energy collapsed in four different directions.

“Die!” Lin Feng’s bloodthirsty sword didn’t stop moving as it followed his movements. A seemingly infinite bloodthirsty sword shadows moved in the atmosphere. They were blotting out the sky and covering up the Earth. The crowd couldn’t even see where the sword was anymore. They could only see an incredibly dazzling sword light. The Earth and sky were filled with swords.

“How strong. Who said Lin Feng couldn’t fight?” thought several

people in the crowd, shaking their heads. His sword intent was level five, how incredible.

“Piss off!” roared Di Ling like an animal again. The firmament energy was shaking insanely, blotting out the sky and covering up the Earth. The terrifying amount of sword energy finally disappeared and the curtain of swords were unceasingly being destroyed.

“Thirteenth sword!” said Lin Feng in a solemn way. Immediately after, the crowd saw a terrifying red light.

The crowd could only see the terrifying amount of sword light fade away as the atmosphere became normal again.

Di Ling lowered his head and stretched out his hand. He touched his waist and found blood.

When the crowd was astonished to see blood. Di Ling was injured! He had been injured by Lin Feng’s thirteenth sword!

Di Ling raised his head and looked at Lin Feng. He looked like he couldn’t believe his eyes.

“You... Injured me?” asked Di Ling in a low voice. Lin Feng had surprisingly injured him.

“I’m just a weak ant trying to defeat a gigantic tree....” said Lin Feng indifferently yet mockingly. Di Ling had told him he was an

ant, but now Lin Feng was using it to mock him. Di Ling's was extremely strong, the thirteenth sword had been filled with level five intent but it had only injured him.

“You will regret that.” said Di Ling. A terrifying firmament strength then invaded the atmosphere again, his strength had reached the very top of the ninth Xuan Qi layer at that moment.

“Regret? Why would I regret anything?” said Lin Feng, firmly holding his bloodthirsty sword. He still looked calm and serene. Just like Di Ling, his strength was also increasing.

“Boom!”

A terrifying strength invaded the atmosphere, eighth Xuan Qi layer!

Lin Feng had broken through to the eighth Xuan Qi layer!

The crowd was astonished, their hearts were hurting from the excitement. Lin Feng had broken through to the eighth Xuan Qi layer and his intent was level five, that was Lin Feng!

Chapter 676: Tearing Firmament Energy!

There were many people considering Lin Feng since the beginning of the Great Competition of Xue Yu, when he had only broken through to the fifth Xuan Qi layer. He didn't have a terrifying sword intent and people didn't really believe in him. In the evil area, he had then drawn people's attention because of Yu Mo.

Many people had thought that Lin Feng would be eliminated much sooner, but with his extraordinary abilities he had managed to make it so far. Step by step until now, he had broken through to the seventh Xuan Qi layer, and then his sword intent had reached level five, and then he had injured Di Ling and had broken through to the eighth Xuan Qi layer.

With his determination, Lin Feng could lacerate the atmosphere using his bloodthirsty sword. He could oppress the atmosphere and make people suffocate. Lin Feng had even managed to kill Yu Mo and cut one of Ling Xiao's arms,. He had also defeated Xue Sha. All those people were extremely strong but Lin Feng could defeat them, and now the decisive battles had started. Lin Feng's strength was unruly.

Those who were friends with Lin Feng were particularly astonished, their souls were shaking. The Yu Clan, the Wan Shou Sect, the people from Tian Feng, the Yue Clan... And even Xue Sha and Ling Xiao were all staring at Lin Feng in amazement and fear. At that moment, Lin Feng looked incredibly strong. He was becoming one of the strongest cultivators at the Great Competition of Xue Yu.

With his strength, Lin Feng could defeat cultivators of the ninth Xuan Qi layer, he could destroy the Yu Clan, the Wan Shou Sect, and so forth very easily. How would they survive?

The Yu Clan and the Wan shou Sect were terrified. They used to think that it would take Lin Feng many years to become a monstrous cultivator. Unfortunately for them, the “far future” was happening much sooner than expected.

Now Lin Feng could go back to Xue Yue and destroy the Yu Clan and the Wan Shou Sect easily. Besides, Lin Feng would really do it with his temperament. He hadn't forgotten anything, the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and the others. They had always hated Lin Feng and all those who had tried to kill him had failed. Now that Lin Feng had become so strong, would he let them off?

Yue Qing Shan's eyes were twitching, his white hair became even whiter... His face looked even more desperate and desolate. How monstrous. He had always focused on Yue Tian Ming, he had always thought Yue Tian Ming would become monster of a cultivator... If he had raised Lin Feng and Yue Tian Ming next to each other, he would have realized that Yue Tian Ming wasn't that gifted. And now Lin Feng wasn't fighting in the name of the Yue Clan, people considered him representing Yangzhou City. He was dazzling at the competition, he could compete against Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao.

Di Ling watched as Lin Feng broke through to the eighth Xuan Qi layer. His firmament energy was becoming more and more powerful. From the look of his pupils, it was possible to see that he

didn't despise Lin Feng anymore.

“Eighth Xuan Qi layer... Alright, no problem, very good.” said Di Ling, his blood was boiling. The energy of his spirit spread in the air and it seemed like the firmament was going to be destroyed. He shook his hands and it seemed like the Earth and sky belonged to him. The intent of the Earth and sky were oppressing Lin Feng's body.

Lin Feng firmly held his bloodthirsty sword, which was becoming stronger. He then slowly started walking. On the ground appeared marks left by the bloodthirsty sword. The sword intent was cutting the atmosphere. A cut appeared everywhere that Lin Feng stepped.

His sword seemed to be indestructible, it seemed like he was alone in the world.

The crowd watched him walking towards Di Ling. They were not sure but they had the feeling that the crevices and fissures were left behind by Lin Feng.

“Boom!” Di Ling also made a step forwards and the ground started shaking again. A terrifying pure Qi and firmament intent fell down from the sky and oppressed Lin Feng. It seemed like Di Ling wanted to crush Lin Feng's body. It seemed like the entire planet was going to collapse.

“What a terrifying force!” People's hearts were pounding violently. They could sense Di Ling's pressure from very far away,

it was making their heads feel heavy. They had the feeling that something was stuck in their throat.

Of course, Lin Feng's sword had the same effect. With his sword intent he could destroy the firmament intent.

“Who will win?”

The crowd was having difficulty see Lin Feng when he penetrated into the firmament energy. It seemed like he was farther and farther away from them. His silhouette looked sharp, but then they heard some light stepping sounds. Suddenly, they had a hallucination that they couldn't see Lin Feng anymore.

Instead of Lin Feng, there was only a sword.

He had fused with his sword and with the Earth, Lin Feng had disappeared. There was only a blood-red sword illuminating the world.

There were no cracking or tearing sounds, there were no whistling sounds. There was a deadly energy and a red light, and that energy felt extremely sharp. The crowd felt like they were going to die when they sensed that terrifying energy. They had the feeling that the terrifying blood-red light was going to destroy them.

At the moment when everything became calm again, two silhouettes appeared on the fighting stage. Di Ling was motionless.

Lin Feng was still holding his bloodthirsty sword whose tip was touching the ground. There was some dust around. Neither of them were emitting a sound, the atmosphere was oppressive.

“Is it finished?” The crowd hadn’t seen anything.

“Who won?” they just wanted to know what had just happened. The energies had almost killed them.

A strong wind was still blowing and brushing away on the crowd, but there was no sound and no odor.

“Something is dripping!” said someone breaking the silence. Then they followed the direction where the sound had come from and they were astonished again.

They saw several red drops near Di Ling’s feet. Something was dripping from his body. Even though it was small it was significant.

Di Ling got injured again!

“It’s dripping, blood is dripping!” The crowd was astonished. Blood continued dripping. Lin Feng moved, but it was to sheathe his bloodthirsty sword on his back!

“An ant? I managed to destroy your firmament energy.” said Lin Feng indifferently. He looked extremely calm. Everyone was silent, he had won. Lin Feng had won with that sword!

Lin Feng had managed to defeat Di Ling!

A terrifying pure Qi started rotating around Di Ling's body. He wanted to cure his wounds and stop the bleeding. He moved back to his seat without saying a word... And then sat down. Di Ling's actions proved that Lin Feng had won.

The crowd couldn't believe their eyes. Lin Feng had surprisingly defeated Di Ling, Lin Feng wasn't third anymore, he was second... If Lin Feng defeated Duan Wu Dao, he would earn the first place at the competition...

The exception, the total exception. To everyone's great surprise, Lin Feng had managed to make it that far. Nobody would have believed it.

The crowd remembered back to when Lin Feng had obtained the first jade key, was it only luck?

At that moment, Lin Feng was about to start the very last battle of the competition to become the most dazzling competitor.

Chapter 677: The Final Battle

The crowd got over their previous surprise and became excited again. They were wondering what would happen during the last battle. Their blood was almost boiling. They had considered Lin Feng an insect without importance the first time they saw him. They had never thought such a thing would happen in the end.

Maybe that a thousand years after, Lin Feng would stand at the top of Xue Yu with his bloodthirsty sword. Maybe Lin Feng's grandchildren would even say proudly, that that sword belonged to their ancestor, and with it Lin Feng rose.

“Lin Feng from Xue Yue...” The crowd was looking at that young man, he looked proud. They would always remember his name and how astonishing he had been. Lin Feng was a miracle.

Then they turned their heads around and looked at Duan Wu Dao. He had calmly observed everything, but he who always looked aggressive, violent and cruel, didn't look that calm anymore. He had always thought that his strongest opponent would be Di Ling. He had never thought that Lin Feng would defeat Di Ling. It meant that he wasn't finished, there was one more real battle for him to fight..

He had never thought that his final opponent would be Lin Feng, his compatriot.

In the air, Xue Wu Chang looked down at Lin Feng and smiled. How rare! Two people from Xue Yue were going to fight each other

for the final battle of the competition... Xue Yue was sure to be the most dazzling country at the Great Competition of Xue Yu... In the past, a country under the jurisdiction of an empire had never even obtained the third place at the competition... And now, the first and second had already been obtained by two cultivators from Xue Yue! That was mind-blowing!

“Lin Feng, how long do you need to rest?” asked Xue Wu Chang. Lin Feng had just fought against Di Ling and had used lots of energy. If he wanted, he could have a rest. The last battle was the most important fight for him so he couldn’t just gamble and continue hastily. Lin Feng could choose himself, he could rest three or even five days...

The crowd looked at Lin Feng and asked themselves “When would the final battle happen?”

“I don’t need to rest. Let’s fight now!” said Lin Feng. The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng didn’t need to rest... He was going to fight right away.

After fighting against Di Ling, Lin Feng didn’t need to rest...? He wasn’t even a little bit tired?

“Lin Feng, you need to rest. Don’t worry yourself.” said Xue Wu Chang. He didn’t approve of Lin Feng’s decision. Duan Wu Dao had defeated Di Ling... And he was able to deploy eight sealed doors and seal people’s bodies and souls. That kind of seal was almost impossible to remove.

“Don’t worry, I didn’t use much energy a moment ago.” said Lin Feng facing Xue Wu Chang and smiling. Everybody was astonished, they all exchanged strange expressions.

A moment before, Lin Feng had defeated Di Ling but he hadn’t used much energy? Wasn’t he humiliating Di Ling?

Di Ling opened his eyes. He didn’t wanted to observe Duan Wu Dao and Lin Feng’s battle. He wanted to see the battle with his own eyes. What would be the result? Would they fight? He really wanted to see the finale.

Duan Wu Dao had also defeated Di Ling and Lin Feng had also defeated him. Who was stronger between Lin Feng and Duan Wu Dao?

“Alright, since you insist, you can fight immediately.” said Xue Wu Chang. He didn’t try to prevent Lin Feng anymore. Besides, Duan Wu Dao immediately jumped forwards and started walking slowly... He was looking at Lin Feng.

“I know that you want to get married with my sister, right?” said Duan Wu Dao. Duan Wu Dao was the crown prince of Xue Yue and even though he only devoted his life to practicing cultivation and seldom taken care of external affairs, he knew about important events such as his sister’s wedding. He also knew that Lin Feng had destroyed the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. He also knew that Duan Wu Ya had told Lin Feng to challenge Duan Wu Dao so he could marry Duan Xin Ye.

Even though he knew all those things, he had never personally appeared. Because he had dedicated his entire life to cultivation, he was now at the top of the fighting stage at the Great Competition of Xue Yue. He could stand there proudly where everybody admired him. Caring about other things would have been pointless, so he didn't care about them. He had been preparing for that final battle at the Great Competition of Xue Yu for such a long time. The terribly violent and brutal crown prince of Xue Yue had seldom shown his real face.

The crowd was confused when the crowd heard Duan Wu Dao. There was something else going on between Lin Feng and Duan Wu Dao's family? Lin Feng wanted to get married with Duan Wu Dao's sister, the princess of Xue Yue?

"I am really surprised to have you as my final opponent. We are here together and we are both from Xue Yue. That is an honor for our country, that is glory. However, the final winner of the Great Competition of Xue Yu will be me. You will have no chance to defeat me. You don't need to listen to Duan Wu Ya, you can marry my sister and then we'll go and conquer the Continent of the Nine Clouds together." said Duan Wu Dao. He had wild ambitions and the soul of a conqueror, but he was so nice to Lin Feng. Lin Feng was so young and was able to defeat Di Ling, he could definitely conquer the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

"I don't need you to agree, I don't need Duan Wu Ya's authorization either. I will struggle to do my best and finish first. Then when I go back to Xue Yue, nobody will dare offend me, Duan Xin Ye will welcome me with open arms. Everybody will congratulate me and I will share my glory with Duan Xin Ye." said Lin Feng indifferently. Since he was there already, he was

definitely going to try and finish first. Nothing could stop him anymore. The glory wouldn't be his alone, he would share this glory with his mother, his father and all the ones he loved. Lin Feng wanted that glory.

Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng would get married and live happily in love. If he went back to Xue Yue after winning the competition, who would criticize him, who would offend him? Who would stand in his way?

He wanted to finish first and he would do his best to finish first!

“That girl, Xin Ye, must be really happy...” whispered Qing Chan, she said that with a radiant smile on her face. She looked sweet and gentle.

“Since you are from Xue Yue, you know my temperament is bad. I easily lose temper.” said Duan Wu Dao, his energies were becoming denser. He was staring down Lin Feng.

“The crown prince Duan Wu Dao, unruly, good to those who are good but will kill those are bad to him. However, you first have to defeat me before you start talking big. Don't act like Di Ling, if you lost then you'd lose face.” said Lin Feng indifferently. Di Ling had threatened him and the results had been catastrophic.

“Let's fight then.” shouted Duan Wu Dao violently. A terrifying warlord Qi emerged out of his body and attacked Lin Feng. At the same time, he closed the space between himself and Lin Feng. A terrifying golden color appeared all around Duan Wu Dao.

“Violent warlord punch!” Duan Wu Dao raised both his fists at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was standing there, calmly. Sword cultivators were calm and serene. With his sword, he could annihilate everything.

“Die!” His sword rose up in the air and some level five intent invaded the entire atmosphere. The red light was dazzling as it moved straight towards Duan Wu Dao.

“Seal!” shouted Duan Wu Dao. He immediately released some sealed doors intent. The Qi was getting more and more violent, it seemed like the red lights were being stopped by those energies and were becoming weaker.

Lin Feng’s sword cultivation was incredible. With his sword intent he had managed to lacerate Di Ling’s firmament blood energy. Di Ling had a firmament spirit and understood firmament intent but had still lost.

Duan Wu Dao had eight sealed doors and understood sealed doors intent. The atmosphere seemed to only possess sealed doors energies.

Lin Feng looked emotionless as his bloodthirsty sword rotated and a red light turned into a vortex. Whatever went in that vortex seemed to disappear.

“Disappear!” The warlord fist crashed into the sword light. Duan Wu Dao’s sleeves were shaking. A terrifying sealed doors energy oppressed Lin Feng’s sword.

However, Lin Feng’s sword wasn’t moving back, it was moving forwards with indomitable will. Subtle sounds were spreading in the air and emitting whistling sounds. Everything was getting destroyed. Even the sealed doors we being destroyed.

Chapter 678: Sealed Doors

Duan Wu Dao looked disheartened. Lin Feng was going to become a monstrously strong sword cultivator. Lin Feng's sword intent was level five and each of his attacks using the bloodthirsty sword were terrifying. Duan Wu Dao had seen Lin Feng's speed during his battle against Di Ling. Lin Feng was extremely fast, as fast as lightning. Even if Duan Wu Dao was remained self-confident, he didn't despise Lin Feng.

Duan Wu Dao made a step forwards as his sealed doors moved in to seal Lin Feng.

“Back punch!” shouted Duan Wu Dao. His punched covered the Earth and moved towards Lin Feng. Duan Wu Dao trampled on the ground and he rose up in the air, his warlord Qi was terrifying. He then shouted violently, “SEAL!”

Lin Feng was surrounded by sealed doors, he was backed into a corner. The blood-red sword was going insane, annihilating the different punches. Lin Feng raised his head and saw Duan Wu Dao's warlord punches falling down from the sky without limits, as if the gods wanted to crush him.

A terrifying sword energy rose up and Lin Feng's entire body turned into a sword. There was only sword Qi surrounding him, which was destroying the endless warlord punches.

Lin Feng moved and his bloodthirsty sword followed. Lin Feng's thirteenth bloodthirsty sword attack was extremely fast. Lin

Feng's body looked like a beam of light.

“Seal!” Boom boom!” explosions sounded and then the two people descended down to the stage. Duan Wu Dao moved back a few steps and stretched his hand out. In it appeared something black, it was some sword Qi which had hurt him.

Lin Feng looked at Duan Wu Dao who was still releasing some terrifying brutal Qi.

“No wonder you were able to defeat Di Ling, you've broken through to the eighth Xuan Qi layer and your sword intent is level five. People of the Xuan Qi layer cannot defeat you anymore, only someone with Tian Qi layer strength can defeat you now. However, I am an exception and I will not give you any opportunity.”

Duan Wu Dao then released an incredible ancient sealed doors energy which seemed to come from remote ages. Eight doors appeared in the air in full antiquity. Those eight doors were incredible, they contained such terrifying sealed door energy.

Sealed doors... Again...

Could Lin Feng resist against those eight sealed doors?

Di Ling had used incredible strength to break free from those eight sealed doors. He had fought to break them, however, they had had worn him down and he lost. Now, how would Lin Feng

deal with those sealed doors?

Lin Feng looked at those eight doors and a terrifying fire emerged out of his body and rose up in the air.

He was using his entire strength of the eighth Xuan Qi layer.

The crowd was staring at Lin Feng's fire. Would Lin Feng be able to defeat those eight sealed doors with fire? How was that possible? Di Ling had used a monstrous amount of strength to break through those doors... How would Lin Feng be able to destroy them? It was impossible, he would never be able to break those doors.

His fire made the ambient temperature rise drastically. Lin Feng was moving back, it seemed like he was trying to gain some time.

"Are you trying to escape?" asked Duan Wu Dao smiling. He then shouted furiously, "Seal!"

Then the eight doors turned into eight black beams of light and shot towards Lin Feng.

"Black lotus!" whispered Lin Feng in a deep voice. He condensed his entire fire Qi, the Qi in his body started circulating insanely.

Lin Feng then released some incredible deadly energy. The crowd only saw Lin Feng raise both his hands and a black lotus appeared

there.

It was pitch-black, gloomy, and filled with deadly energies.

Everything was happening extremely fast. It was so fast that people couldn't see clearly. The eight sealed doors moved towards Lin Feng's body and Lin Feng opened his hands. He then shouted one word, "Destroy!"

"Boom!" At the moment when the eight sealed doors fell down, a terrifying deadly energy spread in the air. The crowd only saw a pitch-black light in which Lin Feng drowned under.

The entire crowd suddenly had the sensation that they were going to suffocate and die.

The sealed doors were burning in the atmosphere, and then they disappeared without a trace. Everything became calm again as Lin Feng appeared.

He was still standing proudly on the fighting stage.

He had broken the sealed doors.

"They broke?" The crowd was astonished, staring at Lin Feng. That terrifying black lotus had destroyed the eight sealed doors.

"Cough cough!" Duan Wu Dao coughed and his muscles twitched.

His soul had already been severely affected during his battle against Di Ling when the latter had destroyed his sealed doors. Now, Lin Feng had defeated them again further injured his soul.

“Do I need to escape?” asked Lin Feng indifferently. Duan Wu Dao’s sealed doors had disappeared.

“You used all your pure Qi? Now, let’s see how you want to continue the battle...” said Duan Wu Dao coldly. Lin Feng smiled and said, “You cannot use your sealed doors indefinitely, they are defeated for the remainder of this battle. Your spirit is injured... How can you keep battling?”

Lin Feng’s strength of the Herukas then started rotating in his body, several black lights appeared and made the entire atmosphere turn dark. Lin Feng was surrounded by a dark world.

Lin Feng had used these evil powers against Xue Sha before and now he was using them against Duan Wu Dao.

Duan Wu Dao had asked Lin Feng how he intended to keep battling and Lin Feng responded.

Duan Wu Dao looked at the evil body, the crowd was unable to predict the result of the battle. Who would be the final winner of the Great Competition of Xue Yu?

“You will see.” said Duan Wu Dao. He then raised his head, looking as proud and arrogant as before.

He stretched both his hands and a Qi started rolling in them. Immediately after, several doors appeared.

“Real geniuses can make their spirit fuse with their body. Even without making my spirit appear I can seal people’s bodies. I will teach you what a real genius is.”

The crowd listened to Duan Wu Dao and watched his sealed doors. Their hearts were pounding at full speed... An authentic genius? An authentic genius could use the strength of his spirit without making it appear? They understood what it meant but couldn’t understand how to do it.

Duan Wu Dao threw himself at Lin Feng, and appeared in front of him.

The sealed doors moved towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng condensed his terrifying evil energy in his fist assaulted the doors. However, one of the doors immediately penetrated into Lin Feng’s body. The crowd was stunned, maybe that that door wouldn’t be powerful enough to seal his body!

“Seal!” shouted Duan Wu Dao furiously. An incredible amount of doors were moving towards Lin Feng and surrounding his demon body!

“Warlord punches!” Duan Wu Dao released some more terrifying warlord Qi and jumped towards Lin Feng. Explosions sounded and Lin Feng seemed like he couldn’t take much more.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. A terrifying evil punch emerged from his body and collided with Duan Wu Dao. At the same time an Asura body appeared.

“Break!” Duan Wu Dao’s attack then cut through Asura like a knife through butter. The Asura immediately disappeared. The evil light disappeared and Lin Feng was projected backward a few dozens steps when the last punch crashed onto Lin Feng’s body. He looked a bit stunned.

Duan Wu Dao didn’t chase him, his soul was shaking. His illusionary sealed doors were easy to use... Duan Wu Dao had used lots of strength, and now he had to win.

Lin Feng would lose. Duan Wu Dao had to be the strongest cultivator at the competition, he was the most dazzling cultivator at the competition. Nobody else...

The demon body was broken. Lin Feng knew perfectly well that Duan Wu Dao had used all his strength a moment before to finish him. He hadn’t controlled himself. His soul had been badly hurt. Terrifying sealed doors energy had moved into his Lin Feng’s body.

“Now, you have used all your pure Qi and your demon body is broken. Your body sealed, how can you fight???” shouted Duan Wu Dao furiously. He was standing there like a hero For the crowd, it seemed like Duan Wu Dao was already the final winner...!

Chapter 679: The Climax

“No pure Qi, broken demon body, body sealed?” Lin Feng was looking at Duan Wu Dao with a smile forming from the corner of his mouth. “Are you sure that you sealed my body?”

Duan Wu Dao looked at Lin Feng, smiled and said, “No need to fight like that... I saw the doors seal your body. You’ll have to find a solution to break the sealed doors inside of your body.”

“Is that so? You are so smart!” said Lin Feng. Then a terrifying spirit energy emerged in the air.

“Break!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. In a flash, a terrifying sealed doors Qi emerged out of Lin Feng’s body and disappeared in the air. Lin Feng had managed to break the doors.

“Huh?” Duan Wu Dao’s smile suddenly froze. The seals had been broken?

Lin Feng had managed to expel all the sealed doors and break them.

“Now, what do you have to say?” asked Lin Feng indifferently. Duan Wu Dao was stupefied, he looked hideous. Lin Feng had surprisingly managed to break the sealed doors... How had he done that?

The crowd was astonished too. They had thought that the sealed

doors had already sealed his body. There was no suspense anymore. Lin Feng's voice was still filled with self-confidence now that he had broken the seals.

“So what? How can you still fight me?” said Duan Wu Dao narrowing his eyes. He released some more warlord Qi. How did Lin Feng intend to keep battling?

“You have already used your spirit but you have to remember that I haven't used mine!” said Lin Feng indifferently. Then, a terrifying roaring sound spread in the air and next to Lin Feng appeared a terrifying purple light which launched at Duan Wu Dao.

At the same time, eight dragon heads appeared from Lin Feng's back and dashed to the skies. There were eight dragon heads but only one body. Those heads were chanting the song of the dragons and looking at the sky as if they had wanted to swallow it.

“Eight heads....” Yue Qing Shan was stupefied. He was stared at Lin Feng's celestial fangs spirit, it already possessed eight heads. One more head and it would have nine dragon heads... The final form of the dragon... At that moment, the dragon heads didn't look like a spirit anymore, they looked like a real beast.

“Eight heads!” The crowd was astonished. Not many people had seen Lin Feng's spirit and were just discovering it. He possessed a terrifying dragon.

Who was going to win that battle...?

Lin Feng was still standing there, his purple spirit had surrounded Duan Wu Dao's body. Duan Wu Dao wasn't as strong anymore. He was attacking the purple spirit unceasingly but it was constantly reappearing again. He was unable to completely destroy the purple spirit.

Duan Wu Dao froze when saw the eight dragon heads. Lin Feng, with the strength of the eighth Xuan Qi layer, could also release such a monstrously powerful spirit. Maybe that his soul was stronger than the eighth Xuan Qi layer...

"Indeed, it is the power of his soul..." Duan Wu Dao was astonished. He looked like he had suddenly understood something. Lin Feng had managed to expel the sealed doors out of his body because he had used his soul to attack it. That was the only explanation. The sealed doors hadn't actually been able to seal Lin Feng's body.

"Roaaarrr!" The dragon roared and the eight heads moved towards Duan Wu Dao. They were all opening their gigantic mouth and showing their fangs. They wanted to swallow Duan Wu Dao.

Duan Wu Dao took out a pill and swallowed it. His strength came back to him and he returned to normal. A terrifying warlord energy emerged in the air and Duan Wu Dao shouted furiously, "Warlord punch!"

"Pill?" Lin Feng smiled coldly and also took out a pure healing pill. In a flash, his pure Qi came back to normal.

A metallic sound spread in the air and his bloodthirsty sword appeared again. Lin Feng was firmly holding it as he slowly started walking towards Duan Wu Dao.

The sword energy was dashing to the skies and on the ground appeared several fissures and crevices. Lin Feng's bloodthirsty sword was leaving some terrifying marks on the fighting stage.

There was only sword Qi around Lin Feng.

Duan Wu Dao suddenly sensed that terrifying sword Qi while his warlord punches were occupied with dragon and its eight heads. He was contend with them both. A terrifying sword intent crashed onto his body and it seemed like he was going to be swallowed.

The sword Qi was getting stronger and stronger, it was also getting colder and colder.

“ARGGGGGHHHH.....” Duan Wu Dao shouted furiously. He released a warlord energy which blotted out the sky and covered up the earth. The dragon was projected backwards, the purple snake was were obliterated into pieces.

But Lin Feng was still slowly walking forwards, his bloodthirsty sword in hand.

Duan Wu Dao turned and lowered his head. He looked at Lin Feng in a calm way, Duan Wu Dao didn't want to give up, but....

“I give up.” Duan Wu Dao knew that he had lost the battle... He didn't have a chance to win anymore.

That terrifying sword energy slowly disappeared. Lin Feng looked at Duan Wu Dao just as calm as before.

“A real... Genius?” Lin Feng put his sword away and said those few words to Duan Wu Dao. Duan Wu Dao was astonished, he had just told Lin Feng that he would show him what a real genius was.

Duan Wu Dao looked at the calm Lin Feng, he was serene and so young. Lin Feng looked outstanding but he hadn't reached maturity yet. Lin Feng, had been strong enough to make it so far though....

Lin Feng was the winner of the Great Competition of Xue Yue!

“You didn't disappoint me.” said Jun Mo Xi smiling warmly and friendly. Lin Feng had proved to Jun Mo Xi that he had made the right decision. Lin Feng had really managed to do it... This time, he had finished first. Relying on some incredible skills and techniques, he had won. He had made it so far, step by step, he had risen up to the top.

Tang You You was also smiling resplendently, it was like a dream. She remember the first time she had met Lin Feng at the restaurant. He had downed all the expensive liquor as if he hadn't care at all. Now, he was the most outstanding disciple at the competition and was respected by millions of people.

“No bad.” thought Qing Meng Xin with a sexy smile forming from the corner of her mouth. She looked a bit surprised.

Yun Fei Yang took out a bottle and drank some Hot Unit, how comfortable!

Xiao Ya, Han Man and Po Jun all looked proud of their friend. They were clenching their fists, they had never thought that Lin Feng would be able to make it that far.

Of course, many others were furious. Yue Qing Shan had mixed feelings, he could only sigh.

Yu Liu Shui, Teng Wu Yao, the people of the Yu Clan and of the Wan Shou Sect, Xue Sha, Ling Xiao, and several others were looking at that proud man and with regret. They were furious.

They had never thought that Lin Feng would come out on top.

The crowd was astonished but then calmed down. Nobody said anything. They were only looking at that proud looking young man with new eyes. Lin Feng had no idea of all those things happening around him, he raised his head and looked at Xue Wu Chang. Lin Feng was smiling resplendently and magnificently. He looked like a little sunshine.

He had managed to finish the Great Competition of Xue Yu and had won! He was first!

Chapter 680: Unexpected Disturbance

Xue Wu Chang was speechless when he saw Lin Feng's smile. Such a beautiful smile, Lin Feng had reached the top of the competition and won. He looked happy, fresh, proud. Such a resplendent smile made him look as if he had forgotten all the dust and dirt that existed in that filthy world.

Xue Wu Chang smiled too, he hadn't smiled that way for so many years. He seemed so relaxed. Sometimes, small things were enough to make people smile.

"Lin Feng, congratulations." said Xue Wu Chang respectfully. He really respected that young man in front of him. Sometimes that young man looked so arrogant but other times he was so pure and innocent.

Xue Wu Chang hadn't respected someone like for a very long time. There were many geniuses in Shen Gong but he had never seen someone like Lin Feng. A young man that he liked from the bottom of his heart. He hope that Lin Feng would continue progress on the path of cultivation and become a glorious person.

"Thank you." said Lin Feng with the same resplendent smile. He was very grateful to Xue Wu Chang. Lin Feng could easily distinguish a fake and a real smile, he knew that Xue Wu Chang really meant it.

"Alright. The Great Competition of Xue Yu is now over. No matter your ranking, get ready to follow me to Shen Gong." said

Xue Wu Chang glancing at the entire crowd. Everybody was a bit surprised, the Great Competition of Xue Yu was finished. So many had come and it seemed like so many great battles had happened. The two last battles would remain with them forever. They couldn't believe that it was over. They didn't want the competition to end.

Now, the competition was over and the best cultivators had to be rewarded.

“I wonder what award Lin Feng will get.” thought the crowd... Lin Feng had finished first so he was probably going to get an incredible reward which would help him increase his cultivation level... If he became stronger, he would become terrifying.

With Lin Feng's strength, only cultivators of the Tian Qi layer could defeat him now.

Di Ling was already monstrously powerful and possessed the firmament blood. He could control firmament intent and the firmament itself. He had broken through to the very top of the ninth Xuan Qi layer but had been defeated by Lin Feng.

Duan Wu Dao had also broken through to the ninth Xuan Qi layer, and the very peak of the Xuan Qi layer. With his warlord Qi, sealed doors intent, and his sealed doors he could defeat most people of the Xuan Qi layer. Those who could defeat him were extremely rare and terrifying.

However, Lin Feng had managed to defeat Duan Wu Dao. Lin

Feng was almost invincible amongst people of the Xuan Qi layer. If he became a little bit stronger, he really would have no enemy at the Xuan Qi layer.

Apart from those people, there were also empires.

The four empires were extremely influential. Young people who managed to rank high at the Great Competition of Xue Yu would bring incredible advantages to the empires they came from. The Dragon Mountain Empire had finished first, second and fourth... That kind of success was incredible. The country of Xue Yue had been particularly successful, the first and second finalists were from there. What kind of advantages would that bring to the country?

Now, the rewards were about to be distributed.

The candidates were eager to discover their prizes. Even if they hadn't finished at the top of the rankings, they were still eager to see what they would get. Having been able to participate at the Great Competition of Xue Yu was already a great honor. Shen Gong wouldn't treat them unfairly. Shen Gong would act equitably.

Duan Wu Dao, Di Ling and some few others were not happy at all. They had come to finish first but in the end the most dazzling cultivator was Lin Feng.

“Get ready, we're leaving!” said Xue Wu Chang with a charming smile. Everybody rose up in the air and prepared to leave with him.

But at that moment, a terrifying energy invaded the atmosphere. The kind of energy that made people's hearts start pounding violently.

In the air, there were a few silhouettes who intercepted Xue Wu Chang. They looked absolutely ordinary, to the extent that they didn't look surprising at all. But the Qi they were emitting astonished people, it was a terrifying Qi made them suffocate. People would have to submit themselves to power if they were attacked.

“Tian Qi layer!” People's hearts were pounding violently. Those people were cultivators of the Tian Qi layer!

“Hehehe.” A few of them laughed, they were surrounding Xue Wu Chang and the crowd. Those people all had twinkling eyes, the crowd was terrified.

“Huh?” The geniuses of the competition didn't know what was going on? Why were so many incredibly strong cultivators appearing out of nowhere? All of them were astonishingly strong. It was extremely rare to see such people. It was even rarer see so many cultivators of the Tian Qi layer together.

“More than a dozen cultivators of the Tian Qi layer...” thought the crowd. Their hearts were palpitating violently. What was happening?

Could it be that more incredible battles were to come?

Everybody pulled a long face, even Xue Wu Chang. Some of those people were hiding their cultivation levels. They were preventing the crowd from leaving. Xue Wu Chang looked cold as if he had already thought about something.

“You’re not from Xue Yu, what do you want and where do you come from?” asked Xue Wu Chang. His heartbeat had also accelerated. He was wondering if Shen Gong had heard about them or if today was going to be an unlucky day.

“Hehe, Shen Gong is not from Xue Yu either. How come you’re bluffing?” said one of them mockingly. The crowd was confused, Shen Gong didn’t belong to Xue Yu?

What did that mean?

“Shen Gong has been established in Xue Yu for several hundreds of years. Every ten years, Shen Gong organizes the Great Competition of Xue Yu and enables the strongest young cultivators to become stronger. Why do you accuse us here of bluffing people?” shouted Xue Wu Chang furiously. He was enraged. It was happening exactly as he feared, those people came to cause Shen Gong trouble.

“Since the beginning of times, you’ve been eliminating the bad ones and making the strong ones stronger. They are the geniuses of Xue Yu, Shen Gong indeed organizes a gathering of geniuses and helps become much stronger. But all of this only giving face, who cannot help geniuses become stronger? You’re not the only ones who can do it... In exchange for what you give them, can you guarantee that you ask for nothing in return?” said one of them

mockingly. Xue Wu Chang's mouth twitched, he looked even angrier.

The competition was about to finish, he had never thought that these people would come from so far away to ruin everything and tarnish the image of Shen Gong.

“Shen Gong asks them for their opinion, they have the choice. Nobody forces them to do anything.” said Xue Wu Chang denying what that person was saying. However, the crowd was still surprised. Shen Gong wanted the young geniuses to do something for them, he was denying that part.

Everybody looked at the beautiful women from Shen Gong. The banquet was held to seduce and tempt them.

There were more things going on behind the curtains of the Great Competition of Xue Yu it seemed.

“Since you don't force them and give them a choice, why don't you give them the choice now and let them choose. Once they are in Shen Gong, what choice do they have? Would they be strong enough to choose once they are trapped in Shen Gong?” said someone else. They weren't allowing anyone to leave.

The geniuses of the competition were getting angry. It seemed like going to Shen Gong was tricking them into something.

Chapter 681: Five Terrifying Spheres of Influence

“You have travelled from so far away to Mi Cheng, you must be exhausted. However, it seems like you have nothing to do with Shen Gong.” said a loud voice in the distance. The crowd saw a group of strong cultivators in the distance. The leader of Shen Gong North had come personally and was pressuring all those Tian Qi layer cultivators.

When Xue Wu Chang saw the leader of Shen Gong North, he felt a bit relieved. Luckily, they had come. Alone, he wouldn't have been able to deal with those people of the Tian Qi layer. They were all monstrously skilled and strong cultivators. If things went down, he wouldn't have been able to save the situation.

He perfectly understood that if the enemies hadn't attacked, it was because Shen Gong was a powerful sphere of influence. They had come from so far but didn't dare act recklessly.

“The Leader of Shen Gong North, Bei Ming is here.” the cultivators of the Tian Qi layer recognized who he was and immediately named him. They also knew that Shen Gong was divided into four different parts and that the Leader of Shen Gong North was Bei Ming.

“You are all extremely strong cultivators with your own territories, why come bother Shen Gong?” asked Bei Ming coldly, quickly glancing at the crowd. He was a bit upset, it seemed like so many strong cultivators had come to Mi Cheng to interrupt the end of the Great Competition of Xue Yu.

“We don’t need to use obscure messages to talk. We came here because our goal is the same as Bei Ming. There are many geniuses, Shen Gong wants to steal them and we don’t quite agree with it.”

At that moment, someone moved their hands and an imperial golden dragon robe appeared. In a flash, the Qi of the atmosphere drastically changed. It seemed frightening.

“The Purple-Golden Dragon King of the East Sea and three other empires. The others, you must clearly understand their social status. I, Bei Ming don’t need to tell you because you can easily guess.” said Bei Ming when he saw that golden and purple dragon robe... The strong cultivators of the East Sea had arrived. Besides, the Dragon King had arrived too. The Dragon King in his golden and purple robe had come personally.

The others didn’t try to hide themselves anymore, the clothes they were wearing and the golden hats they had on their heads were becoming obviously powerful. The Qi they were emitting was extremely strong.

Those cultivators of the Tian Qi layer weren’t ordinary cultivators of the Tian Qi layer at all.

Apart from Shen Gong there were four other spheres of influence. Their power of influence had so many cultivators of the Tian Qi layer. They were terrifying and they had all come to Xue Yu, how terrifying... They could annihilate an entire empire.

Lin Feng was remained staring at those people. Apart from the Dragon King wearing the purple and golden clothes and his people, there were other people with terrifying ancient swords in their back. Their sword Qi was dashing to the skies. Those people were infinitely stronger than Ling Xiao and were all sword cultivators.

There was another group of people. Their leader had a warlord Qi, just like Duan Wu Dao. They were wearing warlord helmets and their Qi was much stronger than that of Duan Wu Dao.

The last sphere of influence was just as terrifying. Their Qi was similar to that of Lin Feng's evil energies. They were terrifying, a single glance at them sufficed to scare away anybody else.

“The East Sea Dragon Palace, the Nine Cloud Swords Sect, the Jade Heaven Imperial Family, and the Necropolis Sect. Alright, very good. A tiny little region like Xue Yu attracted so many strong cultivators. I, Bei Ming should feel honored.” said Bei Ming, staring back at those people. He had been surprised when he saw the purple-golden Dragon King, and then he had seen the people of Nine Cloud Swords, and the people of the Jade Heaven Imperial Family and the people of the Necropolis Sect. Those four powers of influence were as strong as Shen Gong, and surprisingly had all gathered in Xue Yu.

It seemed like Shen Gong hadn't expected such a turnout.

“So many strong cultivators... They cannot belong to Shen Gong only. Since we are here, let them choose by themselves.” said the purple-golden Dragon King indifferently.

At that moment, people's hearts were pounding. They had thought that the Great Competition of Xue Yu had come to an end and that things would get calm down once more. They had never thought that these incredible people would come. In front of them were so many terrifying cultivators.

They were all cultivators of the Tian Qi layer. There were even cultivators of the Tian Qi layer who had come just to assist to the show.

Cultivators of the Tian Qi layer could easily annihilate Xue Yu. They were the strongest cultivator and were extremely rare. But at that moment, there was more than a dozen of them. Including some people who had come just for fun, how astonishing!

When they heard Bei Ming, they understood that the East Sea Dragon Palace, the Nine Cloud Swords Sect, the Jade Heaven Imperial Family and the Necropolis Sect were all extremely strong and powerful spheres of influence. They weren't any weaker than Shen Gong.

Shen Gong alone was enough to control and influence the entire region of Xue Yu. They were like the kings of Xue Yu. But now, at that moment, four other spheres of influence as strong as Shen Gong had appeared.

"What do you mean? What choice?" asked Bei Ming to the Dragon King in purple and golden clothes. The four other powers of influence gathered, it seemed difficult for Shen Gong not to

share with them now...

“We, the five spheres of influence, can declare a few words and let them choose.” replied the Dragon King. Immediately after, he looked at the three others and asked, “What do you think?”

“I agree.” said someone from the Nine Cloud Swords Sect.

“I agree too.” said the Jade Heaven Imperial Family and the Necropolis Sect while nodding.

“Who starts?” asked Ming Bei.

“Shen Gong will. You should speak for Shen Gong, Ming Bei.” said the Dragon King.

Shen Gong looked glum but turned to the crowd and said slowly, “Shen Gong has organized the Great Competition of Xue Yu. We’ve been helping you improve your cultivation level and I think that you were all very satisfied with that... You are all geniuses from Xue Yu, Shen Gong of course wants you to join us, we always want more geniuses... Of course, if you don’t want to join Shen Gong, we won’t force you... I just hope that you can help Shen Gong with one thing. They have also come for that one thing so I hope that you will consider the question carefully.” said Ming Bei clearly. He didn’t sound menacing or aggressive at all. He hoped that even more geniuses would join Shen Gong.

“Bei Ming is done talking right? Let me say something then.” said

the Dragon King while looking at Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, I am from the East Sea Dragon Palace, overlord of the East Sea Empire. We are an empire of average quality, the four empires of Xue Yu are of lower quality. You can imagine what kind of people and territories we have in our control.” said the Dragon King. Everybody clearly understood what he meant. Besides, the four empires of Xue Yu were of lower quality...

Empire of lower quality differed a lot from empires of average quality. The countries under the jurisdictions of lower quality also differed a lot from the countries under the jurisdictions of empires of average quality. They differed a lot!

“At the East Sea Dragon Palace, we have a dragon spirit and our skills and techniques also have to do with dragons. You Lin Feng, have a Nine Dragons Celestial Fangs spirit. If you join our palace you will become extremely strong, a warlord. And you will have access to incredible Tian level skills, you will be able to choose from any of them.” said the Dragon King as if he had prepared everything, including his speech, to tempt Lin Feng. Bei Ming looked upset, what he had said wasn't enough to tempt the geniuses, including Lin Feng.

“Simply put Lin Feng, you can join our Dragon Palace. We will welcome you warmly, the Dragon King and even the patriarch of palace will welcome you and teach you many things. They will help you consolidate your cultivation, imagine the incredible advantages? You should consider the question carefully.”

Chapter 682: Lin Feng's choice

The crowd was jealous when they heard the Dragon King. What incredible advantages... The East Sea Dragon Palace was an overlord in the East Sea Empire which was an empire of medium quality. They only wanted Lin Feng to join... They had Tian level skills and would allow Lin Feng to choose... Besides, those skills had to do with Lin Feng's dragon spirit... If he accepted, he would become infinitely stronger.

Apart from that, he would have the chance at having the highest leaders of the palace as his teachers... With such arguments, who could refuse?

“Dragon King, didn't you exceed the word limit we have agreed on? It was a bit too long!” said Bei Ming pulling a long face. They had agreed on a few words and he had delivered an entire speech. How detestable!

“Wait.” said the Dragon Empire while smiling. Immediately, he looked at other people and said, “The others, if you want to join the East Sea Dragon Palace you are welcome. You will also be able to share a part of the fun with us. After that, if you even come back to this trivial and futile place, you will be regarded as incredible cultivators.” said the Dragon King. Now his speech was finished.

“Let me talk now.” said the leader of the Nine Cloud Swords Sect. He then looked at Lin Feng and said, “You have broken through to the very top of the eighth Xuan Qi layer, your sword intent is level five. I was personally dumbstruck by your incredible sword skills. I don't need to tell you how many extremely strong sword

cultivators we have. To make it short, we are as strong as the East Sea Dragon Palace but we are sword cultivators. If you want to join our sect, you will be able to quickly understand the next levels of sword intent and then even understand the abstruse significance. You would be able to easily destroy the Nine Cloud, can you imagine the benefits for you?”

Then, he looked at Ling Xiao and said, “The same for you, we would definitely welcome you if you wanted to join our sect. You would become a monstrously strong sword cultivator because we are all sword cultivators.”

“There’s you as well, we would welcome you too so just think about it.” In the end, he looked at the young man with the sword. There were only three sword cultivators there and they really hoped that they would be able to get them. For sword cultivators, joining the Nine Cloud Swords Sect was an incredible opportunity.

Then the leader of the Jade Heaven Imperial Family, with his imperial Qi, looked at Duan Wu Dao and Jun Mo Xi.

“Duan Wu Dao and Jun Mo Xi, you both have the blood of the monarchs. One is the warlord Qi and the other is the vital Qi of righteousness. For the Jade Heaven Imperial Family, people like you are incredible. We would immediately welcome you. Di Ling, since you don’t have a heavenly warlord Qi but a firmament blood, we would also allow you to become a warlord.” said an elegant-looking man with a helmet. He was releasing an imperial Qi. He was only interested certain people: Duan Wu Dao, Jun Mo Xi and Di Ling.

In the end, there was only the Necropolis Sect which hadn't spoken. The leader was releasing a terrifying evil energy. He looked at Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, you have a terrifying evil Qi and you have some terrifying evil skills. Therefore, all of them want you. If you want to develop your evil energies we can help you, everybody in the world would be scared to hear your name. Duan Wu Dao, Di Ling, Jun Mo Xi, Xue Sha, we would also welcome you.”

Apart from Shen Gong, there were four other spheres of influence and they all wanted Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had the Nine Dragons Celestial Fangs spirit, practiced sword cultivation, and also had the heruka skills. Therefore, three sects wanted to have him. Lin Feng drew everybody's attention. They all hoped that Lin Feng would join them. Duan Wu Dao, Di Ling, Jun Mo Xi and some others also drew their attention.

The rankings of the Great Competition of Xue Yu wasn't random, it really proved how strong those geniuses were. Indeed, there was no doubt, natural abilities and strength were different things but were also obvious.

Then, all the people from the five spheres of influence were looking at the geniuses and waiting for them to choose.

Most people were looking at their teachers and parents, especially those who already had a teacher...and were already members of a sect. Choosing another sphere of influence would

spell betrayal...

“Don’t worry. Shen Gong will not make it difficult for your sects.” said Bei Ming as if he had understood what people were thinking.

“The East Sea Dragon Palace is not a sect anyway! We are just a sphere of influence. Joining the East Sea Dragon Palace doesn’t mean that you’re not a member of your initial sect anymore. You could, as before, say that you’re a member of your initial sect and an influential member of another sphere of influence.” said the Dragon King in purple and golden clothes. The East Sea Dragon Palace was an overlord in the East Sea Empire, there were many sects under their control!

“Ling Xiao, join the Nine Cloud Swords Sect, go ahead.” said a voice in the at that moment. It was Qi Qing Jian Ling Xiao’s teacher...

“It is a sword sect, they practice sword cultivation. Extremely strong cultivators are numerous and they are much stronger than me. If you join the Nine Cloud Swords Sect you will still be able to say that you are my student but that you belong to the Nine Cloud Swords Sect. I will not blame you and never consider that you betrayed your sect.” said Ling Xiao’s teacher. Ling Xiao had lost an arm, he hoped that Ling Xiao wouldn’t give up and would continue to not lose his determination and willpower on the path of cultivation. Joining the Nine Cloud Swords Sect would enable him to reach the clouds.

“Teacher...” said Ling Xiao. He looked touched and moved but he

understood what his teacher meant.

“Listen to me.”

“Roger, teacher.” said Ling Xiao nodding. He then looked at the strong cultivator of the Nine Cloud Swords Sect and said, “I, Ling Xiao, accept to join your sect.”

“Alright, very good. We welcome you.” said the leader nodding. Even though Ling Xiao had lost an arm, it didn’t mean that he had become a piece of trash. Besides, he had already reached such a high level, he had broken through to the eighth Xuan Qi layer and his sword intent was level three. Those things weren’t going to disappear.

“So do I.” said the other sword cultivator with the silver sword. A sword sect was extremely attractive, how could a sword cultivator refuse such an offer...?

“The Nine Cloud Swords Sect welcomes you as well.” They then all turned to Lin Feng hoping that he would accept to join them. With his level five sword intent he would probably become the strongest cultivator of the Nine Cloud Swords Sect. Unfortunately, Lin Feng wasn’t saying anything and remained silent.

“What are you offering us?” asked Duan Wu Dao indifferently.

“I also want to know.” said Di Ling nodding. They wouldn’t join a sphere of influence that easily, they needed to know more.

“We will let you enter some mysterious cultivation dimensions which will make you become extremely strong cultivators, you will profit from a myriad of advantages. That is one of our goals in Xue Yu. I hope that you will join Shen Gong.” said Bei Ming. The crowd already knew a little bit more, it seemed like the geniuses would be able to join some mysterious and mystical cultivation dimensions if they joined Shen Gong.

“Bei Ming is right. If you join the East Sea Dragon Palace, it will be the same but much better. Of course, if you’re not interested in those mystical dimensions and mysteries, we will not force you but we will welcome you anyway” said the Dragon King in purple and golden clothes. The crowd just nodded.

“I need time to think about it.” said Duan Wu Dao.

“So do I.” said Di Ling and the others and some others. They had the choice, they needed to consider everything carefully. That choice could change their lives.

“What about you Lin Feng?” asked the Dragon King. Lin Feng was the one everybody wanted the most.

They all hoped that Lin Feng would join them.

“I will not join any of you.” said Lin Feng, leaving everybody in disbelief. Lin Feng wasn’t interested in any of them and was refusing all their offers, no matter how amazing the offers sounded.

“About the mysterious and mystical things you were talking about, I need to think for a while.” said Lin Feng to Bei Ming nodding. Bei Ming was stupefied but then smiled.

Lin Feng was saying that he needed to think about whether he wanted to join the mystical and mysterious cultivation dimensions and areas. What that meant was that the only sphere of influence he was interested in joining was Shen Gong!

Chapter 683: Everybody's Choice

The people of the East Sea Dragon Palace, the Nine Cloud Swords Sect and the Necropolis Sect were stupefied. Lin Feng had refused their offers immediately. He was just interested in the the mysterious and mystical things Shen Gong had to offer.

“You don’t need to think, you can’t miss such an opportunity. You will regret it in the future otherwise.” said the Dragon King.

But Lin Feng shook his head and said, “Thank you all for your offers but I have already made a decision, please forgive me.”

Since it was his own choice, Lin Feng wouldn’t regret.

This time, he had refused incredible dragon skills and techniques. He had missed the opportunity to be trained as an incredible sword cultivator, but he wasn’t going to regret. In his head he was determined and was going to stick to his initial principles.

He didn’t like the feeling of having no freedom. He didn’t want to submit to anyone so he wasn’t going to join any sphere of influence. Besides, Shen Gong had organized the Great Competition of Xue Yu. Without Shen Gong, he wouldn’t have benefitted from so many great things, he wouldn’t have stood at the top of the fighting stage of the competition. Without Shen Gong, he would still have the strength of the fifth Xuan Qi layer. Di Ling, Xue Sha and Duan Wu Dao would also have still been much stronger than him. His life might have have been in danger too.

Lin Feng didn't want to face Shen Gong later on because they had helped him so much already. He didn't feel like offending people who helped him.

“Alright, since it's that way, I will not insist. What about the others? Who wants to join the East Sea Dragon Palace, I welcome everybody. Those who ranked amongst the five first will benefit from incredible advantages. For example Tian level skills and techniques. The others will also benefit from good skills and techniques.”

The Dragon King rolled up his sleeves as if Lin Feng hadn't given him face.

Many people were stupefied. Tian level skills and techniques were terrifying, obtaining such skills were extremely difficult. How attractive! That kind of temptation made so many people think about it twice, everybody was interested in such magical powers. They were extremely rare and joining the East Sea Dragon Palace would enable them to obtain great magical powers.

At that moment, the Dragon King was offering them such things.

“Di Ling.” said Di Ling's father suddenly.

Di Ling turned around and looked at his father hovering in the air.

“Di Ling, you have the firmament blood which is brutal and violent. The East Sea Dragon Palace is the best sphere of influence for you to join.” said Di Ling’s father, Di Shi Tian.

Di Ling remained silent for a moment and then looked back at the Dragon King in purple and golden clothes and said, “I accept your offer.”

“Alright, we will go back together and you will obtain some Tian level skills that you can choose personally from.” said the Dragon King smiling. He then glanced at Lin Feng. Even though Di Ling wasn’t as gifted as Lin Feng, he was also monstrously powerful. Such a genius joining the Dragon Palace was a great opportunity.

Di Ling had broken through to the very top of the Xuan Qi layer and was about to break through to the Tian Qi layer. Joining such a great power of influence wouldn’t be a waste. Besides, with Di Ling’s natural abilities, ordinary cultivators of the Tian Qi layer wouldn’t be a threat to him.

“I also accept.” said some other people. The Dragon King smiled when he heard them and said, “Very good, we welcome everyone.”

The people from the other three spheres of influence were standing there calmly, they were not like the East Sea Dragon Palace. Apart from a few people, they didn’t need the others.

The Jade Heaven Imperial Family was only interested in warlords, monarchs, emperors and so on.

The Necropolis Sect was only interested in those with an evil energy. Finding geniuses was extremely difficult for them. The best one for them would be Lin Feng.

“Duan Wu Dao, Jun Mo Xi, the Jade Heaven Imperial Family is perfect for you, much better than the East Sea Dragon Palace.” said someone from the Jade Heaven Imperial Family again while looking at Duan Wu Dao and Jun Mo Xi. Those two people belonged to the imperial families of Xue Yue and Dragon Mountain, they both had imperial blood. They had the Qi of monarchs and emperors and they had ranked second and fourth at the Great Competition of Xue Yu.

Duan Wu Dao’s eyes were twinkling. Lin Feng had already made a decision. Di Ling was going to join the East Sea Dragon Palace where he would be able to obtain some Tian level skills and techniques. If he didn’t join a sphere of influence, Lin Feng might become even stronger than him. But, he didn’t worry about Di Ling because he needed external help to break through to the Tian Qi layer and become stronger.

“I have one requirement, the Jade Heaven Imperial Family cannot imprison me. I am as before, Duan Wu Dao.” said Duan Wu Dao, everybody was surprised. Being a genius allowed him to choose. Ordinary people had no choice and couldn’t have requirements. But Duan Wu Dao was a genius and could require things from people, even from the Jade Heaven Imperial Family.

“Welcome.” said the strong cultivation while smiling. He then turned to Jun Mo Xi and asked, “What about you?”

“Me?” said Jun Mo Xi smiling. He then shook his head and said, “I’m like Lin Feng. I am not used to having limits and submitting myself, please forgive me.”

The strong cultivator of the Jade Heaven Imperial Family nodded, he wasn’t going to beg him. It was Jun Mo Xi’s own decision.

The others also gradually chose what they wanted. Amongst the eight best cultivators, Lin Feng wasn’t going to join any sphere of influence but he might cooperate with Shen Gong. The second, Duan Wu Dao was going to join the Jade Heaven Imperial Family. The third one, Di Ling was going to join East Sea Dragon Palace... The fourth one, Jun Mo Xi, the sixth one Tang You You and the eighth one Yun Fei Yang all followed Lin Feng. The fifth one, Xue Sha didn’t choose anything either. The Tian Sha Sect was already a sphere of influence and the seventh one Ling Xiao chose to join the Nine Cloud Swords Sect.

The others all chose as well but nobody attached importance to them. The most important people were the first eight winners.

“Now, shouldn’t you leave Xue Yu?” asked Bei Ming coldly glancing at the people from the four spheres of influence. This time, the Great Competition of Xue Yu had been the arena of a great deal of events. Some people had become extremely strong thanks to Shen Gong but now they were leaving because the four other spheres of influence had appeared. Bei Ming wasn’t happy at all.

“Hehe, maybe we will see each other again soon.” said the

Dragon King in purple and golden clothes. Then he waved and said, “Those who accepted to join the East Sea Dragon Palace, come with me.”

When he finished talking, he rose up in the air and the others followed him. Just like them, the others also left Xue Yu.

They hadn’t come for nothing this time. Not only had they obtained some geniuses but they had also understood the purpose of the Great Competition of Xue Yu. Maybe those people would become their enemies. But ultimately, some geniuses had become their allies.

Bei Ming looked at all those people leaving and then glanced at those had stayed. It made him feel better to see Lin Feng and the few others who had stayed.

“I will do my best to honor your decision, thank you.” said Bei Ming to those who had stayed. “Now let’s go, you will all obtain some treasures.”

“Wait wait.” said Lin Feng suddenly. Bei Ming suddenly felt nervous, was Lin Feng going to change his mind? He was terrified by the idea of Lin Feng joining another sphere of influence, it would be horrible for Shen Gong.

“Mister, I have some friends here with me. Is it a problem if they join?” asked Lin Feng. The Great Competition of Xue Yu was over, Han Man, Xiao Ya and Po Jun couldn’t stay there alone because Lin Feng would worry about them.

Bei Ming couldn't refuse Lin Feng's requirement. A few more people could following them shouldn't be a problem!

Chapter 684: The General Overview of the Continent

A group of people were flying over the white clouds and once again. They had soon arrived in Shen Gong, the mysterious place.

Amongst those people, were some who were going there for the first time in their life. Shen Gong was an incredible place. Yue Tian Ming was there and it was his first time.

However, Yue Tian Ming wasn't as arrogant as he used to be. He was just following the crowd and looking lonely. He was keeping some distance with the group of people in front of him. All of those who were in front of him were incredible cultivators, geniuses. Yue Tian Ming was the second high-official of Xue Yue. In the past, apart from Duan Wu Dao, he despised everybody else. However, during the Great Competition of Xue Yu, he was an insect and Duan Wu Dao was still one of the greatest geniuses.

The scariest part was that Yue Tian Ming had never thought that his aunt, who had been expelled from the Yue Clan would have a son. His real cousin had won the Great Competition of Xue Yu! He could only admire him and look up at him from now on... He wasn't jealous anymore. When Lin Feng had defeated him before, he had felt hatred and pain. But now he was calm and serene because Lin Feng helped him realize that they all in all didn't belong to the same world.

Yue Qing Shan, Lin Feng's grandfather, couldn't win against Lin Feng anymore.

The Leader of Shen Gong North, was looking at Lin Feng with a smile. Even if Shen Gong was a monstrous sphere of influence, for Bei Ming to have Lin Fen following them was incredible.

Even though he hadn't participated at the Great Competition of Xue Yu, he knew everything that had happened had been incredible. Lin Feng was a real genius! In a thousand years there might be someone to surpass him. They couldn't afford despising Lin Feng at this point.

The people of Shen Gong, just like Bei Ming, had to pay attention to such dangers and anticipate. Some young people could be a threat for them in the future, so they had to make friends with them early on, before it was too late.

A short moment after, everybody entered Shen Gong arrived outside a gigantic palace. Hao Peng was there and had glanced at Lin Feng and the others. He looked a bit upset. There were so many geniuses, Hao Peng was worried that if they became stronger than him, he wouldn't be as interesting as before. he wouldn't be able to act so arrogantly.

"You understand?" said Bei Ming to Hao Peng. Hao Peng looked calm and solemn. You could tell he was envious and jealous, but he only nodded and said, "Hold on a minute."

"Go." said Bei Ming, waving and then he pointed at another palace where there were tables and chairs. "Everybody, please take a seat."

Lin Feng and the others sat down. Some others weren't used to such things, it seemed like they couldn't relax. Shen Gong was a terrifying place. The people who were inside were, for most of them, at the top of the Xuan Qi layer. Actually, their strength was unfathomable.

The East Sea Dragon Palace and the Jade Heaven Imperial Family were probably similar.

“Everybody, you chose to come here to Shen Gong. It is a great honor, I Bei Ming, am very honored. Now, I will tell you the purpose of the Great Competition of Xue Yu.” Said Bei Ming, glancing around at the crowd. Everybody's eyes were twinkling and sparkling. They were all curious to see those mysterious areas.

“Everybody knows that the Continent of the Nine Clouds is extremely vast. Xue Yu is only a little part of the continent, an empire of average quality is more vast than Xue Yu. Besides, an empire of average quality also controls empires of lower quality and the countries under their jurisdiction. That is a general overview.” said Bei Ming while continuing to look at the crowd. “Now, look at the map of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.”

Bei Ming waved his hand and a beam of light appeared. In a flash, a mirror appeared. In the mirror there was a gigantic map of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

The crowd was stupefied by how large it was. There were so many countries, it looked like there was an infinite number of

countries. They glanced at all the countries but couldn't find Xue Yu or even their own country.

“Look.” said Bei Ming pointing at a location. A beam of light appeared again and landed on a place in the east of the map. It was a region labeled, “Xue Yu.”

“That is Xue Yu?!” The crowd was astonished. Xue Yu was supposed to be vast and gigantic but on the map it looked absolutely tiny, like a dot.

“Look here. This is the East Sea Empire.” said Bei Ming pointing at another place. That region was much larger than Xue Yu. The East Sea Empire was where the East Sea Dragon Palace reigned as warlords.

“Look at the north, you will see that the regions are getting bigger and bigger. Some of those places don't have countries, there are only sects.” explained Bei Ming. The crowd just followed Bei Ming's fingers. As expected, the regions were getting bigger and bigger. There were fields, mountain chains and oceans.

In the center was a place, when the people saw the center of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, they were dumbfounded.

“What a gigantic region. What empire is that?! It looks terrifying!” said some people. In the middle of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there was a gigantic place and above it there was a word, “Holy.”

“Look here.” said Bei Ming pointing at the “Holy” word. He was smiling, “It is the center of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, it is the Holy City. All around the Holy City are incredible spheres of influence. They are much stronger than Shen Gong, the East Sea Dragon Palace or even the Jade Heaven Imperial Family. On the scale of the Holy City, we all are insignificant. They are all much stronger than us. There are empires of higher quality there as well, and cultivators who have reached the clouds. In the very middle is the Holy City, it is the paradise of cultivators, a city filled with the strongest cultivators of the world.”

Their hearts started pounding when they heard him. It was the paradise of strong cultivators, a city filled with the strongest cultivators of the world. Xue Yu was such a small place in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. Even if they were the strongest young cultivators of Xue Yu, they were nothing in comparison with the strong cultivators of the Holy City. Shen Gong wasn't that strong either in comparison. There were many more spheres of influence in the world, including a great deal stronger than Shen Gong.

“Are you feeling dispirited? Discouraged? Or do you have the feeling that you are tiny and insignificant in comparison?” asked Bei Ming. Many people raised their heads and looked at Bei Ming. In their eyes, Bei Ming could really see that some people felt discouraged. Were they really geniuses? Now, they were geniuses in Xue Yu, but what were they in compared to the geniuses of the Continent of the Nine Clouds?

The crowd looked at Lin Feng and saw him sitting straight like a sword. A terrifying energy was emerging out of his body as if he was about to unsheathe his sword and fight against the world.

Their hearts were pounding. Was that the difference between them and Lin Feng? When seeing how small they were in the world, they felt insignificant. But Lin Feng suddenly felt like reaching the clouds even more, his heart was filled with an indomitable determination.

When Bei Ming saw how people were reacting, he was satisfied. He was even more satisfied by Lin Feng's reaction. Lin Feng's heart was indestructible, just like that of extremely strong cultivators.

With Lin Feng's determination, he would definitely become an extremely strong cultivator in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. He had to leave Xue Yu at some point.

This time the geniuses from the Great Competition of Xue Yu had to leave and go to empires of higher qualities. Even the strongest empires needed more great geniuses.

Therefore, the four spheres of influence had come from so far to find these geniuses. In the end, Shen Gong had obtained the most outstanding genius.

"You shouldn't stay in Xue Yu, you are incredible geniuses. Therefore, you should become even stronger here." said Bei Ming pointing at the Holy City. Those words were resonating in people's brains.

The sharp lights disappeared and the map as well. Several people were staring at Bei Ming with a smile. Bei Ming hadn't told them

about the goal of Shen Gong, he had just motivated them to become even stronger. They were all more determined than ever to become strong cultivators.

That was the advantage of staying with incredible cultivators, they would become stronger.

Chapter 685: Zun Cultivators

Bei Ming glanced at the crowd, people didn't dare look at him in the eyes.

“Those who are extremely strong have their own territory. Do you know what cultivators of the Tian Qi layer are capable of?” Do you know what cultivators of the Zun Qi layer can do? Do you know the magical powers of cultivators of the Zun Qi layer?” asked Bei Ming shouting.

Nobody knew. Some people knew a little about cultivators of the Tian Qi layer but knew nothing about cultivators of the Zun Qi layer. They had never seen any, they couldn't even imagine what they were.

What kind of cultivators were people of the Zun Qi layer? What kind of magical powers did they have? They had never thought about such questions.

“In such a vast and broad area as Shen Gong, we have a leader and he controls Shen Gong. Only cultivators of the Zun Qi layer can be called Zun cultivators in the Continent of the Nine Clouds. They are respected and possess their own territory, their own world... They control territories, the territories they control are maybe vaster than the countries you come from... Maybe even bigger than the empires you come from... The mysterious and mystical dimensions and territories I am talking about and will send you to are actually under the control of a Zun cultivator, and has been for thousands of years.”

“Zun cultivator!” The crowd was astonished. They were shivering... Zun cultivators... For them, Tian cultivators were already incredible, amazing, astonishing! But Zun cultivators... they didn’t dare think about it... They had never thought about such a cultivation layer, even in their most incredible dreams.

Such cultivators could destroy the world in one breath, they could could destroy mountains, forests and rivers. They could make a river dry out with a finger.

“There is one cultivator who is even stronger than cultivators of the Zun Qi layer. In his palace he used to have a myriad of servants that were cultivators of the Zun Qi layer... You wish you could be like those servants. His slaves were cultivators of the Tian Qi layer... You can imagine what kind of world he created and how great it would be for you to go there....” continued Bei Ming. Everyone’s hearts started bouncing brutally. A cultivator even stronger than the Zun Qi layer?! How incredible!

Lin Feng’s eyes were twinkling. No wonder that Shen Gong was organizing the Great Competition of Xue Yu every ten years. No wonder the four other spheres of influence had come to steal those geniuses. It seemed like it was for that extremely strong cultivator that Bei Ming was talking about.

Leader, could it be that this special world only opens itself every ten years? If that is the case, many of our ancestors must have already died there, right?” asked Lin Feng. It made sense seeing how the Great Competition of Xue Yu was only happening every ten years.

“Besides, their strength must be restrained in there, right?” said Jun Mo Xi smiling in a deep and meaningful way. If there were all those extremely strong cultivators inside, it would have been useless for them to get in. They couldn’t compete with cultivators of the Tian and Zun Qi layers... That would be courting death to do so.

“Indeed. There are some rules inside. Only people who are below the Zun Qi layer can go, those above would die. And you’re wrong Lin Feng. The Great Competition of Xue Yu takes place every ten years but this time you have drawn some people’s attention. The special world has opened twice so far, about every hundred years. If you are willing to enter the area this time around you will be the third group of people to go there.”

“Hundred years... Third time.. Besides cultivators above the Tian Qi layer cannot enter.”

Only two groups had entered that world before, it meant that the opportunities they would have there would be incredible.

The crowd understood why the other spheres of influence wanted to attract Lin Feng, Duan Wu Dao, Di Ling and the others... With their strength, even though they hadn’t broken through to the Tian Qi layer, they already counted as extremely strong cultivators.

Unfortunately, Shen Gong hadn’t managed to make all the geniuses come with them.

“How do we share the treasures we find inside? Do we have to share some with Shen Gong?” asked someone suddenly.

“Hehe, if you enter that special world, Shen Gong only requires one thing. You can keep the treasures or you can exchange them for skills and techniques or even other treasures.” said Bei Ming smiling. The crowd was surprised,

“Of course, opportunities and dangers cohabit in that world. Entering the world of the strong cultivators is dangerous. You will find the young people of Shen Gong and geniuses belonging to other spheres of influence. They have the same thoughts and ideas as you. They want to steal treasures and come back with them, but some of them never come out.”

Bei Ming’s eyes were twinkling, he looked excited. Some of them might never leave, would they dare go in?

Some Zun cultivators were the servants of someone even more terrifying than a Zun cultivator. The slaves were of the Tian Qi layer, how could people stay out of such a world? They would definitely enter to steal the treasures.

People were just wondering where the master of that world was at that moment? Why was that world a secret and mystical place? What had happened a thousand years before?

“I will enter.” said Lin Feng, his eyes were twinkling. He clenched his fists, he was filled with self-confidence. That was the opportunity of a lifetime.

“Me too.”

“So will I.”

Everybody was determined to enter. Nobody was giving up. Bei Ming had given them confidence and courage with his words. The Continent of the Nine Clouds was vast and gigantic, Xue Yu was a small region and was far from the Holy City, the center of the continent. They still had so much to discover.

“Alright.” replied Bei Ming smiling. Everybody wanted to enter.

“What about people who want to join Shen Gong? Who wants to join Shen Gong? We will welcome you and raise you as our own children.” said Bei Ming. He then continued, “There’s no need to rush your reply. As I told you before, you have the choice. In any case, it will be a meaningful choice. I already told Hao Peng to go and told the respectable cultivator about everything. Soon you will discover what cultivation is really about.”

“The respectable cultivator...” The respectable cultivator was incredible. The Hao Yue Sect or even the Cosmic Pavilion were nothing in comparison. They were geniuses in a small country but they had never thought the Great Competition of Xue Yu would end this way. Surprisingly there was a Zun cultivator. Besides, he was going to appear personally. Their hearts were pounding.

“Alright. Everybody after the Great Competition of Xue Yu needs to rest. You need a night of cultivation and tomorrow, I hope you

will all be ready.” said Bei Ming smiling. Immediately after a girl appeared and she showed them the way.

“Lin Feng, come.” said Qing Chan smiling. Qing Chan looked shy and lowered her head.

In front of her own eyes, Lin Feng had finished first at the competition. She was looking at him with new eyes now. That outstanding young man had the ardor and the determination of an incredible cultivator. Lin Feng would have been even more incredible if he had been raised in a better place.

“Alright.” said Lin Feng smiling. “My friends and I will stay together then.”

“Alright.” said Qing Chan nodding. Lin Feng and the others walked together, but in Shen Gong, a palace was enough for Lin Feng and his friends.

“Brother, Let’s walk first.” said Xiao Ye while giggling. Shen Gong was incredible.

“First let’s go there and then I will come with you.” said Lin Feng, shaking his head and smiling.

“Heehee.” Xiao Ya giggled. Han Man arrived in front of Lin Feng. After the competition, he hadn’t talked to Lin Feng. He looked at Lin Feng through his mask, he had a simple smile on his face. It seemed like he didn’t know what to say. It seemed like the images

of the competition were still floating in his head. Lin Feng had finished first!

“If you come back to Xue Yue... You will definitely be considered as a hero..., however, the Yun Hai Sect....” said Han Man abruptly. If the Yun Hai Sect hadn't be destroyed, Lin Feng would have brought it great honor.. Luckily, Lin Feng had made it resurrect already!

Chapter 686: At Dusk

At night in Shen Gong, there was a bright and clear moon illuminating the region.

It was reflecting off the clouds making the atmosphere look somehow dreary and desolate.

“Wow, the moon is bright and clear up here.” Above the clouds, there was a silhouette standing and looking at the moon.

“What a mysterious world.” whispered Lin Feng. That place was clearly another world. The moon looked incredible.

“I wonder if the moon is different at home.” said a voice sighing. Was that celestial body the same as that seen from home? The word “home” just reminded them of a few vague and blurry souvenirs.

“The moon at home is probably more beautiful than here.” said Xiao Ya smiling. Lin Feng nodded, home in his head was already a blurry souvenir. Now, he was a cultivator of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

“Even though the moon is beautiful, some zither music is missing.” said another voice suddenly. Lin Feng turned his head and smiled at Tang You You, “are you also feeling nostalgic and emotional?”

“On the path of cultivation, you need to remain determined but if you are emotionless, it’s pointless.” said Tang You You smiling. “You also think that the moon looks less beautiful, right?”

Lin Feng smiled and rolled up his sleeves. He then sat down cross-legged, his eyes were twinkling as an ancient zither appeared on his knee. Tang You You was surprised.

Lin Feng could play the zither?!

Xiao Ya was surprised and then giggled. She lied down next to Lin Feng and looked up at the moon. She was wondering how her grandfather was feeling. Her grandfather had given her to Lin Feng so he had probably gone to get his revenge!

He had probably gone to avenge Xiao Ya’s brother! Her grandfather had never forgotten Xiao Ya’s brother. Because she was far away, her grandfather would be able to get his revenge. Meeting Lin Feng had been a nice opportunity, it had enabled her grandfather to find someone to take care of Xiao Ya.

“Danggg....” A sound spread in the atmosphere, it was that of a zither. A cloud of smoke was spreading in the air that made the atmosphere look desolate. It seemed like someone was drinking alone under the moon and crying over a beautiful woman or a friend. It seemed like someone was chatting alone to the Earth and sky.

Tang You You was captivated by the music. Without realizing it, she sat down in a natural and relaxed way. She looked at the lonely

silhouettes around her and listened to melancholic notes of the instrument.

Tang You You's eyes were twinkling, in front of her appeared some bottles of alcohol. She opened them and started drinking. Quickly her face became red and perfectly matched the moonlight. She looked particularly enchanting.

The moon, the zither, some fine liquors, good friends, that was a picturesque scenery. Nothing was missing. Tang You You would have probably sighed with emotions if she had seen herself. However if she hadn't been in the picture something would have been missing.

Progressively, there were more and more high-pitch tones. The melody was going up and down like a rollercoaster, it was resonating in the darkness of the night.

Xiao Ya closed her eyes, it seemed like she had fallen asleep. Tang You You was still drinking, she hadn't emerged out of the picture.

In the distance, in two different places there were two silhouettes watching Lin Feng's back. Qing Chan was smiling, she liked Lin Feng's eyes. She admired Lin Feng for his cultivation but also for his zither skills. What a well-rounded young man!

Qing Meng Xin was also looking at Lin Feng from a table, she had a resplendent and seducing smile. That guy was perfect. With his determination and temperament, he had finished first at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. He was frivolous and still alive, he was

filled with ardor and vitality.

“Maybe you aren’t as perfect as Jun Mo Xi in some ways but you are better at attracting women.” whispered Qing Meng Xin. Qing Meng Xin was looking at Qing Chan and Tang You You sitting. Women liked Lin Feng.

Lin Feng then put away his zither and looked at Xiao Ya who was closing her eyes, his face was filled with warmth and tenderness.

Lin Feng turned his head to Tang You You who was still drinking alcohol. Her face was red and she still looked bewitching.

Tang You You turned her head and looked at Lin Feng, her face turned even redder. Then she slightly lowered her head and put the bottles away. Suddenly she looked normal again. She smiled and said, “I wouldn’t have thought that you could play the zither so well.”

“An old man taught me.” said Lin Feng smiling. Back then, Yan Yu Ping Sheng had taught him some basics.

Tang You You smiled and remained silent.

“I’m going to have a rest.” said Tang You You, standing up and walking away. Now Qing Chan and Qing Meng Xin had already left.

Lin Feng shook his head and carefully took Xiao Ya in his arms.

Then, he walked away.

.....

At dusk a pleasant and comfortable breeze brushed away in Shen Gong. Lin Feng and the others had arrived in front of the palace they had first arrived at the day before.

Now they were going to listen to the Zun cultivator. Of course, they were all impatient. They were particularly excited.

They were at the top of the Xuan Qi layer, their blood was becoming stronger and stronger. A strong cultivators' advice would surely be useful.

Bei Ming arrived and saw that everybody was there already. He smiled looking gratified. The geniuses who had made it to the end of the Great Competition of Xue Yu were full of willpower and determination. They were all eager to become extremely strong.

“Everybody, follow me.” said Bei Ming. He then jumped in the distance.

The crowd then followed him and crossed the atmosphere of Shen Gong.

After a short time, the crowd arrived in a place where buildings weren't so tall, just small and simple. There was a simple palace with a normal door. Through that small passage they could see an

old man sitting cross-legged on a round chair. His eyes were firmly closed and it seemed like he was in a state of meditation.

Outside of the palace people were progressively moving forwards. Bei Ming was the same, he was walking there, step by step.

“Respectable cultivator.” said Bei Ming slightly bowing.

“Come in.” His voice was made their souls shake.

The Zun cultivator was sitting in a small courtyard. But was that a strong cultivator?

The others slowly followed and entered into the small courtyard. There were many chairs inside but nobody sat down, they were all too eager.

Lin Feng arrived in front of a chair and looked at the old man, his heart was beating faster.

“It’s him...!” That silhouette was blurry in Lin Feng’s memories. In the special area where he had stayed for seven days, he had seen that silhouette. He hadn’t seen that person’s face, he had only seen his silhouette. But now the old man looked very familiar. Lin Feng knew him and it made sense that the old man was a Zun cultivator.

“Everybody, please be seated.” said the Zun cultivator whose eyes started shaking. His lips were twitching but his voice was

particularly clear. It seemed like he was using magical powers to talk to them, their hearts were shaking.

Everybody sat down and look up at the old man respectfully. It seemed like they were worthless in front of that strong cultivator. He could destroy a mountain with his finger and make oceans dry out.

Chapter 687: Before Breaking Through to the Tian Qi layer

The strong cultivator opened his eyes once everybody sat down.

He looked absolutely normal but in his eyes one could see something deep and profound. It seemed that for the strong cultivator, the world had no secrets. It seemed like he knew and understood everything. He could see through things.

“Why are you here?” asked the old man, surprising everybody. Why had they come? Because they wanted to become stronger, of course. They wanted to learn from a strong cultivator.

“For the sake of cultivation.” replied somebody. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, people wanted to progress on the path of cultivation, they wanted to become monstrously strong, they wanted to control the world and their own destiny.

“What about the others?” asked the Zun cultivator glancing around the crowd. The other people nodded, they had come for the sake of cultivation.

“Very good, since you have come for the sake of cultivation, can you tell me what cultivation is?” asked the Zun cultivator indifferently. Everybody was surprised, what was cultivation?

Strong cultivators wanted to be respected and reach the clouds. They wanted to control the clouds and their fate but few of them

had ever thought about what cultivation really was. Everybody remained silent.

“Nobody can tell me?” said the Zun cultivator. The cultivators remained silent and were a bit surprised. What a simple question! But they couldn’t even reply.

Many people lowered their heads, they felt stupid.

“If you haven’t studied cultivation deeply how could you become strong cultivators?” sighed the Zun cultivator. The crowd felt even more ridiculous, they had said that they wanted to become strong cultivators and that they had come for the sake of cultivation but they couldn’t reply to a simple question.

“Cultivation, as I see it, includes many things. It is about learning skills and techniques, making one’s body stronger, improving one’s strength. It’s about surpassing one’s self and one’s own limits. It’s about studying and understanding. You can use the strength of the Earth and sky for your own interests. First you can borrow their strength and then you can control their strength. Then, you will be able to understand the abstruse significance. Once you can control that kind of strength, you don’t need to think about anymore.” said the old man slowly. Then he continued, “That is how I understand what cultivation is, what about you?”

The first step was making one’s own body stronger, the second step was about borrowing the strength of the planet, the third step was controlling the Earth and sky.

Looking at it that way made it seem easy to understand what cultivation was, but in fact it was precisely that way. It was about starting weak and then becoming stronger. And eventually, someday, becoming a cultivator would be about controlling the Earth.

Step by step, if a cultivator managed to control the Earth and sky they would become an authentically strong cultivator. But what kind of cultivator was that? Could a Zun cultivator control the earth and the sky? Probably not!

“Do you understand what I mean?” asked the old man making them shiver.

“At our level, we can only borrow the strength of the Earth and sky, and use skills. We are learning basic things such as using intent. All of those things are about borrowing strength, including their Qi. Those who understand the Earth and sky the best, including their strength, are the strongest.” said someone.

The Zun cultivator nodded and said, “You are just about right, the Qi of the Earth and sky allow you to make your magical powers become stronger. It enables you to improve your intent level, then one day you’re able to destroy the Earth and sky. That’s the only way to become stronger.”

Lin Feng kept nodding. He understood things better than most people. No matter if it was on the path of sword cultivation, the strength of the Heruka, corporeal strength etc. All of those things were about borrowing external strength, the strength of the Earth and sky.

“If you understand that, tell me how to become stronger and break through to the different cultivation layers?”

“Using pure Qi, and once it reaches a certain level we break through to different cultivation layers.” said someone else.

“What are cultivation layers?” asked the Zun cultivator. The crowd was stupefied again, what were cultivation layers...?

“And how can you break through to the next cultivation layers?” repeated the Zun cultivator.

“Cultivation layers are probably related to one’s power of understanding. If our power of understanding is deep enough, we can break through to the next one...” said someone else.

“The cultivation layers represent one of the most important aspects of cultivation, but it is difficult to talk about such abstract concepts. Once the required factors are present, one can break through to the next cultivation layer. Practicing cultivation enabled you to break through to your current cultivation level and use your current skills and techniques.”

“It’s like a river and stones.” said the Zun cultivator. He then stretched his hand and in a flash appeared a drop of water which fell down onto a stone.

“Your cultivation level is like that stone, but your cultivation is

like water. You can break through to the next cultivation layers like water slips on a stone. Cultivation layers exist but you are not stuck in them, they are immobile as you break through to the different ones like a river. If you want the water to pierce through the stone, there are many methods. You can increase the speed of the water flow, or can use more water, you can also make the water become sharper. And each time you collide with that stone, you become stronger. What you want to do is break that stone as quickly as possible. No matter, you need to make the water fall onto the same place each time, then you will progress faster.”

Following each of the Zun cultivator’s words, drops of water appeared and fell down onto the stone.

“Do you understand?” asked the Zun cultivator while moving his hands. Then the water started flowing even faster and very quickly, the stone disappeared.

“It is tiring if you use more water. Making the water sharper requires that you become stronger, you need to understand cultivation for that. Each time the water falls at one precise point you observe and understand the laws of our world. You need perseverance, persistence and determination to stick to such a task. You need to move forwards with indomitable determination.” said Lin Feng slowly.

The Zun cultivator looked at Lin Feng, smiled and nodded, “Indeed, if you want to become stronger, you need perseverance and determination... But you also need natural abilities, you need hard work and you need skills. You need to have an iron-will and determination.”

“You are all geniuses that will soon break through to the Tian Qi layer. If you know the proper methods, if you use your brain and work hard, you will break through to the Tian Qi layer very quickly. Cultivation will be even more meaningful for you. When you break through to the Tian Qi layer you will be in perfect fusion with the universe. You will understand the strength of the Earth and sky.”

If you want to break through to the Tian Qi layer you will first need to penetrate into a mysterious cultivation dimension, the human earth fusion dimension.

The crowd stared blankly. Breaking through to the Tian Qi layer required such incredible things, what a difficult prerequisite...

“When you break through to the Tian Qi layer, you will need to pay attention to the strength of the Earth and sky and you will need to pay attention to the way you control it. You will need to continue practicing skills and techniques. You will need to continue understanding the different sorts of intent: fire intent, sword intent, firmament intent, and so on. Even if you and an opponent have both broken through to the same Tian Qi layer, if you don’t understand intent but your opponent does, he can easily defeat you.”

“When you break through to the Tian Qi layer you will need to keep persistent. Then you will try to penetrate into the abstruse significance dimension... However, you are still extremely far from it. You first need to start understanding the strength of the Earth and sky. Only those who understand the abstruse significance can

become Zun cultivators.”

The human earth fusion was necessary to break through to the Tian Qi layer and the abstruse significance was necessary to become a Zun cultivator.

“There is one more aspect, understanding the human earth fusion requires determination and willpower, one cannot give up. If one’s heart is polluted they cannot break through to the Tian Qi layer.”

The Tian Qi layer required the understanding of the human earth fusion!

Chapter 688: The Palace of the Emperors

“Remember what I told you, in order to break through to the Tian Qi layer you need to understand the human earth fusion and you cannot let anything pollute your heart. You will need to remain pure and remain determined. If you let pollution into your heart you will always remain at the top of the Xuan Qi layer and will never break through to the Tian Qi layer.” said the Zun cultivator. They would of course, remember those precious pieces of advice.

“You have to work very hard to become stronger. Natural abilities are very important, just like willpower and determination. You also need a great spirit, for it can determine your destiny when you’ve broken through to the Tian Qi layer.” said the Zun cultivator. As before, his words were like drums beating in people’s hearts.

The spirit would play a great role once they would have broken through to the Tian Qi layer...

“For many people, the spirit is something they acquire at birth. It is something fixed and rigid that follows you everywhere and every time while remaining in perfect harmony with your body. Your spirit is a part of your soul. Before the Tian Qi layer you can understand intent, intent correlates with your spirit just like Duan Wu Dao’s sealed doors, Di Ling’s firmament intent... After the Tian Qi layer your cultivation level will become even higher and you will be able to fuse together with the earth, it will increase the harmony existing between your spirit and your body. You will often sense that your spirit and intent are interconnected, as if they were blending. Many people find that that it is closely

interrelated with the spirit when they themselves understand what intent is.”

“Therefore, a cultivator of the Tian Qi layer who hasn’t understood intent is worthless.” said the Zun cultivator slowly. Many people looked at Lin Feng, he hadn’t broken through to the Tian Qi layer but he already had a level five sword intent. He had terrifying natural abilities and had won the Great Competition of Xue Yu. Such geniuses were extremely rare.

“Lin Feng, show them your sword intent and how incredible it is.” said the Zun cultivator, smiling at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng simply smiled politely and said, “Alright.”

Lin Feng turned around and faced a tree. Then he released a terrifying sword intent that made it seem like there were millions of swords in the atmosphere and all of them were filled with a terrifying Qi. It seemed like he was about to cut through the world.

After that, many small subtle sounds could be heard. People discovered that on the tree there were thousands and thousands of cuts. They had all been caused Lin Feng’s energies and intent, he hadn’t moved but with his sword intent he was able to kill people and annihilate things from thousands of meters away. Besides, Lin Feng had only broken through to the Xuan Qi layer, if he broke through to the Tian Qi layer his sword intent would become much stronger. It would be terrifying...

“Not bad.” said the Zun cultivator smiling. “That is sword intent.

Now I will show you what the abstruse significance is.”

“Abstruse significance!” The crowd was absolutely astonished. They were going to have the opportunity to sense some abstruse significance! They were fixated on the old man.

“What I study is wind abstruse significance and it transforms wind. You cannot see it so look carefully.” said the old man. He then stood up and another Zun cultivator appeared, it looked like a shadow.

Immediately after, some wind started blowing everywhere around the area. Suddenly silhouettes of the old man were appearing. They all stopped in front of the crowd and surrounded them. They were moving around just like the wind.

They stretched their hands but couldn’t touch them, it as if there had been nobody there at all. Or they possessed no physical body at least.

However, another kind of wind started blowing. The crowd was shaking when they sensed that there were people next to them but they were intangible. Then when the believed that they couldn’t touch them, the crowd was suddenly able to.

“Are they real?” The crowd was astonished.

“Abstruse significance... That is abstruse significance.” The crowd was astonished, their hearts were pounding. What they had

just seen was only the tip of the iceberg... but they were already amazed.

In the past, they had thought that they were extremely strong, but now they were discovering that the world of cultivation was extremely vast. They had the feeling that they were insignificant cultivators. In front of really strong cultivators, they were simply novices... They understood nothing. Besides, in the eyes of the old man they really were just beginners about to enter a new world.

“Breaking through to the Tian Qi layer will give you incredible powers... Your soul will become stronger and you will be able to use it more efficiently. Your spirit will become real and will deploy a monstrous amount of strength.” continued the old man, making the crowd feel even more excited. Cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer couldn’t compete with cultivator of the Tian Qi layer. It was a world of difference.

“I’ve heard that on the path of cultivation there are shortcuts. Apart from hard work, perseverance and determination there are other ways to become stronger?” asked someone. Everybody paid attention this question, they understood what it meant. That person was asking if joining Shen Gong would give them special advantages. Was Shen Gong able to make their cultivation speed increase and become stronger than other people?

The Zun cultivator understood what that person meant. He smiled and said, “Of course, no matter what your cultivation level is there are ways. You just need to find the resources suitable for your cultivation. Improving cultivation of the Tian Qi layer necessitates intent crystals that fit their unique cultivation. With

those crystals, Tian Qi cultivate can understand how to improve their intent. Of course, you need to find the crystal which fits your cultivation. For example, if you study sword intent, you will need to find some sword intent crystals. And it's like this for all sorts of cultivation. Using unrelated crystals can help but it is not as efficient.”

“Those intent crystals must be extremely expensive and precious.” someone said...

“Of course, Shen Gong with its power doesn't have many. Only the most determined cultivators should use intent crystals anyways. Of course, in the Palace of the Emperors there must be a myriad of intent crystals, and even abstruse significance crystals...” said the Zun cultivator smiling. People's hearts were pounding.

The world of the Palace of the Emperors was probably the world Bei Ming had told them about.

The Absolute Emperor was stronger than Zun cultivators. He was a master of all cultivators...

In the Palace of the Emperors, there were intent and abstruse significance crystals...

Bei Ming already told you that you will find incredible things if you enter the World of the Emperors....” said the Zun cultivator.

“Mister, I have one question. How do abstruse significance crystals appear?” asked Lin Feng.

“Intent crystals are extremely precious, especially Tian level ones. The others, such as sword intent crystals are less precious. In the past, extremely strong cultivators could probably build abstruse significance crystals by confining themselves in some rooms and studying.”

“Understood.” said Lin Feng nodding.

The crowd looked pensive as if they had suddenly understood something.

“Do you have any other questions?” asked the old man. Everybody remained silent as they had no more questions.

“Since you have no more questions, let’s stop for today. Please leave now.” said the old man indifferently. He looked majestic and domineering. People gradually bowed in front of him one after the other and then left.

Chapter 689: Tian Level Skills

The crowd felt a bit overwhelmed after leaving the cultivator of the Zun Qi layer. In so few words, the cultivator of the Zun Qi layer had taught them so many things.

They hadn't talked a lot but they had learnt a lot about cultivation. They had understood so much more about the Tian Qi layer. They were filled with ardor, they wanted to master intent and break through to the Tian Qi layer. They were eager to understand the abstruse significance, a mysterious dimension of cultivation. But they were extremely far away from becoming Zun cultivators...

Now they had the occasion to enter the Palace of the Emperors. They might find some intent crystals or even greater treasures. That world had existed for thousands of years already. Zun cultivators were the protectors and Tian cultivators were the slaves... Nobody would believe it if someone said that there was no treasure there.

Even a cultivator of the Zun Qi layer could go insane for such treasures. But for them, Zun cultivation was a pipe dream.

Bei Ming was still in the courtyard watching as the silhouettes came out. He smiled, "You must have learnt many things with him. Now let me ask you, who wants to join Shen Gong? We would be happy to welcome you."

The crowd was caught off-guard. Apart from Lin Feng the others

were all excited, it seemed like they needed a special environment to become stronger.

“I do.” someone said.

“So do I.” said someone else. Apart from Lin Feng and his friends, the others were all willing to join Shen Gong. They had all changed their minds.

Bei Ming smiled resplendently when he saw them, but as before he was looking at Lin Feng and Jun Mo Xi. He had hoped that the two of them would join Shen Gong... But Lin Feng looked calm and serene, not at all enthusiastic.

“Lin Feng, Jun Mo Xi, Tang You You, Yun Fei Yang, Qing Meng Xin... Are you considering joining us?” asked Bei Ming.

“Thank you for showing so much respect but I have another title, I am already the patriarch of a sect. How could I join another sphere of influence?” said Lin Feng refusing again. Bei Ming had not realized, Lin Feng was already the patriarch of a sect!

Jun Mo Xi and the others also refused. They were not interested.

“Alright. I will not try to persuade you since you’re not interested. Now, follow me everyone.” Bei Ming sighed and shook his head. He brought them up into the air again. After traveling for a short bit they arrived in front of a palace which reached the clouds, it was there that Bei Ming brought the crowd back to the

ground.

That palace looked calm and peaceful. It had a gigantic door that they entered and saw an incredible quantity of shoes.

There were several people silently looking at some ancient books inside.

“Cloud Hand, free fast sword, celestial energy....” Lin Feng looked at the different books and was drooling. There were so many skills... Extremely powerful skills.

“The lowest skills here are Di level skills of higher quality... It is the place where people of Shen Gong came to learn skills. You may not take the books away, the skills have to be learnt by heart. Otherwise there are no limits.” said Bei Ming. Everybody frowned. Di level skills of higher quality... That was already incredible for them... Only people of Shen Gong could read them though, that was one of the advantages of being part of a sphere of influence. Being born in such an environment was incredible though. With identical natural abilities, there was a huge difference between someone who had grown up there and someone who had relied on themselves to become stronger like they had.

“I was lucky in the past, I obtained some Di level skills of lower quality, or even Ba Dao did... Now, I can even choose amongst Di level skills of higher quality...” Thought Lin Feng while smiling wryly and shaking his head. The others were quite excited though. They wouldn’t lack skills in the future. They would even be able to practice several skills at the same time. In such a huge palace, there were billions of skills and they would be able to choose any of

them...

“Lin Feng, you finished first at the Great Competition of Xue Yu so Shen Gong will offer you a present. If you accept to join Shen Gong, we will allow you to go to the second floor of the palace and choose some Tian level skills and techniques. But if you don’t, I can’t allow you to choose yourself. If you tell me what you want to study and what kind of skill, I will get it for you.”

Tian level skills!

The crowd was jealous looking at Lin Feng. If Lin Feng accepted to join Shen Gong he would obtain some Tian level skills. Unfortunately, he kept refusing their offer over and over again.

Even if Lin Feng refused, the others wouldn’t get such an opportunity.

“Tian level skills... ” whispered Lin Feng. He didn’t need skills though. He already had the cosmic-burning sun skill, he also knew techniques and other magical powers. The nine thousand rotation heruka strength skill...some sword skills and techniques. He had defensive and offensive skills... His skills weren’t weaker than Tian level skills...

“Lin Feng, I would like to remind you that Tian level skills already contain intent strength. If you can understand intent, you can choose a sword skill, sword formula.” said Bei Ming.

“Sword formula...” Lin Feng shook his head. He had a bloodthirsty sword and level five sword intent. He also had the sword of the arid and empty area. Those were enough already, he didn’t need more.

“I need an agility technique. I need to be able to use wind intent.” said Lin Feng. Lin Feng lacked agility techniques, he hadn’t been able to match others in terms of speed during the competition. He needed an agility technique

“Alright. I will help you find one.” said Bei Ming nodding. He then took out a jade key with the number five on it. He put it in a multicolored door and opened it. Then Bei Ming disappeared.

“What a mysterious place.” thought the crowd. They were wondering what kind of technique Bei Ming was going to take. Unfortunately, Jun Mo Xi didn’t feel like joining Shen Gong either. Otherwise, he would have chosen some skills too.

After a short time, Bei Ming came back with a piece of jade in his hand. It was memory jade.

“Lin Feng, that is a Tian level technique of lower quality. It is Nine Days Wind Qi. It helps you understand wind intent. Take it.” said Bei Ming. Lin Feng looked at it and put it away. Bei Ming was sad, Lin Feng wasn’t joining Shen Gong but he was obtaining the technique... What a pity!

“Jun Mo Xi and Tang You You, if you join Shen Gong you will also get Tian level skills... But, unfortunately you keep refusing.

You can take some Di level skills for yourselves and up to five... I will send some people to Dragon Mountain by the way.”

“Thank you, you are kind. But I don’t need any presents though.” said Jun Mo Xi shaking his head. He was satisfied with what he had. Tian level skills were attractive but nothing less... Di level skills were precious but not to him.”

Tang You You and Qing Meng Xin didn’t take anything either. They didn’t also felt the same.

Yun Fei Yang didn’t refuse though and took five skills.

“Leader, I want to leave and go to the Palace of the Emperors.”

“Alright, take your things.” said Bei Ming waving. The crowd then took a jade stone that he was handing out. Then he said, “In that stone is a map for you to find where the Palace of the Emperors is. You all have three months to arrive.”

“Alright.” nodded Lin Feng and the others. They all looked at each other. They were becoming strong cultivators and Shen Gong wanted to use them, Shen Gong had no doubts about them.

Chapter 690: Wrath

Bei Ming accompanied them as they left. After all, he was the leader of Shen Gong North.

“Don’t forget, three months later we will see each other again.” said Bei Ming to Lin Feng and the others. Everybody smiled. Amongst those five, the weakest were Yun Fei Yang and Qing Meng Xin but their future was still going to be incredible. They would probably become incredible geniuses in a timeframe of ten years. Of course, only if they left Xue Yu.

Lin Feng and the others, however, would have to leave Xue Yu.

“Leader, don’t worry about walking us out.” Said Lin Feng. Bei Ming nodded, he had been extremely good to them already. He was the leader of Shen Gong North and had given them face the entire time. Besides, being the leader of Shen Gong North meant that he was already an incredible cultivator, He wasn’t an ordinary cultivator of the Tian Qi layer.

“Alright.” said Bei Ming nodding. He then turned around and moved back into the palace. Xue Wu Chang also nodded to them and said, “Lin Feng, I really look forward to seeing you again.”

“I do as well, I hope you will remember me.” said Qing Chan, smiling at Lin Feng. She looked a bit sad, almost sick at heart.

“Mister Xue, Qing Chan, I will remember you.” said Lin Feng with an honest smile. He also looked kind hearted, but things had

to change. This time Jun Mo Xi, Tang You You, Xue Wu Chang and so on... Lin Feng's head was filled with beautiful memories.

“Let's go.” said Xue Wu Chang. Then he and Qing Chan went back into Shen Gong.... Life was filled with surprises.

“We are the only ones left.” said Lin Feng to Jun Mo Xi and the others. Everyone else had all joined Shen Gong, even Yue Tian Ming. Maybe Yue Tian Ming would become even stronger there.

“Indeed, we are the only ones left. Let's go.” said Jun Mo Xi smiling. “It's a good thing that you have to cross Dragon Mountain on your way back to Xue Yue. We can chat together on the way back.”

“Did your parents go back?” asked Lin Feng. Jun Mo Xi nodded and said, “They left when we were in Shen Gong.”

“Let's go to the fighting stage, some people are waiting for us there.” said Jun Mo Xi smiling. Then they rose up in the air and flew towards the fighting stage of Xue Yu. There weren't many things left on that stage, everything looked destroyed or broken. Lin Feng's sword had left so many marks inside.

Around the fighting stage were still some people, they looked like they were still recalling the events of the Great Competition of Xue Yu. They shivered when they saw Lin Feng and the others come back.

“Lin Feng, Jun Mo Xi... It seems like they have decided not to join Shen Gong.” thought the crowd. They were a bit surprised. Dragon Mountain had seen six of its geniuses obtain excellent rankings. Three of them were in the top five. Lin Feng had finished first and Jun Mo Xi had fourth, and they were such good friends now.

“Your excellency.” said some people from Dragon Mountain. Lin Feng looked in the air and saw a ferocious, wild beast there. Someone was chasing that beast.

“You won’t escape animal!” threatened someone while smiling. That animal was a ferocious, ancient animal.

“Roaaarrr!” The winged tiger roared when it saw Lin Feng, it seemed furious. Lin Feng had come so Wu Qing couldn’t stop him anymore. He didn’t dare.

“How audacious!” shouted Lin Feng furiously, a cloud of dust rose up along with Lin Feng.

“Roaaarrr!” The winged tiger was furious as it lowered its head. Lin Feng immediately landed on its body and the winged tiger calmed down.

The one chasing the winged tiger had stopped, he started shaking out of fear.

Lin Feng!

He had seen Lin Feng win the competition and knew how terrifying Lin Feng was. He had even been able to defeat Duan Wu Dao and Di Ling. When he saw how docile the became, he realized that it must have been Lin Feng's.

“Get lost!” shouted Lin Feng.

“Roaaaar!” The winged tiger chased that person. It seemed like he was still furious, but then he realized how strong Lin Feng was. That young man was becoming even more terrified. Lin Feng looked calm and serene, surprisingly.

Of course, the winged tiger was also proud of Lin Feng.

Lin Feng moved back to the fighting stage of Xue Yu. Jun Mo Xi smiled and jumped onto the back of the winged too.

“Xiao Ya, Han Man, Po Jun, hop on as well.” shouted Lin Feng. All of them jumped on the winged tiger. And then they dived into the clouds.

Everybody raised their heads to watch the silhouettes leave. Those geniuses were leaving, and the other geniuses had already left for different places. Some of them had joined the East Sea Dragon Palace, some the Jade Heaven Imperial Family, some the Nine Cloud Swords Sect, and the rest to Shen Gong.

In the air, clouds were rolling. The winged tiger was clapping its

wings as it flew towards Dragon Mountain.

Jun Mo Xi looked to Tang You You and said, “We succeeded this time, Dragon Mountain succeeded. We have the best winnings statistics. You You, let’s take out some alcohol to celebrate!”

“I can’t waste the alcohol.” said Tang You You smiling. Then she started taking out a massive amount of bottles,. Jun Mo Xi and the others each grabbed a bottle or two smiling.

“Han Man, Po Jun, I want to warn you that those are fine liquors. Let’s drink together!” said Lin Feng, passing them bottles as well. The liquors of the Tang Clan were precious.

Han Man and took a bottle with his eyes twinkling. He immediately opened it and tried it.

“Good stuff, bro. I’ve never had the occasion to drink alcohol in the army.” said Han Man sounding a bit saddened. He had a hard life in Duan Ren City.

“How is the army? How is Uncle Liu? Is he alright?” asked Lin Feng frowning. He was wondering how people in Duan Ren City were doing.

“Very difficult.” said Han Man shaking his head. “We fought against Mo Yue for a long time and then we withdrew troops. We suffered too many losses. We stopped fighting at the Duan Ren Border so we could defend the north west. The country of Lie Yun

had intervened and wanted to steal Duan Ren City. We lack good fighters because what happened at the Duan Ren Border. Everyday is a bloodbath. The most terrifying fact is that we are dispirited. Xue Yue doesn't help us, we have no food, no medicine, no weapons... We have nothing. We have been abandoned to the enemies, we are at the mercy of two countries." said Han Man sounding desperate. His eye had become bloodshot when he spoke of his misfortunes.

"We are Xue Yue troops. If you hadn't been there Lin Feng, we would have died last time. Xue Yue wouldn't have helped us. How could we still hope for help..." said Po Jun mockingly. He didn't understand why they let people die in Duan Ren City.

A blood bath, troops dying everyday... But the monarch didn't care as if their lives didn't count.

Lin Feng was furious when he heard him. He took another sip of alcohol and said, "When we're back in Xue Yue, I will put an end to it."

"Alright." Han Man's eyes gleamed with hope. With Lin Feng's strength, the troops would become motivated, and to back them up was Po Jun and Xiao Ya. They would be pleasantly surprised.

The winner of the Great Competition of Xue Yu, he who despised the high-officials and even the crown prince Duan Wu Dao was coming back a hero!

Chapter 691: Dazzling Lights

There was a group of people arriving from the sky in the Imperial City of Dragon Mountain. They were very high up and were wearing imperial chang paos. The leader was wearing a dragon robe and looked particularly domineering and imposing with his warlord Qi.

That person was a respectable cultivator in Dragon Mountain and was returning from Mi Cheng. He was the emperor of Dragon Mountain, Jun Mo Xi's father. There were several people from the Imperial City following him as well.

There was also a group of people of the Tang Clan on their right, and a group of people from the Cosmic Pavilion on their left. They were all gazing into the distance as if they had seen someone coming back.

Previously, they had heard the news that six people from Dragon Mountain had finished in the top 16 at the Great Competition of Xue Yu!

According to the rumors, three people from Dragon Mountain, including Jun Mo Xi, had finished in the top five. Jun Mo Xi had finished fourth. Dragon Mountain had been the most dazzling empire of that year's Great Competition.

There was a huge crowd forming below, they were trying to guess who had finished first at the competition.

“What are your thoughts Shi Yun?” asked a middle-aged man to a young and beautiful girl.

Shi Yun shook her head and smiled.

“Shi Yun.” said a young man again. He smiled and said, “My brother will come back soon, even though he didn’t finish the Great Competition of Xue. He was able to dazzle and his cultivation level is now incredible. When he comes back I will propose the Huo Clan a marriage alliance. My clan will support me.”

“I’m not interested.” said Huo Shi Yun indifferently. This made the young man very angry.

“Wu Xin, Shi Yun is not interested in a relationship. I am honored that you’re interested in her, but don’t mention such things again.” said Huo Jiu Yang frowning. That young man had neither learning nor skill and was just a pervert. He wasn’t as good as Shi Yun, she deserved much better than that. Besides, with what happened last time, Huo Jiu Yang wasn’t going to force his daughter to get married anymore. If she wasn’t interested, then she wasn’t interested and he would respect her choice.

Cui Wu Xin was trying to get a girlfriend using his brother’s name, Cui Wu Ming.

“Huo Jiu Yang, I, Cui Wu Xin already gave you face, don’t make me lose face now. Wait until my brother comes back, then you will see that you don’t have a choice.” said Cui Wu Xin groaning coldly. Huo Jiu Yang pulled a long face, what a bastard. That guy was

incompetent and was trying to use his brother's name and influence seeing how Cui Wu Ming was coming back.

“They arrived... It seems like they arrived.” said several people suddenly. They were gasping with amazement while gazing into the distance.

There were so many beasts, it really seemed like they had come back.

“Alright, my brother came back.” said Cui Wu Xin smiling coldly and glancing at Huo Jiu Yang and Huo Shi Yun. He hoped that he could rely on his brother and clan to dazzle because he was so incompetent. Then he would get what he wanted, such as Shi Yun.

Huo Jiu Yang and Huo Shi Yun were also gazing into the distance. That group of people in the sky was getting nearer and nearer.

“Beasts from Dragon Mountain. The candidates from the Great Competition of Xue Yu came back.

People were intrigued and staring as they arrived. Someone noticed one person in particular, Jun Mo Xi.

“Jun Mo Xi, the best cultivator of Dragon Mountain is back! What did he finish as? He must have been an extremely dazzling cultivator.”

There was also Tang You You, Qing Meng Xin, Cui Wu Ming, Leng Xue. They had all gone to the Great Competition of Xue Yu... There was also another young man. He was sitting on an ancient, ferocious, wild beast and was wearing white clothes. He looked majestic, but they had never seen him.

That ferocious, ancient animal was extremely rare, it was a winged tiger.

However, Huo Shi Yun and Huo Jiu Yang were astonished to see him, especially Shi Yun who started trembling.

“It’s Lin Feng, it’s really Lin Feng... He hasn’t died, he’s still alive.. Lin Feng is still alive and has even participated at the Great Competition of Xue Yu.” Shi Yun’s eyes were twinkling and her thoughts were moving quickly in her head. She nibbled her lips and turned red, she had bit her lips so hard that some blood appeared.

He was moving in the wind very quickly. In a flash, the crowd arrived in front of the people from Dragon Mountain.

“Jun Mo Xi.”

“You You.”

“Meng Xing!”

Those three names were resonating together. They looked proud,

Dragon Mountain managed to steal three places without counting the countries under its jurisdiction... Then there were thirteen other countries to count on.

Those young people looked matured. Besides, their Qi had completely changed. They must have gone through incredible things at that Great Competition of Xue Yu. They had faced death, they had kept fighting against their own selves, they had challenged their other incredible geniuses. They had become stronger faster than anyone else could have.

“Alright, not bad this time. Dragon Mountain finished with six people in the top ten and four people in the top six. We have three people in the top four... And the champion of the competition comes from a country under our jurisdiction! This time, you made our empire dazzle, you are the glory of our empire!” said the emperor receiving them with a resplendent smile. The crowd was astonished, how incredible, the champion of the competition came from a country under their jurisdiction...?

They looked at the crowd in the sky, everybody had thought that Jun Mo Xi would finish first. It had to be him, right?

“Qing Meng Xin from the Cosmic Pavilion, tenth! You are a dazzling cultivator in Dragon Mountain, thank you!” said the emperor bowing in front of Qing Meng Xin. Everybody was astonished, he was so respectful to those glorious champions. He was even thanking them.

“Emperor!” everybody raised their heads and looked at him in a respectful way, they felt moved.

“Yun Fei Yang, I don’t know where you’re from, Xue Yue, Tian Feng or Dragon Empire. But in any case, you made our empire dazzle because you finished eighth. Congratulations! Thank you!”

The crowd also looked at Yun Fei Yang, he had astonished them back then before the competition had even started. They had had the impression that Yun Fei Yang was a bit too weak back then, they had never thought that he would end up amongst the most incredible geniuses at the competition. Surprisingly, he had finished eighth... How incredible!

“Tang You You of the Tang Clan, you finished sixth. Congratulations and thank you.” said the emperor as nicely and respectfully as before. Tang You You had surprisingly finished sixth. How strong! Qing Meng Xin and Tang You You definitely deserved to be called the strongest women of the country. Not to mention, they were both extremely beautiful.

“Jun Mo Xi of the Imperial City Clan of Dragon Mountain, you finished fourth. You are a dazzling cultivator, you are the Prince of Dragon Mountain!” said the emperor making the crowd shiver. Jun Mo Xi was the prince... They knew that, but he had finished... Fourth?

The emperor had said that three people from Dragon Mountain had finished in the top four... Who were the two others then?

“The second champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu is Duan Wu Dao, Prince of Xue Yue. He hasn’t come, but I would still

like to thank him as well.”

Duan Wu Dao was the Prince of Xue Yue and had finished second...

The second was from Xue Yue, who was the first one then?

They were all glancing at the crowd, they were eager to know who the first one was. Who was the most dazzling cultivator of Xue Yu?

Chapter 692: Gathering

The emperor slowly turned around and looked at Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng from Xue Yue, you finished at the very top of the rankings, you are the most dazzling young cultivator of Xue Yu. You are the pride of our empire, Dragon Mountain. Thanks to you we are stronger than any other empire in Xue Yu. Thank you!” said the emperor bowing in front of Lin Feng. Lin Feng was the champion of the competition!

“Lin Feng!” The crowd was astonished! The first one was Lin Feng?

They looked at Lin Feng in the sky and had the impression that they were dreaming. They would have never thought that Lin Feng would finish first... Who had?

“Lin Feng, you are the Chi Xie Marquis of Xue Yue and I am the emperor of Dragon Mountain. From now on, I grant you the title of Chi Xie King of Dragon Mountain, and I also grant you the title of Ruler of Xue Yue. I will send people to Xue Yue with you and they will declare those things to the public. From now, you don't need to pay tributes to the imperial family of Xue Yue. You and the king of Xue Yue are on equal footing.” said the emperor. He was attributing a special title to Lin Feng and making him a noble in the entire empire. Lin Feng had refused to join the Nine Cloud Swords Sect, the emperor was very happy, so he granted a special title to Lin Feng. He respected Lin Feng, Xue Yue was a country under the jurisdiction of Dragon Mountain so the emperor held the utmost power. Even though he didn't get involved in Xue Yue's

affairs, he could still grant Lin Feng a special title in Xue Yue.

That was a way to protect Lin Feng from everybody else. Nobody could give him any order in Xue Yue, not even the king.

“Thank you.” said Lin Feng. He was now the ruler of Xue Yue, not bad. (Just a typical Tuesday for our Lin Feng)

The crowd was shivering. Lin Feng had become the ruler of Xue Yue, his status was the same as that of the king of Xue Yue.

“Ruler....” whispered Huo Shi Yun... That young man was farther and farther from her. .

“Alright, come down everybody, don’t be shy.” said the emperor. He didn’t look as solemn and respectful as a moment before, he look friendly now. At the same time, he jumped towards Lin Feng and said, “Lin Feng, what do you intend to do now?”

“I am going to go back to Xue Yue.” said Lin Feng. He hadn’t gone back for such a long time, his family and everybody else were probably very worried.

“Alright, I will send Lan Shan with you.” said the emperor. He then turned back to Lan Shan and said, “Lan Shan, the mission is yours!”

“No problem.” said Ruo Lan Shan nodding. He then looked at Lin Feng and said, “Congratulations.”

“Mister, you brought me to Dragon Mountain, thank you.” said Lin Feng extremely politely.

“Don’t call me “mister” anymore, please. I don’t deserve it. You are so strong... Keep up the good work. Jian Chen came back to Dragon Mountain after the competition and is still practicing cultivation, you will all have an incredible future.”

Ruo Lan Shan obeyed to the emperor, Lin Feng was the most dazzling cultivator at the competition so the emperor wanted everything to be perfect for him.

“You’re going back...?” asked Tang You You.

“Yes.” said Lin Feng nodding.

“Oh...” Tang You You forced herself to smile, she was sad. Then she added, “Take care.”

“You too. We will see each other in three months.”

“So you’re not going to stay with us, instead you’re abandoning us...” said Qing Meng Xin smiling. She was crossing her arms on her chest.

Abandoning? Lin Feng smiled wryly and said, “I left Xue Yue a long time ago, I must go back. We will see each other in three

months, alright?”

“You might not pay attention to me anymore then.” joked Qing Meng Xin. Lin Feng smiled wryly and said, “Don’t worry, I will never forget such a beautiful woman.”

“Hehe, you know how to make girl happy...” said Qing Meng Xin in a seducing way.

Behind them was Tang You You’s father and Qing Meng Xin’s teacher, but they didn’t immediately bother them when they saw that they were talking to Lin Feng.

Tang You You’s father had never seen his daughter act so friendly to anyone. Besides, Qing Meng Xin was usually so seductive, no men could resist her. But now Lin Feng could and Qing Meng Xin was his friend. She was friends with the great champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu. Lin Feng wasn’t weak at all.

“Lin Feng, if you have the opportunity, come back to us.” said Jun Mo Xi. The crowd was stupefied, they hadn’t thought that all those geniuses would be such good friends, how incredible.

“I will come for a walk if I have the time.” said Lin Feng. He was sad to leave too. He wasn’t insensitive, they had gone through so much together.

“Get lost.” said someone at that moment. It was a familiar voice

that resonated in Lin Feng's ears. He turned his head and saw someone, a man was trying to force a girl to hug him.

“Huo Shi Yu, don't force me to be even more violent.” said Cui Wu Xin coldly.

“You're done.” said Huo Shi Yun to Cui Wu Xin. Cui Wu Xin was surprised and retorted, while smiling, “I'm done? How could you say that? Are you dreaming? My brother is here, how could anything happen?”

“I'm here.” Cui Wu Xin turned around saw silhouette land next to him. He was even more surprised.

Lin Feng was stronger than his brother Cui Wu Ming.

“Lin Feng.” Cui Wu Ming stuttered. In the past Lin Feng couldn't rival with him, but now he could only look up at him.

“Is he your real brother?” asked Lin Feng, pointing at Cui Wu Xin.

“No, he's not.” said Cui Wu Ming shaking his head.

“Get lost.” said Lin Feng, Cui Wu Ming had no words.

“Lin Feng, I'm taking Cui Wu Xin away, so forget about what happened.”

“No.” said Lin Feng coldly. He then looked at Huo Shi Yun and said, “What do you want me to do to him?”

“You decide.” said Huo Shi Yun while staring at Lin Feng, as if she had forgotten about Cui Wu Xin. In the past Lin Feng had left and she never heard about him again.

“Kacha!” Suddenly a dazzling light that looked like a sun appeared on Cui Wu Xin’s body.

“Nine Sun skill, are you a member of the Huo Clan?!” asked Cui Wu Ming. He didn’t understand.

“Shi Yun is my little sister. How could I not kill him?” said Lin Feng to Cui Wu Ming, he hadn’t realized... He then lowered his head and said, “You’re right.”

“Hmph, you understand, that’s all that matters.” said Lin Feng coldly. Immediately after he rose up in the air.

Huo Shi Yun was surprised. she looked at Lin Feng leaving again. Some tears appeared in her eyes, little sister?

“Jun Mo Xi, help me take care of my little sister.”

Huo Shi Yun looked at Lin Feng and Jun Mo Xi. Jun Mo Xi nodded but Huo Shi Yun seemed like she heard nothing, she just

blankly stared at them. Then Lin Feng left on his beast moving so fast that whistling sounds spread in the air.

Lin Feng had appeared so abruptly and had disappeared again so abruptly.

Huo Jiu Yang sighed, life was intriguing sometimes... Lin Feng had helped them once again, he had helped Huo Shi Yun once again, and he made her cry once again.

Many people were watching Lin Feng leave.

“I have some things to do too. We’ll see each other in three months.” said someone at that moment. Yun Fei Yang then jumped onto a ferocious, wild beast and left. Nobody knew where he was going!

Chapter 693: Tian Qi Layer Battles

Lin Feng was on his beast with three other people: Han Man, Po Jun and Xiao Ya.

“Lin Feng.” said a voice from far away in the distance. Lin Feng stopped, turned his head around and saw a beautiful girl chasing him. He then asked, “You You, what’s wrong?”

“My father told me to offer you this alcohol.” said Tang You You smiling. She stretched her arm and a ring appeared in Lin Feng’s hand.

“Thank you for thinking about me.” said Lin Feng to Tang You You. Her father had told her to come? Improbable, her father didn’t know that Lin Feng loved that alcohol...

“I’m off.” said Lin Feng smiling.

“Oh, alright. Take care and be careful.” said Tang You You nodding. Whistling sounds started again. In a flash, he had disappeared into the horizon.

They were flying one kilometer up in the sky and Lin Feng had sat down cross-legged. He was look in the jade stone ring that You You had given to him. There were many bottles of alcohol, especially Hot Unit.

“I love strong alcohol.” said Han Man. He really liked Hot Unit.

“Come.” said Po Jun raising a bottle. Then they drank together and downed a bottle. They all sensed the alcohol burning in their throat.

Time seemed to pass faster when they were drunk. Qi Qiong was flying above mountains and rivers, they had already left Dragon Mountain.

Lin Feng sobered up as the winds began to blow violently. Han Man and Po Jun were lying down on the back of the winged tiger and their faces were red. They had the feeling that they were burning inside. They couldn't drink as much as Lin Feng!

“Huh?” Lin Feng frowned and shouted furiously, “Who?”

A moment before, he had sensed a hidden energy but it had quickly disappeared again. He was very vigilant suddenly.

“Human earth fusion!” The crowd was stupefied. A moment ago, Lin Feng couldn't have had a hallucination. Someone had managed to escape from Lin Feng's perceptions, which meant that the person had fused together with the Earth. Or it possibly meant that the person's cultivation level was higher than his.

Maybe that person had broken through to the Tian Qi layer and was following him...

“Hehe, that alcohol is not so bad. Following for such a long time

was a good idea.” said a mysterious voice. A huge cloud then appeared a hundred kilometers away, a silhouette emerged out from it.

That person’s Qi was extremely fat and extremely strong. They didn’t look beautiful at all, but he was looking at Lin Feng coldly.

That person was an enemy, not a friend!

“Who are you?” asked Lin Feng sounding furious. It seemed like that person had been following them for a long time but nobody had noticed them.

“I started following you in Mi Cheng, I was in Dragon Mountain with you even, and then I followed you to here. Can you guess who I am?” asked the strong cultivator, releasing an evil Qi and smiling just as evilly. That person didn’t look benevolent at all.

“From Mi Cheng...” Lin Feng was stupefied. He had offended so many people in Mi Cheng, for example the Da Shu clan, or Yu Mo’s teacher or Ling Xiao’s teacher... All those strong cultivators were probably furious.

“I couldn’t kill you there because Mi Cheng is under the control of Shen Gong. I’ve been waiting for you to leave Dragon Mountain. You are so strong already, you can die happy.”

That person slowly took out a blade, that blade looked like blood. It was twinkling with deathly-dark lights. A terrifying blade

energy rose up in the air and surrounded Lin Feng and his friends. The winged tiger had started shaking, that terrifying blade energy was making them suffocate.

“Move back!” said Lin Feng to his friends. The winged tiger flew back. He then unsheathed his bloodthirsty sword, he was going to experience the strength of a Tian Qi layer cultivator.

“You’re audacious. There is a huge difference between the Xuan Qi layer and the Tian Qi layer.” said that person while cutting the air with their blade. It seemed like death was about to catch Lin Feng. Whistling sounds were spreading in the air and moving towards him, it was filled with a brutal and evil energy.

“Sword!” shouted Lin Feng, he couldn’t afford being careless now. He used his level five sword intent which emitted terrifying whistling sounds in the atmosphere.

“Hehe, level five sword intent. You may be better than me, but it is a pity that you have only broken through to the Tian Qi layer... Intent alone doesn’t make you stronger than me.” said the person coldly. His blade was dancing in the air. A terrifying light then appeared. and that light was moving straight for Lin Feng.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. He then condensed all his level five sword intent into his sword. A blood-red light dashed to the skies but it seemed like his sword intent couldn’t compete with the blade energy. It seemed like that blade and the blade intent were in fusion with the earth.

“Crrrr... Crrrrr!” Even though Lin Feng’s intent had reached level five, the intent deployed by the cultivator of the Tian Qi layer could destroy his. Could Lin Feng compete with a cultivator of the Tian Qi layer? Even though his intent was extremely powerful, it couldn’t draw from the same power. Besides, they were in the air and cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer needed to use pure Qi to fly whereas cultivators of the Tian Qi layer could do it freely without strain. It was the same as walking on the ground for them. It seemed like a subtle difference but it actually made a huge difference during battle.

“Get lost!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. Another blood-red light emerged in the air and Lin Feng moved back. Immediately after, Lin Feng saw the blade light descend as gigantic crevice appeared, it was one kilometer long and extremely deep.

“No use. I Xue Tue, love killing geniuses. It’s one of my greatest passions.” said the cultivator with the blade. He continued chasing Lin Feng.

“Kacha!” In the air, thunder was sounding. Blue lightning descended from the sky and then the blade disappeared.

“Thunderbolt intent...” Xue Tu was surprised and then raised his head. He immediately saw a bareback man in the sky who was floating on a sea of thunderbolts.

“You followed him for such a long time and I also followed you for a long time. Lin Feng will make it to the mystical world, do you think that because you’re out of Shen Gong you can kill him? You must want to die!” said Lei Mang furiously. In his head appeared a

gigantic thunderbolt, he looked like a thunder god, brutal and mighty.

“Xue Tu, in Mi Cheng, you’re always crowing like a cock and stealing like a dog, in other words, you always get p to mean and petty tricks, you were able to break through to the Tian Qi layer, that’s already amazing, Now, get ready to die.” Said Lei Mang furiously. He then jumped forwards and a gigantic thunder appeared, terrifying lights and sounds spread in the atmosphere, the entire atmosphere was blue. Thunders kept roaring violently.

Xue Tu’s face looked hideous, his blade kept dancing in the air. He was able to cut through some thunderbolts, but they seemed infinite as they bombarded the entire sky. A thunder crashed onto Xue Tu’s head and blood splashed everywhere.

“Die!” Shouted Lei Mang furiously. His speed was incredible. He had jumped towards Xue Tu, his hands were filled with lightning. Xue Tu was using his blade to resist but it was difficult because the lightning was stronger. Then several more thunderbolts appeared, and in a flash, Xue Tu’s body was entirely black as he fell down in the air.

A cultivator of the Tian Qi layer had just died!

Lin Feng watched and started shaking, those thunderbolts were terrifying. Even though they had broken through to the Tian Qi layer, their strength and intent were on completely different levels.

Chapter 694: Back Home

After killing Xue Tu, Lei Mang, who was actually using a thunder staff, put it back on his shoulder. The thunders disappeared as he turned around to face Lin Feng. He seemed look at him in a friendly manner.

“Thank you.” said Lin Feng nodding. Lin Feng would have died if Lei Mang hadn’t helped.

Lin Feng was actually wondering what sphere of influence Xue Tu belonged. Why had he chased him for such a long time to kill him?

“No need, I am just working for Shen Gong. Since you have accepted to go into the mystical world, Shen Gong must protect you. There’s no need to thank me.” said Lei Mang. “Lin Feng, please continue your journey.”

“Alright.” Lin Feng waited until Qi Qiong arrived next to him and sat back on him. Whistling sounds began spreading in the air again. A moment later, in the distance, there were other cultivators of the Tian Qi layer fighting. His heart was furiously beating.

Lin Feng had left but Lei Mang stayed behind. He remained in the distance. His consciousness had completely enveloped the entire area. Even a speck of grass or an insect couldn’t escape him.

Once Lin Feng left, Lei Mang said, “You’ve been chasing us for

such a long time, just come out now.”

After a small period of silence, two silhouettes came out. Lin Feng hadn't thought that four cultivators of the Tian Qi layer had been following him, three of them wanted to kill him.

“I think you heard what I said earlier.” said Lei Mang aggressively.

The two cultivators of the Tian Qi layer remained silent. A moment before they had seen everything. Lei Mang was extremely strong, he had managed to crush a cultivator of the Tian Qi layer very easily.

“Da Shu Kong, you're the one who sent Xue Tu.... Such things will not happen again. After Lin Feng enters the mystical world, you won't be able to kill him anymore. You will see.”

The two cultivators didn't look resigned to give up. Yu Mo had been killed by Lin Feng, then Miss Da Shu had been killed because of Lin Feng too. They were furious. They had come so far to kill Lin Feng but they hadn't realized that Shen Gong had sent people to protect him.

“Then it's fine if we don't touch Lin Feng until after he enters the mystical area?” said Da Shu Kong coldly.

“What? It doesn't matter, Lin Feng must live. I don't want to see you anymore.” said Lei Mang waving.

Yu Mo's teacher and Da Shu Kong's eyes were twinkling. They couldn't come out and they could kill Lin Feng before he entered the mystical world. They had to pay attention to those rules.

.....

Lin Feng obviously didn't know that two more cultivators of the Tian Qi layer had been following him. After having broken through to the Tian Qi layer, when in fusion with the earth, cultivators didn't release a single iota of Qi. Plus they could fly from extreme heights. Lin Feng's cultivation level was inferior to theirs. Even though his senses were extremely acute, he still couldn't sense them.

But with Han Man, Po Jun and Xiao Ya, Lin Feng wasn't going to be bored. He could always teach Han Man some cultivation tips. He could also practice his wind skill, there was plenty to do.

Finally, some tall buildings began appearing from beneath them. The Qi in the atmosphere was familiar, Lin Feng felt like he could finally relax.

"We've arrived." when Lin Feng saw that place, he smiled resplendently, he looked like a little ray of sunshine.

"Go down." said Lin Feng and immediately after the winged tiger nosedived. Under them was the Lovesickness Forest.

People who were walking on the main road of the Imperial City were surprised to see such a ferocious, wild beast in the air.

It was a red, ancient, ferocious animal. They were flying so fast that the crowd couldn't even follow them with their eyes.

“What kind of beast is that? Its Qi is scary.” thought many people watching that red beast in the sky. That Qi was a Xuan level Qi. Besides, that beast looked extremely ferocious. It was a level three Xuan beast but it was actually much stronger than ordinary beasts of the same level.

“It's red like fire, it looks like a winged tiger.” whispered some people. Many of the others were surprised when they heard those whispers, a winged tiger?

“Such a long time had passed, the Great Competition of Xue Yu must be over now. I wonder who won... And I wonder if people from Xue Yue took any high rankings. Did Lin Feng come back? I think that was Lin Feng's winged tiger.” thought some people in the crowd.

Had Lin Feng finished the competition? What was his ranking? What was his cultivation level like? Had he made progress?

What about Yue Tian Ming, Wu Qing and the others? They were wondering about Lin Feng's ranking and especially about Duan Wu Dao, he was the best of the eight high-officials. Duan Wu Dao was the crown prince, he was extremely violent and aggressive. Had he dazzled?

The crowd was eager to know about their rankings. The news hadn't spread in the Imperial City of Xue Yue yet. The Yu Clan had already come back, as well as the Wan Shou Sect, but nobody had shown themselves.

Apart from the two geniuses of the Yu Clan, there was Wu Qing... They probably hadn't finished amongst the best geniuses at the competition, otherwise their sect and clan wouldn't have hidden away.

Lin Feng had no idea that so many people were wondering how he did. He was only thinking about going back to the Lovesickness Forest.

There were several silhouettes in white clothes who immediately rose up in the air and blocked the way the moment when the winged tiger flew over the Lovesickness Forest. But very quickly, they were all surprised.

“Master, you came back.”

“I did.” said Lin Feng joyfully. He moved forwards and jumped off the back of the winged tiger and onto the ground.

He then looked around, he could see and sense everything with his incredible consciousness.

He slowly walked forwards in skillful and agile way. He wasn't

emitting any sound at all. In the secret area of the Lovesickness Forest, he could only hear the rustling sounds of the leaves.

He then arrived next to a huge tree. In the distance were some familiar huts and lodge cabins. At the foot of one tree with a cabin lodge was a silhouette. That person was carving something, it was a middle-aged man. In the distance, there were two other people, women playing chess.

They looked calm and serene, it was a beautiful scene.

It seemed like Lin Hai had sensed something, he turned his head and saw Lin Feng.

“Little Lin Feng...” whispered Lin Hai. Yue Meng He and Meng Qing were shocked, they slowly raised their heads to see an outstanding-looking young man.

“Little Lin Feng...” whispered Yue Meng He, she immediately stood up.

Meng Qing also slowly walked a distance of a hundred meters. She stopped not far from Lin Feng

Yue Meng He and Lin Hai were behind and also stopped walking. They looked at each other and giggled.

Lin Feng saw those three people and smiled back just as cheery.

Meng Qing lowered her head, she looked cute and tender. She then raised her head again, she looked pure and holy. Her smile was moving and touching. Everything around her seemed nonexistent, even colorless.

“You came back.” said Meng Qing. She had always been with Lin Feng since the Black Wing forest, she had never been away from him until he left for the tournament. She had never thought that her relationship with Lin Feng would be so intense.

Chapter 695: Passionate Fusion

The wind was brushing against their skin, it seemed like time had stopped. Lin Feng was smiling. He nodded and said, “Yes, I came back.”

He slowly walked forwards and grabbed Meng Qing’s hand. He looked very calm, serene and peaceful. There was no need for words.

He walked towards Lin Hai and Yue Meng He and said, “Father, Mother.”

Lin Hai and Yue Meng He smiled, they felt gratified. Lin Hai kept nodding and said, “Good, good.”

Lin Feng had really changed, he didn’t look immature anymore. It seemed like he had completely grown up. His thin body looked like a sword. His pitch-black pupils looked deep and mysterious, almost unfathomable or enigmatic

“Little Lin Feng, you must be tired.” said Yue Meng He sounding like a caring and gentle mother. Lin Feng wasn’t even twenty years old, no matter how strong her son was, no matter how mature he was, he would always remember her little baby.

“Little Lin Feng, how was the competition?” asked Lin Hai. Many times, Yue Meng He had wanted to go to Mi Cheng but Lin Hai had prevented her from going. Lin Feng had to face his destiny by himself. He had to face death and dangers alone, with his own

abilities.

“Don’t harass him immediately! I will make you some tea Little Lin Feng. You need to have a rest.” said Yue Meng He glancing at Lin Hai who smiled wryly. Men and women were different.

“Mother, father, I finished first at the Great Competition of Xue Yu.” said Lin Feng with a magnificent smile on his face. Yue Meng He and Lin Hai turned around and looked at him, first?

Lin Hai was shivered. Lin Feng had finished first?

“Really?” Lin Hai couldn’t believe it!

“Father, have I ever lied to you?” asked Lin Feng. Lin Hai was clenching his fists, emitting some small cracking sounds. He obviously knew what the Great Competition of Xue Yue was like, there were thirteen countries, four empires, many geniuses, especially those from other empires. Those geniuses were all incredible and terrifying.

He could remember twenty years before, when he had participated at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. He was very young back then but he hadn’t managed to finish in the top ten even. Only Duan Ren Huan had managed to finish in the top ten and he had astonished Xue Yue. Since then, everybody knew Duan Ren Huang. He had lots of influence in the country even though he was not the monarch,

Lin Feng used to be called a piece of trash by everybody when he was younger.. But now he had finished first at the Great Competition of Xue Yue. He wasn't the best of Xue Yue but the best of Xue Yu! He had defeated all the other geniuses, what a dazzling and incredible young man.

“Uncle, brother defeated everybody. He really finished first, he can now despise everybody.” said a clear and melodious voice. A silhouette appeared and it was a little girl. Lin Hai and Yue Meng suddenly looked cold, who was that person calling Lin Feng brother?!

But Lin Hai was even more surprised by Lin Feng's ranking at the competition though.

“Alright, alright, alright.” said Lin Hai at that moment. His face was red, he kept nodding unceasingly. He then asked, “Little Lin Feng, tell me how you did it.”

Lin Hai pushed against Lin Feng's shoulders, seemingly challenging Lin Feng. He just looked at his father in a deep and meaningful way.

“What are you doing?” asked Yue Meng He glaring at Lin Hai, but she was still smiling in a soft and tender way. Lin Feng had just come back, she was extremely happy. And on top of that Lin Feng had brought such wonderful news back with him.

“Little Lin Feng, who is that little girl?”

“Mother, some extremely strong people tried to kill me in Dragon Mountain. Her name is Xiao Ya and her grandfather saved me. I was about to die, then her grandfather suddenly left as I was healing, so I kept her with me. We call each other brother and little sister.” explained Lin Feng. “Those are my friends, we met at the Yun Hai Sect a few years ago, they are Han Man and Po Jun.”

“Lin Feng, brother, Po Jun and I won’t bother you for now. You should spend some time with your family. We’re going to get some drinks.” said Han Man. Immediately after, he and Po Jun turned around and started leaving. Yue Meng He glanced at the girls in white, there was alcohol in the Lovesickness Forest...

At the same time, Lin Hai and Yue Meng He were calmly listening to Lin Feng, but they knew perfectly well that it had been a terrible and tiring journey for him. He had probably faced terrible dangers. He had finished first which also meant that he had benefitted from great things, he had also fought some battles to death.

“Brother, is that my sister-in-law? She’s so beautiful, she’s the most beautiful girl I’ve ever seen.” said Xiao Ya giggling and looking at Meng Qing.

Meng Qing glanced at Xiao Ya and smiled. She then glanced at Lin Feng softly.

“Uncles and aunties, Lin Feng went through incredible hardships. I saw everything and I can tell you everything.” said Xiao Ya as if she could read Lin Hai and Yue Meng He’s thoughts.

“Alright. Tell us.” said Yue Meng He in a gentle way, caressing Xiao Ya’s head. They liked cute and smart little girls. She looked pure and innocent, how adorable.

“Little Lin Feng, Meng Qing has been waiting for you for such a long time... Spend some time with her.” said Yue Meng He smiling at Lin Feng. Xiao Ya also glanced at Lin Feng. She looked even happier than Lin Feng.

Lin Feng shook his head and smiled wryly... That little girl....

“Alright, mother, father, if you need me, just come.” said Lin Feng, nodding to his parents. And then he left with Meng Qing. In the middle of the restricted area of the Lovesickness Forest, there was a simple manor. Inside of that manor were emerald bamboos and with their leaves gently rustling.

Lin Feng and Meng Qing arrived in a small courtyard of the manor and lied down on a bamboo bed. The wind was brushing against their skin still. It seemed like breathing was even easier then.

“Father and mother are really happy here.” said Lin Feng smiling. That manor looked like a small and isolated world, there was only the sound of the wind there and nothing else. It had been built especially for Meng Qing.

Meng Qing also lied down and looked at the bamboo trees and their leaves.

Lin Feng turned his head and looked at Meng Qing's face, which was so close to his. His heart was pounding, she looked pure, holy and beautiful. She was a part of Lin Feng's world.

Lin Feng stretched his hands and caressed her face. He could sense Meng Qing's skin under his fingers, he was going insane. His face turned red, Meng Qing's beautiful eyes were twinkling. She could hear Lin Feng's breathing.

Lin Feng kept touching her, he could sense every part of her body and clothes. Then he started touching her with even more ardor, feeling her warmth.

Her skin was getting hotter and hotter. Lin Feng could smell her sweet perfume. He was touching her sometimes quickly sometimes slowly. It seemed like he wanted to become one with Meng Qing.

He was touching her everywhere. He even caressed her breasts, they were so soft. Meng Qing seemed so fragile at that moment.

However, when Lin Feng couldn't resist anymore once he touched her breasts. He needed more, he was trying to remain clear-headed but it was difficult. His blood was boiling.

"Ohhh..." Meng Qing was moaning, it made Lin Feng feel even hotter, like a beast. Meng Qing slowly closed her eyes and let Lin Feng touch her. She was just enjoying it.

She had always considered herself as Lin Feng's woman. As in the

past, she still wasn't mature but Lin Feng needed sex so she was willing to abandon her innocence to him because she loved him deeply.

Chapter 696: Like A Dream

In the calm and peaceful bamboo forest, the wind was brushing. The feeling on one's skin was pleasant and refreshing.

The bamboo bed in the middle of the forest was emitting some cracking sounds and was swinging. Lin Feng's eyes were filled with ardor and passion. He was kissing Meng Qing passionately, not just her mouth but her entire body. Her body looked so pure and beautiful. She was under Lin Feng at that moment, Lin Feng was on top. Her face was red as Lin Feng's fingers were moving all over her body. Her chest was bouncing, she looked intoxicated. She had no more strength in her body.

Even for a strong cultivator, that was a very intriguing yet wonderful feeling. It was enchanting, making love was a wonderful thing, especially with someone you loved.

Lin Feng was committing something outrageous but Meng Qing had submitted herself and enjoyed it incredibly.

Lin Feng was also enjoying it, he kept kissing Meng Qing's face, her skin, her breasts... He loved every corner of her skin.

"Lin Feng!" Meng Qing moaned and cried out his name. Lin Feng put his head between her breasts.

After a long time, Lin Feng raised his head again and looked at Meng Qing. She looked like a goddess, her face was red and incredibly ravishing. Everything seemed so insignificant after

seeing such a beautiful woman. She looked like a celestial being.

Lin Feng put his hands on Meng Qing's face, she opened her eyes, those eyes were bewitching. The expression in her eyes looked deep and meaningful. Her eyes twinkled more than the stars, they were filled with a profound love for Lin Feng.

“Meng Qing...” said Lin Feng gently. Meng Qing smiled and hugged Lin Feng, he was still on her so she put him aside.

They just kept staring at each other in silence.

“Ahhhh....” It was like a dream for them, they were both moaning and sighing. Their sounds kept resonating in the atmosphere of the bamboo forest. They were hugging so tight that it seemed like they had merged together. Their hearts were absolutely connected, their souls were connected.

Lin Feng looked at her beautiful smile, she looked extremely delighted. He then kissed her forehead and caressed her body. He was touching her in such a warm and gentle way as if he had been scared to hurt her. His blood was still boiling. Both of them actually felt very hot, they had both forgotten everything that was around them. They both forgot everything, they were just together with each other.

The landscape was beautiful, the scene was beautiful, they were both beautiful people. That kind of lust was beautiful too.

.....

Far away from the bamboo forest, three silhouettes were sitting. Lin Hai, Yue Meng He and Xiao Ya were talking. Xiao Ya was telling them Lin Feng's adventures at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. The parents were calmly listening, not daring to interrupt her.

The scene was funny, a middle-aged couple listening to a young girl tell a story, and they were listening to her so seriously.

Lin Hai and Yue Meng He were excited, the Great Competition of Xue Yu was already finished and Lin Feng was the champion. They somehow had the feeling that they were there, observing it. They had the feeling that they were watching their own little boy fighting on the fighting stage at the Great Competition of Xue Yu.

“Then he broke the eight sealed doors using a black fire lotus. Then he used his evil body to attack Duan Wu Dao, they were both injured then. Duan Wu Dao's soul was injured while Lin Feng had used all his pure Qi. However, Duan Wu Dao could still fight. He had thought that Lin Feng had lost, but then Lin Feng's eight-headed dragon came out and to swallow Duan Wu Dao.”

“Eight heads! Out of the nine heads of the final form, Lin Feng already possessed eight of them...” Lin Hai and Yue Meng He were glancing at each other speechless.

“Duan Wu Dao couldn't resist, he used a pill to cure his injuries. However, my grandpa also gave Lin Feng some pure healing pills, using only one enables a cultivator to refill all their pure Qi. Lin

Feng used one and then unsheathed a red sword, that looked red like blood. Step by step, his terrifying sword Qi was lacerating the atmosphere. And then his sword Qi surrounded everybody and we were all suffocating, it also seemed to have hurt Duan Wu Dao's heart,. In the end, Duan Wu Dao had no more vitality and gave up the fight. He couldn't block Lin Feng's attacks so he forfeited. That is how Lin Feng finished first!"

"The first one..." thought Yu Meng He and Lin Hai. They were extremely proud, they felt like that glory also belonged to them to a certain extent. So many people had despised their son, even at the competition. So many people had been sure that they would defeat him, but in the end he had finished first. He had won, he was a champion.

The champion was there son, Lin Feng was a dazzling cultivator and his parents couldn't be more proud of him.

"Uncle, auntie, there's more! Many people appeared, and they were all extremely strong cultivators. They had tried to stop the people of Shen Gong. There were people from the East Sea Dragon Palace, it is said that they are overlords in the East Sea Empire, an empire of medium quality. There was also the Nine Cloud Swords Sect, the Jade Heaven Imperial Family and the Necropolis Sect. They were all cultivators of the Tian Qi layer with only one goal, they wanted Lin Feng to join them. They tempted Lin Feng with Tian level skills and techniques to join them." said Xiao Ya sounding prouder and prouder. She was extremely excited to tell the story.

"East Sea Dragon Palace... East Sea, empire of middle quality..."

The Nine Cloud Swords Sect, the Heaven Jade Imperial Family, the Necropolis Sect... They all wanted Lin Feng to join them and had even proposed to give him Tian level skills and techniques.” Lin Hai and Yue Meng He were astonished. They were both geniuses in Xue Yue but they hadn’t reached such a level... They were realizing that Lin Feng’s future was going to be incredible. They were just realizing that their son had already surpassed them.

“And what did Lin Feng decide to do? Who is he going to join?” asked Lin Hai.

“Guess.” said Xiao Ya smiling. She was purposely maintaining the suspense.

“Shen Gong.” guessed Lin Hai. With his temperament, Lin Feng couldn’t betray Shen Gong, after all they had done for him at the competition.

“Almost. He actually refused everything, he just accepted to do one thing for Shen Gong.”

“He refused everything?!” Yue Meng He and Lin Hai sighed. They were shaking their heads and smiling wryly... Their son was extremely strong, what a pity that he was so stubborn.

He had refused to join the East Sea Dragon Palace, the Nine Cloud Swords Sect, the Jade Heaven Imperial Family... He had surprisingly refused all of them. So many geniuses could only dream of joining such incredible spheres of influence... But their son had refused them all because he was stubborn and determined

to do everything by his own means. Without his willpower and determination though, Lin Feng would have never become so strong.

They were all talking together while the sun was setting. They were all happily chatting about Lin Feng.

“Xiao Ya, we will sleep in the same bed tonight.” said Yue Meng He when she saw that it was getting dark. She was smiling and caressing Xiao Ya’s head.

“Alright, auntie.” said Xiao Ya nodding like a good child. She then left with Yue Meng He. Lin Hai continued looking at his carving.

.....

In the middle of the bamboo forest, Lin Feng and Meng Qing were lying together and hugging each other. Lin Feng was looking at her perfect body and smiling.

After having made love so many times, Meng Qing felt extremely relaxed and happy, one could see it on her face. It actually felt a bit painful down there but she was happy, she would never forget that day. She was hugging Lin Feng very tightly He divine-looking face was different now that she had lost her virginity...

Both of them remained silent, they didn’t need to talk, they could feel what the other was thinking. Their souls were connected, in a

perfectly calm and relaxed way. Then they both fell asleep... And both slept sound all night, forgetting everything else.

Chapter 697: People from the Empire

At dusk, rays of sunlight were passing through the thick and dense forest of bamboo trees.

At that moment, someone was sitting cross-legged on the ground. Lin Feng had his eyes closed and he was practicing cultivation.

Behind Lin Feng, not so far away was a beautiful woman. She was sitting on a bamboo rocking-chair and was swinging slowly. She looked pure and holy with a resplendent smile on her face. Meng Qing's neck was filled with spring moon jade stones, Lin Feng had given them to her. Even though she didn't need so many, she was very happy to have them.

Lin Feng was releasing a terrifying cold Qi which had enveloped his body. His incredibly strong cosmos-burning skill was burning around him. Surprisingly, a strong ice Qi was still enveloping his body.

Lin Feng moved his hands and a terrifying fire started burning and merging with the ice. Just like Lin Feng and Meng Qing had merged together when they had made love. Then, the ice slowly melted in that fire.

After a long time, Lin Feng released a terrifying energy and absorbed all the fire. His Qi had become stronger.

Lin Feng opened his eyes and stood up. He turned around to look at Meng Qing and asked, "What's going on?"

After having made love with Meng Qing, an ice-pearl had appeared in his body. That ice-pearl contained a terrifying ice energy. So he used it to practice cultivation, he could use it to transform his pure Qi. It had increased his speed in condensing pure Qi. When the pure Qi couldn't become stronger than that the ice pearl also become weaker. Lin Feng's body was very intriguing.

Meng Qing smiled but did explain anything. Lin Feng didn't ask about it again, he just looked at her and said, "Let's go for a walk."

"Alright, you have to see Xin Ye." said Meng Qing. "When you weren't here, Xin Ye came a few times to have fun with us. She misses you alot and it seems she lost some weight too."

Lin Feng smiled, he hadn't thought that Meng Qing would be so nice. She had seen Xin Ye a few times and they had become close friends. If they were both good friends Lin Feng would be happy.

.....

At the same time in another corner of the Imperial City, there was a huge group of people.

The guards of the Imperial City of Xue Yue were stupefied. They were just looking at those silhouettes riding terrifying, ferocious wild beasts. They all looked so scary that people shivered, some had even stumbled and almost fell when they saw those things.

“Very strong Xuan level beasts.” thought some people when they saw those beasts getting closer and closer. Everybody in the Imperial City was raising their heads and looking at that group of people. “What’s going on?” thought the crowd shivering. There were ten terrifying Xuan level beasts blotting out the sky and covering up the earth.

“We need to inform someone.” thought the shaking crowd.

“No need.” said someone else. Immediately after, a strong wind blew over them that nearly knocked them all down. Those black silhouettes in the sky were becoming more and more distinct. They didn’t need to inform anyone because everyone could see them already.

A few people in black chang paos suddenly rose up in the air and encircled the city.

“We are the Imperial Dragon Guards, who are you and why did you come to Xue Yue?” asked a person, that voice was incredible. The crowd was looking at that person who was talking. The Imperial Dragon Guards were cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer, they already considered as extremely strong cultivators in Xue Yue. They had become a mysterious sphere of influence in the country, but at that moment the Imperial Dragon Guards were feeling inferior. Those people who had come were much stronger than them.

They were extremely nervous.

“Don’t worry, we won’t be here for a long time. I am Ruo Lan Shan from Dragon Mountain, the emperor of Dragon Mountain ordered me to come and grant someone the title of ruler of Xue Yue.” said Ruo Lan Shan slowly. Behind Ruo Lan Shan a group of beautiful women took out some baskets, in which there were tulip petals. They then threw them around and the petals flew off in the wind, accompanying Ruo Lan Shan’s words.

That group of extremely strong cultivators were from Dragon Mountain. They had been sent by the emperor of Dragon Mountain.

“Ruler of Xue Yue...” The crowd at the bottom was astonished, ruler...? Someone was going to become ruler of Xue Yue...?

“Can I ask you who is going to become ruler of Xue Yue?” asked the Imperial Dragon Guard. His chest was bouncing back and forth, those people from Dragon Mountain hadn’t come to cause troubles! Instead, they had come to grant somebody the title of Ruler of Xue Yue, how incredible! The ruler of Xue Yue would then have the same power as the king of Xue Yue.

“A genius from Xue Yue who dazzled at the Great Competition of Xue Yu and had finished first. It is an honor for our empire, therefore, he is going to become the ruler of Xue Yue.” said Ruo Lan Shan smiling. The crowd was stunned, a genius from Xue Yue had finished first at the Great Competition of Xue Yu?!

They were all stunned. They had already thought that being the strongest person of Xue Yue and being able to participate at the Great Competition of Xue Yu was exceptional...they had even

thought that finishing in the top ten was incredible and an honor for their country... But finishing first was absolutely amazing, they couldn't believe it.

Surprisingly, someone from Xue Yue had finished first at the competition...

“Who? The crown prince Duan Wu Dao?” asked some people in the crowd. Their heads were spinning, there were thirteen countries in Xue Yue and Xue Yue was such a tiny little country... Under the jurisdiction of an empire... Surprisingly, someone from their country had won and was the champion of the competition, how was that possible? They couldn't believe it.

But the ambassador from Dragon Mountain only smiled and kept flying amongst the tulip petals in the sky. That thing was real, it was a miracle for Xue Yue.

The news spread in the city very quickly, everybody suddenly knew about it.

A genius from Xue Yue was the champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu... The ambassador from Dragon Mountain had even come to grant that champion the title of ruler of Xue Yue.

“We're going to inform the Imperial City family, please wait a moment.” said two of the Imperial Dragon Guards, they were very surprised. They glanced at each other and then moved back towards the Imperial Palace. If someone from Xue Yue had won the Great Competition of Xue Yu, it would have to be Duan Wu Dao

the crown prince. They were, of course not going to prevent those people from coming into the city anymore.

The crown prince was definitely going to become the Ruler of Xue Yue.

Being the champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu was really an incredible thing.

The tulip petals kept flying in the air. Ruo Lan Shan and the others slowed down and moved towards the Imperial Palace. They weren't moving so fast as if they had wanted to show to everybody that they were there. They wanted everybody to know that Lin Feng was going to become the ruler of Xue Yue.

People were following and looking at the crowd in the sky. How could they miss such an incredible thing? It was a miracle in the history of Xue Yue. Duan Wu Dao had won the Great Competition of Xue Yu and was going to become the ruler of Xue Yue.

At that moment, they didn't know that the new ruler of Xue Yue wasn't going to be Duan Wu Dao and instead, it was Lin Feng, who was in the Lovesickness Forest with his parents.

Lin Feng also didn't know that those people from Dragon Mountain had come.

Chapter 698: Ruler

The tulip petals kept flying in the wind and an incredible quantity of petals had already began to pile on the ground of the city.

The people from Dragon Mountain then stopped outside of the highest building of the Imperial Palace and landed on a huge field.

People from the Imperial Palace who were in the distance looked solemn and respectful, those people from Dragon Mountain looked imposing and domineering. They were all wondering what was happening when the people from Dragon Mountain had stopped, they mustn't be enemies who were going to attack. Tulip petals kept flying in the wind.

"I am the ambassador from Dragon Mountain to Xue Yue, I am Ruo Lan Shan. The emperor has sent us here to grant someone the title of ruler of Xue Yue. We would to inform the king of Xue Yue." said Ruo Lan Shan, looking at those people from the Imperial Palace. In a flash, a loud voice spread in the air that could be heard everywhere in the palace.

People from Dragon Mountain had come to grant someone the title of ruler of Xue Yue?

The people who were inside the Imperial Palace of Xue Yue were all astonished, someone was going to become the ruler of Xue Yue...?

Of course, some people had already heard the news. The champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu was going to become the ruler of Xue Yue.

People were getting agitated in the Imperial Palace. Many were coming out and looking at those people outside on the field and in the air.

At the same time, people from the Imperial City were also rushing over to the palace and gathering there. Many people had thought that Duan Wu Dao won the competition and was going to become the ruler of Xue Yue. They wanted to see that important event in the history of Xue Yue. Besides, the crown prince was extremely strong, with him Xue Yue would become an incredibly strong country.

After a short while, two silhouettes appeared in the distance. Behind them was a group of people who all had spears in their hands, their eyes were twinkling with sharp lights. Their Qi was also extremely powerful.

“Duan Wu Ya, the second prince!” The crowd could recognize Duan Wu Ya. Then, they also recognized the other person next to him, it was the king of Xue Yue.

“Huh?” The crowd was a bit surprised when they saw a middle-aged man wearing a gray chang pao. He didn’t look like the king of Xue Yue, his skin was as white as that of a woman and he looked effeminate. It was as if they had never seen the king before, was it really him?

According to the rumors, the king of Xue Yue was always hiding and had never made inquiries about the country he reigned over. Duan Wu Dao and Duan Wu Ya were in charge of managing the country. It seemed like this time, everything was true. However, in people's hearts the true king was still the one who had astonished the entire country twenty years before, Duan Ren Huang.

A short moment after, the middle-aged man in the gray chang pao and Duan Wu Ya arrived in front of Ruo Lan Shan. Ruo Lan Shan and the middle-aged man in gray clothes smiled back at each other respectfully.

“Ruo Lan Shan, ambassador from Dragon Mountain, you came from so far. I had to greet you in person in fear of being impolite.”

“I came here to grant someone with the title of Ruler of Xue Yue. Otherwise, I wouldn't have dared come and disturb the king.” said Ruo Lan Shan politely. “This time I had to ask for the king's audience.”

“Alright.” said the king nodding. “Who is going to become the Ruler of Xue Yue?”

“Doesn't he know the answer?” wondered the crowd looking back at the king of Xue Yue. He was the king, didn't he know the result of the Great Competition of Xue Yue? From his smile, he had to be Duan Ren Huang.

“First, I would like to congratulate Xue Yue. You gave birth to

two incredible geniuses who finished first and second at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. Dragon Mountain is proud of them.” said Ruo Lan Shan, he then waved and many people took out some goods and put them in front of the king.

“Those are presents for Xue Yue, I hope you like them.”

Duan Wu Ya unpacked the presents as the crowd got over there surprise from before, when Ruo Lan Shan had said two geniuses from Xue Yue had finished both first and second at the Great Competition of Xue Yu?! Duan Wu Dao was the champion... And who was the second one?

Could it be the second high-official Yue Tian Ming? But Yue Tian Ming wasn't strong enough to finish second at the competition..

“First, I would like congratulate Duan Wu Dao for having finished second at the Great Competition of Xue Yu, he was astonishing.” said Ruo Lan Shan, the crowd was stunned again! They were wrong, they had all thought that Duan Wu Dao had finished first!

Duan Wu Dao had finished second but who was stronger than him in Xue Yue!? The crowd couldn't believe what they had just heard.

“Then, I would like to congratulate another incredible genius from Xue Yue, he is not even twenty yet and he astonished everybody up until the very end, and then he finished first. He is the very champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu, he is

extremely strong and he is the glory of our empire of Xue Yu. Dragon Mountain would like to grant him the title of Ruler of Xue Yue and his name is Lin Feng.” said Ruo Lan Shan. People thought that their brains were going to explode. They slowly remembered Lin Feng whose image appeared in their head again. Lin Feng... Lin Feng had won...

They obviously all knew Lin Feng, everybody in Xue Yue knew him. They could still remember all the times he had shown his strength. However, the crowd had never thought that as young as he was, he would become the champion of the competition. They had never thought that he would become the most astonishing cultivator in Xue Yu.

Duan Wu Dao had finished second which meant that Lin Feng had defeated Duan Wu Dao... Lin Feng was really monstrously strong.

“Your Highness, do you know where Lin Feng is? Let’s go and find him together.” said Ruo Lan Shan smiling. The crowd was becoming clear-headed again.

“Alright. Lin Feng must be in the Lovesickness Forest, let’s go together.” said the king.

“No need.” said a voice. People looked in the direction where the voice had come from and saw a young man in the sky. He looked clean and outstanding. He looked more and more brilliant each time they saw him. His eyes were deep and profound. His Qi had changed from before.

Lin Feng had changed a lot, it seemed.

Lin Feng had come out of the Lovesickness Forest because he wanted to go and see Duan Xin Ye. He hadn't thought that he would run into Ruo Lan Shan.

“Lin Feng, very good, you're here.” said Ruo Lan Shan smiling. “Lin Feng, the emperor asked me to come. Now I would like to confer you the title of Ruler of Xue Yue in front of everybody, including the King of Xue Yue. You now have the same power as the King of Xue Yue.”

Ruo Lan Shan then waved his hand and a group of people moved towards Lin Feng.

Everybody was looking at him with respect, Lin Feng had a status which was as powerful as that of the king..

“Congratulations, Lin Feng.” said the King smiling at Lin Feng. He looked free and unrestrained, it didn't seem to bother him to have someone with the same power as him in Xue Yue.

Lin Feng nodded back at him, he didn't look scared or respectful, he wasn't a young man from the Imperial Palace. After Shen Gong, after having seen the cultivators of the Tian Qi layer from the East Sea Dragon Palace, the Nine Cloud Swords Sect, the Jade Heaven Imperial Family and the Necropolis, Lin Feng didn't feel anything particular facing the king of Xue Yue. Besides, he was now as powerful as the king.

Lin Feng was the new ruler of Xue Yue along with the king.

“Thank you. Since the king is here, I would like to say that I would like to get married with Princess Xin Ye, with whom I love. I hope that you will accept.”

Lin Feng had become the ruler of Xue Yue and was proposing a marriage alliance with the princess, asking the king for her hand in front of everybody else.

The king and Lin Feng looked at each other, it seemed like some sharp Qi was colliding in the air.

Chapter 699: Acceptance

Everybody remained silent, they watched Lin Feng and the king stare down each other. They didn't know what to think. Back then, Lin Feng had astonished them under the moonlight of the Xiangjiang lake. Now, he was facing the king who was as powerful as him. He was now the ruler of Xue Yue.

Duan Wu Ya was on the king's side. Back then he had said to Lin Feng that in order to get married with Duan Xin Ye, he had to finish in the top nine. And then in the future, he had to defeat Duan Wu Dao. Only then he would accept. However, now Lin Feng had already accomplished all those things and had even finished first at the Great Competition of Xue Yu. He had come back to Xue Yue as a glorious hero and had become the ruler of Xue Yue. If Lin Feng wanted to get married with Duan Xin Ye, who could refuse? Duan Wu Ya had no reason to do so either.

Lin Feng hadn't even glanced at Duan Wu Ya. Since the beginning, he knew how Duan Wu Ya was and now he didn't care about him anymore. He had become the ruler of Xue Yue and Duan Wu Ya was the second prince, Lin Feng's status was higher than that of Duan Wu Ya so did he need to look at him?

"Hmph." At that moment, someone groaned coldly and a person in a gray chang pao appeared. That person was coldly staring at Lin Feng. It was She Huan, one of the Imperial Dragon Guards and he was She Qiong's father. Lin Feng had already seen him in the past. He had tried to kill Lin Feng in the past but Lin Feng was becoming stronger.

“You tiny little insect, do you think that you’ve become a phoenix? You are no match for Xin Ye. She’s a princess.” said She Huan in an extremely cold way, he looked evil. Lin Feng had become the ruler of Xue Yue, how abominable!

Lin Feng slowly turned around and looked at She Huan. His eyes were twinkling with sharp lights, as sharp as swords. She Huan had the feeling that he was being stabbed.

“What do you want? Shut your filthy mouth now. I am the ruler of Xue Yue now, how dare you gesticulate in front of me? Do you want to die?” said Lin Feng extremely aggressively. In a flash, he released a terrifying sword energy which enveloped She Huan’s body. She Huan’s face turned deathly pale, he was sweating cold beads and could barely breathe.

“How dare you!” shouted She Huan furiously. He hadn’t thought that Lin Feng would be so brutal and violent. Besides, he was realizing that Lin Feng was the champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu and that he had become monstrously strong. In his memories, Lin Feng was still weak.

“Die!” Lin Feng ignored him and shouted furiously. A terrifying “die” word appeared in the air, a terrifying sword energy emerged at the same time and lacerated the atmosphere.

The sword energy then turned into a terrifying sword.

She Qiong looked deathly pale, his face contained no blood anymore. Would Lin Feng kill him?

“Crrr crrrr...” The massive amount of sword energy crashed onto his body. He was so much weaker than Lin Feng. Lin Feng could kill him from kilometers away, could She Huan compete with him? She Huan couldn’t even resist, Lin Feng didn’t even need to move his hands to kill him. In a flash, She Huan was dead.

The sword Qi disappeared and Lin Feng moved back to his initial position. He looked calm and serene as if nothing had happened. The crowd was astonished and their hearts were pounding at full speed. Lin Feng had become so scary.

Becoming the champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu wasn’t easy... Lin Feng had become a hundred times stronger than before the competition.

Lin Feng had become the ruler of Xue Yue, an officer of the Imperial Snow Dragon Guards couldn’t rival with him anymore. She Huan had overestimated himself. Lin Feng considered as an insect but he died with a breath of effort.

The king and Duan Wu Ya looked emotionless. She Huan had died and they didn’t care at all, in fact, they actually hadn’t cared. They didn’t control the Imperial Snow Dragon Guards, Duan Wu Ya had always dreamt of becoming their leader but had never managed to do so.

Then the king of Xue Yue smiled at Lin Feng in a resplendent way and said, “Lin Feng, now you are the ruler of Xue Yue, you can of course marry Xin Ye. Just choose a date for the wedding. Wu Ya

will help organize everything. I hope that you will take care of Xin Ye.” said the king. The crowd was speechless, the king had accepted... Xin Ye and Lin Feng were going to be married.

Of course, if one person could get married with Duan Xin Ye, it had to be Lin Feng. He was the champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu, everybody knew him. And he was the ruler of Xue Yue. If Lin Feng couldn't get married with the princess, who could? The crowd thought that the king accepted only because of Lin Feng's new social status though, ruler of Xue Yue. They had the same power in the country now.

In any case, the king hadn't thought about it too much, he immediately accepted Lin Feng's request.

She Huan had died for nothing, he had just courted death and Lin Feng had helped him achieve his aim.

“Thank you.” said Lin Feng bowing in front of the king. The king would become Lin Feng's father-in-law, he had to be polite to him.

“Hehe, congratulations Lin Feng. You came back as a hero and you are now the ruler of Xue Yue. Now you will get married with a beautiful woman, I, Ruo Lan Shan will definitely come to the wedding for a few drinks.” said Ruo Lan Shan smiling merrily. He had already seen how close Duan Xin Ye and Lin Feng were. A girl as beautiful as the stars and a peerless genius... They were a perfect couple.

“Thank you, I will happily welcome you to my wedding.” said Lin

Feng smiling at Ruo Lan Shan.

“Alright, Lin Feng, Your Highness, my mission in Xue Yue is over. I have to go back to Dragon Mountain, I would like the king of Xue Yue to help me with one more thing though. Make a public announcement to declare Lin Feng’s new title of Ruler of Xue Yue.” said Ruo Lan Shan. Everybody had to know about it. If the king did it himself then Ruo Lan Shan could be relieved.

“No need to remind me of that, this is obvious. The entire country will know about it. At the same time, I will also prepare his wedding with my daughter. It will be a big ceremony.” said the king calmly smiling. The crowd slightly nodded, the king didn’t mind that Lin Feng had become the ruler of Xue Yue.

Duan Wu Dao had finished second at the Great Competition of Xue Yu... Lin Feng had finished as the most outstanding cultivator of Xue Yue and of Xue Yu. Everybody had to know.

“We talked too much, Your Highness, Lin Feng, I’m leaving.” said Ruo Lan Shan waving. Immediately after, the people from Dragon Mountain all left. The tulip petals kept flying in the wind.

After Ruo Lan Shan left, the king slowly turned and looked to Lin Feng while smiling, “Lin Feng, you are the Ruler of Xue Yue now, the Imperial Palace is yours to share.”

“Alright, Duan Wu Ya and you can talk about the future now. You shouldn’t need me anymore.” said the king smiling, he then turned around and left.

Duan Wu Ya looked at Lin Feng in a calm and serene way. He looked at Lin Feng with a smile on his face but people didn't know what he was thinking.

“Lin Feng, I also would like to congratulate you. You are the champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu and defeated my brother. You met all my requirements, think about a wedding date now.” said Duan Wu Ya slowly and calmly. He even sounded a bit gentle or soft. It seemed like the problems which had arisen before the competition had never happened because he wasn't aggressive anymore.

“I will talk to her and we will decide together.” said Lin Feng nodding. He then jumped forwards and left. He didn't look at Duan Wu Ya anymore, it seemed like he didn't feel like talking to him.

Duan Wu Ya looked at him with a resplendent smile on his face, but nobody knew how he really felt.

People were also pensive around him but then the crowd dispersed. People didn't understand all those plots and intrigues happening in imperial families.

Chapter 700: Public Announcement

Deep in a forest In the Imperial Palace, opposite a waterfall, there was a beautiful woman next to a river. In front of her was a painting, it was a man's portrait.

There were many colors and the style was refined and elegant. Water was flowing next to her but all she was focusing on was the portrait she was painting. She was painting the man she loved.

She was using her heart to paint.

"Princess." said someone at that moment, she was surprised to hear someone interrupting her. Duan Xin Ye stopped painting, her brush shook as she made some messy strokes. Duan Xin Ye frowned and turned her head around, "Xiao Xin, why are you bothering me?"

"Princess, I have some good news." said Xiao Xin with a resplendent smile on her face.

"What news?" asked Duan Xin Ye a bit surprised. She didn't like being disturbed while painting. What was Xiao Xin talking about?

"Lin Feng is back. He just arrived and has proposed a marriage alliance." said Xiao Xin proudly. Duan Xin Ye was so surprised that she dropped her painting brush. Lin Feng had come back and had asked her father for her hand.

“Did he reply?” asked Duan Xin Ye a bit anxious.

“He did and he accepted. Master Lin Feng defeated Duan Wu Dao at the Great Competition of Xue Yu and he finished first. He has now become the Ruler of Xue Yue, that title was conferred to him by the Dragon Mountain Empire. He has come back a hero.”

Duan Xin Ye’s heart was pounding furiously. Lin Feng had defeated Duan Wu Dao and was the champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu... He had also become the ruler of Xue Yue... All of that was great news. Duan Xin Ye was speechless.

“Where is Lin Feng?” asked Duan Xin Ye suddenly. She looked delighted.

“I just heard the news so I rushed over to tell you these things. I think he should arrive at any moment now.” said Xiao Xin. Xiao Xin hadn’t even finished talking when Duan Xin Ye was already running away. Her cheong sam was fluttering in the wind.

A silhouette appeared in front of her making her stop. She was so happy to see that person, it was the man she had been painting so many times over... He had come back... And to her great surprise, her father had accepted their alliance.

She smiled magnificently when she saw him. Lin Feng looked mature and mysterious. Duan Xin Ye lowered her head, her face had turned red.

She wanted to control herself, but in the end tears appeared in her eyes and started flowing down her cheeks.

Duan Xin Ye used her sleeves to wipe off the tears, she lowered her head and smiled. She wanted to make herself beautiful but unfortunately she had started crying.

Lin Feng slowly walked forwards and arrived next to Duan Xin Ye. She slowly raised her head still wiping off her tears with her sleeves.

“Silly girl, if you want to cry then just cry.” said Lin Feng, stretching his hands out and hugging Duan Xin Ye. Then she was crying and crying. Duan Xin Ye tightly hugged Lin Feng, she felt warm. She was hugging him so tightly, it seemed like she was scared that he would leave her.

Even though Lin Feng had finished as the champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu, nobody had been able to predict what was going to happen there. Duan Xin Ye had been scared the whole time, she had thought that Lin Feng might die there. She had missed him so much but she had also been terrified. She didn't like it when Lin Feng was away. She had had so many nightmares and had only been able to comfort herself alone and try to convince herself that Lin Feng would come back safe and sound.

Now, he had come back and was right in front of her.

Behind them was Xiao Xin smiling in a sweet way. She left them in silence without drawing their attention. She was happy for the

princess.

Lin Feng remained calm and serene, he didn't say anything. He just let her cry as much as she wanted.

“Lin Feng, in the future you must bring me with you if you go somewhere.” said Duan Xin Ye staring at Lin Feng. She wanted to stay by Lin Feng's side all the time. She felt like she had a stone in her heart when Lin Feng gone. She felt like she was suffocating each time. Even if the situation was dangerous, she wanted to be with Lin Feng.

“Okay.” said Lin Feng, wiping off her tears with his hand. She looked so sad, how could Lin Feng refuse her request?

She smiled again when she heard Lin Feng. She wiped off her tears with her sleeve again looking so cute.

“Let's go to the Lovesickness Forest.”

“Alright.” said Duan Xin Ye nodding like a good girl. Immediately after, Lin Feng rose up in the air and flew towards the Lovesickness Forest.

Nobody could stop them in the Imperial Palace, Lin Feng was the ruler of Xue Yue now and the king had even agreed to it. Lin Feng was the most powerful man in the country. She Huan had died opposing him, who else dared to argue him?

Lin Feng and Duan Xin Ye had left very quickly.

Lin Feng's life was usually calm and tranquil but now it wasn't. He had come back to Xue Yue as a hero, he was the champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu and had been conferred the title of Ruler of Xue Yue. The king had announced that news himself to the people.

Yangzhou City now had a certain reputation since Lin Feng had been entitled as the ruler of Xue Yue. It had become an even stronger city. Some extremely strong cultivators were now going to Yangzhou City to live there. Great opportunities would surely present themselves there in the future. There were so many extremely great skills and techniques, foreigners were travelling there more there more frequently. Yangzhou City was becoming a large city.

Besides, at that moment in the sky above Yangzhou City, many silhouettes had appeared. They were riding ferocious wild beasts of the Xuan level.

Everybody in Yangzhou City was terrified and panic-stricken, who were those strong cultivators and why had they come to Yangzhou City?

Some golden papers were falling from the sky. The ferocious wild beasts were dropping those golden papers which floated in the wind. The sky of Yangzhou City was dazzling as they left.

The crowd looked at the ferocious wild beasts leaving, a strong

cultivator then rose up in the air and grabbed some of the golden papers.

“The Chi Xie Marquis has come back and he is now the champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu. He has come back to Xue Yue as a hero. Now, he is the ruler of Xue Yue! Besides, he is going to get married with princess Duan Xin Ye. “

Many people were reading the words on those golden papers, some strong cultivators were shaking... Lin Feng had won the Great Competition of Xue Yu.... And had come back as a hero. Now he had been conferred the title of Ruler of Xue Yue by the emperor of Dragon Mountain... And was going to get married with the princess Duan Xin Ye.

People were astonished, some people slowly turned around and looked in the direction of the government building. Now, the leader of the city had become the ruler of the country... The castle which served as the government building would be a holy place In the future, another imperial palace.

People in Yangzhou City were reading the golden papers one after the other. They were all shaking.

The champion of the Great Competition of Xue Yu was their leader, Lin Feng. And on top of that he came from Yangzhou City himself!

“Lin Feng!” The crowd looked so proud.

“Lin Feng!” Some other people looked at the golden papers and sighed... How moving! Lin Feng from the Lin Clan.

This time, he hadn't astonished Yangzhou City but the entire country and even the entire region. They were all very proud because Lin Feng came from Yangzhou City!

Table of Contents

[Peerless Martial God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 601: Happily Fighting Together!](#)

[Chapter 602: Terrifying Fire](#)

[Chapter 603: One Sword killer Attack!](#)

[Chapter 604: Willing To Fight!](#)

[Chapter 605: Shen Gong](#)

[Chapter 606: Duo Tian Mountain Chain](#)

[Chapter 607: Before The Start](#)

[Chapter 608: The Magical Seeds](#)

[Chapter 609: The Temple](#)

[Chapter 610: How To Use The Seeds](#)

[Chapter 611: A Disaster for the Yu Clan](#)

[Chapter 612: Encountering Yu Mo!](#)

[Chapter 613: Ambition](#)

[Chapter 614: Killing Together!](#)

[Chapter 615: The Evil Temple](#)

[Chapter 616: The Beginning of an Era](#)

[Chapter 617: Indestructible Golden Body](#)

[Chapter 618: Killing Down The Hill](#)

[Chapter 619: Heruka Body Transformation](#)

[Chapter 620: Get Back Into The Temple!](#)

[Chapter 621: The End of the First Round](#)

[Chapter 622: Regrets!](#)

[Chapter 623: The Sword Qi in the Cave](#)

[Chapter 624: Sword Intent](#)

[Chapter 625: Bloodthirsty Sword](#)

[Chapter 626: One Sword](#)

[Chapter 627: The Discussion](#)

[Chapter 628: Enemies and Friends](#)

[Chapter 629: The Flood Dragon Cave](#)

[Chapter 630: Rushing Through the Flood Dragon Cave](#)

[Chapter 631: The Ninth Person](#)

[Chapter 632: The First Jade Medal](#)

[Chapter 633: Drinking Alcohol Onstage](#)
[Chapter 634: The Eleven Best!](#)
[Chapter 635: The End of the Second Round](#)
[Chapter 636: Immobile Like A Mountain](#)
[Chapter 637: One Death And One Coward](#)
[Chapter 638: Cosmic Force](#)
[Chapter 639: Astonishing Choice](#)
[Chapter 640: Insect](#)
[Chapter 641: Prove What?](#)
[Chapter 642: One Attack](#)
[Chapter 643: The Sixteen Best](#)
[Chapter 644: A Blood Like Sword](#)
[Chapter 645: The Holy City](#)
[Chapter 646: Titans' Battles!](#)
[Chapter 647: Everybody, Give Up!](#)
[Chapter 648: Shen Gong](#)
[Chapter 649: The Banquet](#)
[Chapter 650: Shen Gong's Goal](#)
[Chapter 651: The Special Area](#)
[Chapter 652: Amazing Sword](#)
[Chapter 653: Sword and Heruka](#)
[Chapter 654: Coming Out](#)
[Chapter 655: The Prologue!](#)
[Chapter 656: Monstrously Strong Cultivators, The Prologue!](#)
[Chapter 657: Forfeit](#)
[Chapter 658: Poor Yu Mo](#)
[Chapter 659: Blood-Red Sword](#)
[Chapter 660: A Sword Destroying the Atmosphere](#)
[Chapter 661: One Sword](#)
[Chapter 662: The Dead Tree](#)
[Chapter 663: The Seven Swords](#)
[Chapter 664: Between Swords](#)
[Chapter 665: Bad Choice](#)
[Chapter 666: The Day Before the Great War](#)
[Chapter 667: Evil Fight](#)
[Chapter 668: Evil Night Light](#)
[Chapter 669: Demon's Body](#)
[Chapter 670: The Arrogant Di Ling](#)
[Chapter 671: The Firmament Spirit](#)

[Chapter 672: Duan Wu Dao's Strength](#)
[Chapter 673: Di Ling and Duan Wu Dao](#)
[Chapter 674: Last Two Battles](#)
[Chapter 675: Lin Feng Vs. Di Ling](#)
[Chapter 676: Tearing Firmament Energy!](#)
[Chapter 677: The Final Battle](#)
[Chapter 678: Sealed Doors](#)
[Chapter 679: The Climax](#)
[Chapter 680: Unexpected Disturbance](#)
[Chapter 681: Five Terrifying Spheres of Influence](#)
[Chapter 682: Lin Feng's choice](#)
[Chapter 683: Everybody's Choice](#)
[Chapter 684: The General Overview of the Continent](#)
[Chapter 685: Zun Cultivators](#)
[Chapter 686: At Dusk](#)
[Chapter 687: Before Breaking Through to the Tian Qi layer](#)
[Chapter 688: The Palace of the Emperors](#)
[Chapter 689: Tian Level Skills](#)
[Chapter 690: Wrath](#)
[Chapter 691: Dazzling Lights](#)
[Chapter 692: Gathering](#)
[Chapter 693: Tian Qi Layer Battles](#)
[Chapter 694: Back Home](#)
[Chapter 695: Passionate Fusion](#)
[Chapter 696: Like A Dream](#)
[Chapter 697: People from the Empire](#)
[Chapter 698: Ruler](#)
[Chapter 699: Acceptance](#)
[Chapter 700: Public Announcement](#)